

Hom

Secker

1425^m - 6



BIBLIOTHECA
REGIA
MONACENSIS.



THE

WORKS

OF

THOMAS SECKER, LL.D.

LATE LORD ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,

A

REVIEW OF

HIS GRACE'S LIFE AND CHARACTER,

BY RICHARD PORTER, D.D.

LATE LORD BISHOP OF LONDON.

REPRINTED FROM THE

A NEW EDITION,

IN SIX VOLUMES.

VOL. VI.

WITH ADDITIONS.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY W. C. AND J. LINDSAY, J. WHITE AND CO., J. TAYLOR,
J. STURGE, BRATHWAITE AND LUTHERMAN, W. LOWE, D. C. TAYLOR, VERNON,
HOOD, AND CHAPMAN, J. HODGKINSON, LACKINGTON AND CO., LONDON
AND CO., CADRELL AND BATES, J. BARNARD, S. BILDGE, T. BARNES,
AND HARRIS AND CLUTE.

1811

THE
WORKS
OF
THOMAS SECKER, LL.D.
LATE LORD ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,
A
REVIEW OF
HIS GRACE'S LIFE AND CHARACTER,
BY BEILBY PORTEUS, D.D.
LATE LORD BISHOP OF LONDON.

A NEW EDITION,
IN SIX VOLUMES.
VOL. VI.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR F., C., AND J. RIVINGTON; J. WHITE AND CO.; J. WALKER;
J. NUNN; SCATCHERD AND LETTERMAN; W. LOWNDES; C. LAW; VERNOR,
HOOD, AND SHARPE; J. RICHARDSON; LACKINGTON AND CO.; LONGMAN
AND CO.; CADELL AND DAVIES; J. HATCHARD; R. BALDWIN; T. HAMIL-
TON; AND GALE AND CURTIS.

THE
WORKS
OF
THOMAS SECKER, LL.D.
LATE LORD BISHOP OF CANTERBURY
IN WHICH IS PRESENTED
A REVIEW OF
HIS GRACE'S LIFE AND CHARACTER
BY BILLY PORTER, LL.D.
LATE LORD BISHOP OF LONDON

Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
MÜNCHEN

PRINTED FOR R. G. AND J. HATHORN, 1 WHITE AND CO., 1 WATER
A. HORN, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000

Printed by T. C. HANSARD, Peterborough-court, Fleet-street, London.

CONTENTS

OF VOL. VI.

LECTURES.

LECT. I. Introduction	- - - - -	page 3
II. Privileges of Baptism	- - - - -	14
III. Renunciation in Baptism	- - - - -	23
IV. Obligations to believe and to do	- - - - -	33
V. Grounds and Rule of Faith	- - - - -	41

CREED.

VI. Article I.— <i>I believe in God the Father, &c.</i>	52
VII. Article II.— <i>And in Jesus Christ his only Son our Lord</i>	- - - - - 62
VIII. Article III.— <i>Who was conceived by the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin Mary</i>	- - - - - 71
IX. Article IV.— <i>Suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead and buried; he descended into Hell</i>	- - - - - 80
X. Article V.— <i>The third day he rose again from the dead</i>	- - - - - 92
XI. Article VI.— <i>He ascended into Heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of God the Father Almighty</i>	- - - - - 102
XII. Article VII.— <i>From thence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead</i>	- - - - - 113
XIII. Article VIII.— <i>I believe in the Holy Ghost</i>	123
XIV. Article IX.— <i>The Holy Catholic Church, the Communion of Saints</i>	- - - - - 135
XV. Article X.— <i>The Forgiveness of Sins</i>	- - - - - 145

CONTENTS.

LECTURE

	page
XVI. Articles XI. XII. Part I.— <i>The resurrection of the body, and the life everlasting</i> -	156
XVII. Articles XI. XII. Part II.— <i>The resurrection of the body, and the life everlasting</i> -	168
XVIII. The first Commandment - - -	180
XIX. The second Commandment - - -	190
XX. The third Commandment - - -	201
XXI. The fourth Commandment - - -	210
XXII. The fifth Commandment, Part I. - -	220
XXIII. The fifth Commandment, Part II. - -	231
XXIV. The sixth Commandment - - -	242
XXV. The seventh Commandment - - -	251
XXVI. The eighth Commandment - - -	264
XXVII. The ninth Commandment - - -	276
XXVIII. The tenth Commandment - - -	287
XXIX. Of Man's Inability, God's grace, and prayer to Him for it - - -	298

The LORD's PRAYER.

XXX. <i>Our Father which art in Heaven, hallowed be thy Name</i> - - -	309
XXXI. <i>Thy kingdom come, thy will be done</i> - -	318
XXXII. <i>Give us this day our daily bread; and forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us</i> - - -	326
XXXIII. <i>And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil: for thine is the kingdom, and the power and the glory, for ever and ever. Amen.</i> - - -	335

CONTENTS.

LECTURE	<i>page</i>
XXXIV. The nature and number of the Sacraments	343
XXXV. Of Baptism - - - - -	352
XXXVI. Of the Lord's Supper, Part I. - - -	363
XXXVII. Of the Lord's Supper, Part II. - -	373
XXXVIII. Of the Lord's Supper, Part III. -	380
XXXIX. The Conclusion - - - - -	388

A SERMON ON CONFIRMATION.

ACTS viii. 17.

Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost - - - - -	399
---	-----

An Answer to Dr. Mayhew's Observations on the Charter and Conduct of the Society for the Propa- gation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts - - -	417
---	-----

A Letter to the Right Honourable Horatio Walpole, Esq. written January 9, 1750-1, concerning Bishops in America - - - - -	489
---	-----

CONTENTS

Page	Subject
343	XXIV. The nature and number of the Sacraments
352	XXV. Of Baptism
363	XXVI. Of the Lord's Supper, Part I.
373	XXVII. Of the Lord's Supper, Part II.
380	XXVIII. Of the Lord's Supper, Part III.
388	XXIX. The Conclusion

A SERMON ON CONVICTION.

399	ACTS viii. 14.
399	Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost

417	An Answer to Dr. Mayhew's Objections on the Charter and Conduct of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts
483	A Letter to the Right Honourable Horatio Walpole Esq. written January 9. 1750. I. concerning Bishops in America

LECTURES

ON THE

CATECHISM OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND;

WITH A

DISCOURSE ON CONFIRMATION.

PUBLISHED FROM THE ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPTS,

BY BEILBY PORTEUS, D.D. AND GEORGE STINTON, D.D.

HIS GRACE'S CHAPLAINS.

LECTURES

ON THE

CATECHISM OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND

WITH A

DISCUSSION ON CONFIRMATION

Now the happiness of all persons depends upon

comparison chiefly on being truly religious. For

the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

is the religion which is the basis of all happiness

LECTURE I.

INTRODUCTION.

IN all matters of importance, every one that wants information, should first seek for it, then attend to it: and the more our happiness depends upon judging and acting right in any case, the more care and pains we should take to qualify ourselves for both. Now the happiness of all persons depends beyond comparison chiefly on being truly religious. For true religion consists in three things; reasonable government of ourselves, good behaviour towards our fellow-creatures, and dutifulness to our Maker; the practice of which will give us, for the most part, health of body and ease of mind, a comfortable provision of necessaries, and peace with all around us: but however, will always secure to us, what is infinitely more valuable still, the favour and blessing of God; who on these terms will both watch over us continually with a fatherly kindness in this life, and bestow on us eternal felicity in the next.

Since, therefore, whoever is religious must be happy, the great concern of every one of us is to know and observe the doctrines and rules which religion delivers. Now we all come into the world igno-

rant of these ; and our faculties are so weak at first, and gain strength so slowly ; and the attention of our earlier years to serious things is so small ; that even were our duty to comprehend no more than our own reason could teach us, few, if any, would learn it sufficiently without assistance : and none so soon as they would need it. They would come out into a world full of dangers, every way unprepared for avoiding them : would go wrong in the very beginning of life, perhaps fatally ; at least would hurt, if they did not ruin themselves ; and make their return into the right path certainly difficult, and probably late.

But we must consider yet further, that reason, were it improved to the utmost, cannot discover to us all that we are to believe and do : but a large and most important part of it is to be learnt from the revelation made to us in God's holy word. And this, though perfectly well suited to the purposes for which it was designed, yet, being originally delivered at very distant times, to very different sorts of persons, on very different occasions ; and the several articles of faith and precepts of conduct, which it prescribes, not being collected and laid down methodically in any one part of it, but dispersed with irregular beauty through the whole, as the riches of nature are through the creation ; the informations of the more knowing must be in many respects needful, to prepare the more ignorant for receiving the benefits of which they are capable from reading the Scripture. And particularly giving them beforehand a summary and orderly view of the principal points comprehended in it, will qualify them better than any other thing to discern its true meaning, so far as is requisite, in each part.

Therefore, both in what reason of itself dictates,

and what God hath added to it, instruction is necessary, especially for beginners. And, indeed, as they are never left to find out by their own abilities any other sort of useful knowledge, but always helped, if possible; it would be very strange, if, in the most important kind, the same care at least were not taken.

But besides enlightening the ignorance of persons, instruction doth equal, if not greater, service, by preventing or opposing their prejudices and partialities. From our tenderest age we have our wrong inclinations, and are very prone to form wrong notions in support of them; but which we are extremely backward to acknowledge, and very apt to model our religion in such manner as to leave room for our faults. Now right explanations clearly delivered, and right admonitions pressed home, in early days, may preserve persons from thus deceiving themselves, and guard them against future, as well as present dangers. Nay, though slighted, and seemingly forgotten for a time, they may still keep secretly such a hold upon the mind as will sooner or later bring those back, who would else never have seen, or never have owned, that they had lost their way.

But a still farther advantage of instruction is, that bringing frequently before persons' eyes those truths on which otherwise they would seldom reflect, though ever so much convinced of them, it keeps the thoughts of their duty continually at hand, to resist the temptations with which they are attacked. Thus their lives and their minds are insensibly formed to be such as they ought: and being thus *trained up in the way wherein they should go*, there is great hope, that *they will not afterwards depart from it**.

* Prov. xxii. 6.

Nor doth reason only, but experience too, shew the need of timely institution in piety and virtue. For is it not visible, that principally for want of it, multitudes of unhappy creatures, in all ranks of life, set out from the first in sin, and follow it on as securely as if it were the only way they had to take; do unspeakable mischief in the world, and utterly undo themselves, body and soul: whilst others, of no better natural dispositions, but only better taught, are harmless and useful, esteemed and honoured, go through life with comfort, and meet death with joyful hope? There are doubtless, in such numbers, exceptions on both sides; but this is undeniably the ordinary, the probable, the always to be expected course of things. Therefore seriously consider, will you despise religious knowledge, and be like the former miserable wretches? or will you embrace it, and be happy, with the latter, here and to eternity?

But it is not sufficient that you be willing to receive instruction, unless they also, to whom the care belongs, are willing to give it. Now that care of giving it belongs to different persons in different cases. In the case of children, it usually belongs in a peculiar degree to their parents: who, having been the means of bringing them into the world, are most strongly bound to endeavour that their being may prove a benefit, not a cause of lamentation to them; and having been endued by Heaven with tender affections towards them, will be doubly sinners against them, if they are guilty of that worst of cruelty, not teaching them their duty: without which also, and it deserves a very serious consideration, they can no more hope for comfort in them here, than for acceptance with God hereafter. And therefore, both the Old Testament directed the Jews, to *teach their children diligently*

*the words which God had commanded them**; and the New enjoins Christians to *bring up theirs in the nurture and admonition of the Lord†*. Sometimes indeed want of leisure, sometimes of knowledge and ability, obliges parents to commit part, it may a considerable one, of the instruction of their children to other persons. But far from being ever discharged of the whole burthen, they must always remember, that unless they assist and enforce what others endeavour, it will seldom produce any valuable effect; and much less, if some of the things, which their children hear them say, and see them do almost every day, are directly contrary to those, which they pretend they would have them believe and learn.

The persons on whom usually this care is devolved by parents, are masters and mistresses of schools, and afterwards tutors in colleges, who ought never to omit furnishing children, amongst other knowledge, plentifully with that which is the most necessary of all; but constantly to employ the influence which they have on their minds, and the knowledge which they acquire of their tempers, in exciting them to good, and preserving them from evil, as much as they can: and parents ought first absolutely to require this of them, and then examine diligently from time to time whether it be done. But especially masters and mistresses of charity-schools, which are founded purposely to give the children of the poor an early and deep tincture of religion and virtue, should look upon it as by far their principal business to teach them, not merely outward observances and forms of good words, but such an inward sense and love of their duty to God and man, as may secure them, if possible, from that lamentable depravity, into which the

* Deut. vi. 7.

† Ephes. vi. 4.

lower part of the world is falling; and which it is highly the interest of their superiors, if they would but understand their interest, to restrain and correct.

As the care of children belongs to their parents and teachers; so doth that of servants to the heads of the families, in which they live. And therefore it is mentioned in Scripture by God himself, as a distinguishing part of the character of a good man, *that he will command his household to keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgement**. For indeed it is a strong and a requisite proof of reverence to our Maker, as well as of kindness to them, and concern for our own interest, to direct them in the way of their duty, or procure them the direction of good books and good advice; to exhort them to the more private exercises of religion; to contrive leisure for them to attend the appointed solemn ones, which is plainly one part of *giving them*, as the Apostle requires, *what is just and equal†*: and to see that the leisure, allowed them for that purpose, be honestly so employed, and not abused.

For, after all, the most valuable instruction for servants, for children, and for all persons, is the public one of the church, which our Saviour himself hath promised to bless with his presence‡. And therefore it is a rule of inexpressible moment: *Gather the people together; men, women, and children, and the stranger that is within thy gates: that they may hear, and that they may learn, and fear the Lord your God; and observe to do all the words of his law: and that their children which have not known any thing, may hear and learn to fear the Lord your God as long as ye live§*.

Whoever else may fail of doing their duty, we the

* Gen. xviii. 19.

† Col. iv. 1.

‡ Matth. xvii. 20.

§ Deut. xxxi. 12, 13.

ministers of Christ must not fail to *be instant in season, and out of season**; to feed the young *with the sincere milk of the word†*, and to preach the Gospel to the poor‡. It is the peculiar glory of Christianity, to have extended religious instruction, of which but few partook at all before, and scarce any in purity, through all ranks and ages of men, and even women. The first converts to it were immediately formed into regular societies and assemblies; not only for the joint worship of God, but the further *edifying of the body of Christ§*: in which good work, some of course were stated teachers, or, to use the Apostle's own expression, *catechizers in the word*; others, taught or catechized||. For catechizing signifies in Scripture, at large, instructing persons in any matter, but especially in religion. And thus it is used, Acts xviii. 25, where you read, *This man was instructed in the way of the Lord*; and Luke i. 4. where again you read, *That thou mayest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed*. The original word, in both places, is *catechized*.

But as the different advances of persons in knowledge made different sorts of instructions requisite; so in the primitive church, different sorts of teachers were appointed to dispense it. And they who taught so much only of the Christian doctrine, as might qualify the hearers for Christian communion, had the name of Catechists appropriated to them: whose teaching being usually, as was most convenient, in a great measure by way of question and answer; the name of Catechism hath now been long confined to such instruction, as is given in that form. But the method of employing a particular set of men in that

* 2 Tim. iv. 2.

† 1 Pet. ii. 2.

‡ Matth. xi. 5.

§ Eph. iv. 12.

|| Gal. vi. 6.

work only, is in most places laid aside. And I hope you will not be losers, if they who are appointed to the higher ministries of the church, attend to this also.

Under the darkness of popery almost all religious instruction was neglected. *Very few*, to use the words of one of our homilies, *even of the most simple people, were taught the Lord's prayer, the articles of the faith, or the ten commandments, otherwise than in Latin, which they understood not**: so that one of the first necessary steps taken towards the Reformation, in this country, was a general injunction, that parents and masters should first learn them in their own tongue, then acquaint their children and servants with them†: which three main branches of Christian duty, comprehending the sum of what we are to believe, to do, and to petition for, were soon after formed, with proper explanations of each, into a catechism. To this was added, in process of time, a brief account of the two sacraments; altogether making up that very good, though still improveable, *form of sound words‡*, which we now use.

And that it may be used effectually, the laws of the land, both ecclesiastical and civil, require not only ministers to instruct their parishioners in it, but parents, and masters and mistresses of families, to send their children and servants to be instructed; meaning evidently, unless they made some other more convenient provision to answer the same end. For promoting religious knowledge and practice is not only the express design of all church-government,

* Homily against Rebellion, part 6.

† See Wake's Dedication of his Commentary on the Church Catechism.

‡ 2 Tim. i. 13.

but a matter (would God it were well considered) of great importance to the state also : since neither private life can be happy, nor the public welfare secure for any long time, without the belief of the doctrines and observance of the duties of Christianity, for which catechizing the young and ignorant lays the firmest foundation.

It must be owned, the catechism of our church is, as it ought to be, so clear in the main, as to need but little explaining, all things considered. But then it is also, as it ought to be, so short, as to leave much room for setting forth the particulars comprehended under its general heads; for confirming both these by reason and Scripture: and for imprinting the whole on the consciences and affections of the learners. This, therefore, I shall endeavour to do, in the sequel of these discourses, as clearly and familiarly as I am able.

In the nature of the thing, nothing new or curious ought to have any place in such an exposition, as indeed such matters ought to have little place in any public teaching of God's word; but least of all, where only the plain fundamental truths of our common faith are to be taught, confirmed, and recommended in a plain way. And yet as these truths are of all others the most necessary; the plainest things, that can be said about them, may deserve the attention of all sorts of persons; especially as it is but too possible, that some of all sorts may never have been taught sufficiently even the first principles of religion, and that many may by no means have sufficiently retained, and considered since, what they learnt in their early years: but preserving scarce more in their minds than the bare words, if so much, may be little the better, if at all, for the lessons of childhood. To

which it might be added, that every one hath need, in a greater degree or a less, if not to be informed, yet to be reminded and excited.

Let me beg therefore, that all who have cause to hope they may receive benefit, would attend when they are able: and that all who have children or servants, would bring or send them. This is not a day of business. It ought not to be a day of idle amusements. It is appointed for the public worship of God, and learning of his will. This is one of the hours of his worship: it is that part of the day in which you are most of you more at liberty, than you are in any other. And what will you say for yourselves hereafter, if when you have the most entire leisure, you chuse rather to do any thing, or nothing, than to serve your Maker, and improve in the knowledge of your duty? Never was there more danger of being infected with evil of every sort from conversation in the world. Surely then you should endeavour to fortify yourselves, and those who belong to you, with proper antidotes against it. And where will you find better, than in the house of God? But particularly I both charge and beg you, children, to mark diligently what I shall say to you: for all that you learn by rote will be of no use, unless you learn also to understand it. The exposition, which you are taught along with your catechism, will help your understanding very much, if you mind it as you ought: and what you will hear from me may be a yet further help. For if there should be some things in it above your capacities, yet I shall endeavour, to the best of my power, that most things may be easy and plain to you. And, I entreat you, take care that they be not lost upon you. You are soon going out into the world, where you will hear and see abundance

of what is evil. For Christ's sake lay in as much good, in the mean while, as you can, to guard you against it!

But indeed it behoves us all, of whatever age or station we be, to remember, that the belief and practice of true religion are what we are every one equally concerned in. For without them, the greatest person upon earth will, in a very few years, be completely miserable: and with them, the meanest will be eternally happy. *O hear ye this, all ye people; ponder it, all ye that dwell in the world; high and low, rich and poor, one with another*. Apply your hearts to instruction, and your ears to the words of knowledge†. For whoso findeth wisdom, findeth life; and shall obtain favour of the Lord. But he that sinneth against her, wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate her, love death‡.*

* Psal. xlix. 1, 2.

† Prov. xxiii. 12.

‡ Prov. viii. 35, 36.

LECTURE II.

PRIVILEGES OF BAPTISM.

THE catechism of our church begins, with a prudent condescension and familiarity, by asking the introductory questions, *What is your name?* and *Who gave you this name?* which lead very naturally the person catechized to the mention of his baptism, at which time it was given him. Not that giving a name is any necessary part of baptism; but might have been done either before or afterwards, though it hath always been done then, as indeed it was likely that the first public opportunity would be taken for that purpose. But besides, it was no uncommon thing in ancient times, that when a person entered into the service of a new master, he had a new name bestowed on him. Whence perhaps the Jews might derive the practice of naming the child, when it was circumcised; it being then devoted to the service of God. The first Christians, in imitation of them, would of course do the same thing, for the same reason, when it was baptized: and no wonder, that we continue the practice. For it might be a very useful one, if persons would but remember, what it tends to remind them of, that they were dedicated to Christ, when their Christian name was given them; and would make use of that circumstance frequently to

recollect those promises, which were then solemnly made for them; and which they have since confirmed, or are to confirm and make personally for themselves. Without performing these, we are Christians, not in deed, but in name only, and shall greatly dishonour that name, while we bear it and boast of it.

Our baptismal name is given us, not by our parents, as we read in Scripture the name of Jewish children was, but by our godfathers and godmothers. And this custom may also have a double advantage. It may admonish them, that having conferred the title of Christians upon us, they are bound to endeavour, that we may behave worthily of it. And it may admonish us, that our name having been given us by persons, who were our sureties, we are bound to make good their engagements.

But the office and use of godfathers will be considered under one of the following questions. The subject to be considered at present, though not fully, is baptism. For this being our first entrance into the Christian church, by which we become entitled to certain privileges, and obliged to certain duties; religious instruction begins very properly by teaching young persons what both of them are. And in order to recommend the duties to us, the privileges are mentioned first.

Not but that God hath an absolute right to our observance of his laws, without informing us beforehand what benefit we shall reap from it. Surely it would be enough to know, that he is Lord and King of the whole earth; and that all his dealings with the works of his hands are just and reasonable. Our business is to obey, and trust him with the consequences. But in great mercy, to encourage and at-

tract his poor creatures, he hath been pleased to enter into a covenant, a gracious agreement with man: subjecting himself as it were, to bestow certain blessings on us, provided we perform certain conditions. But though, in this covenant, the promises, made on his part, flow from his own free goodness, yet the terms, required on ours, are matter of necessary obligation: and what was altogether voluntary in him, firmly binds us*.

Now the privileges, thus conditionally secured to us in baptism, we find in our catechism very fitly reduced to these three heads: that the person, who receives it, is *therein made a member of Christ, a child of God, and an inheritor of the kingdom of heaven.*

1. The first, and foundation of the others, is, that he is *made a member of Christ.* This figure of speech all of you may not immediately understand: but when it is understood, you will perceive in it great strength and beauty. It presupposes, what we must be sensible of, more or less, that we are every one originally prone to sin, and actually sinners; liable thence to punishment; and without hope of preserving ourselves, by our own strength, either from guilt or from misery. It further implies, what the Scripture clearly teaches, that Jesus Christ hath delivered us from both, in such manner as shall hereafter be explained to you, on the most equitable terms of our becoming his, by accepting him from the hand of God for our Saviour, our Teacher, and our Lord. This union to him, in order to receive these benefits from him, our catechism, in conformity with the language of holy writ, compares with that of the members of the body to the head. And how proper the comparison is, will easily appear, by carrying it

* See Waterland's Review of the Doctrine of the Eucharist, c. xi.

through the several particulars, in which the similitude holds.

As, in every living creature, perception and motion proceed from the head; so, to every Christian, knowledge of God's will, and power to obey it, flow from Christ. As the head governs and directs each limb, so Christ is the sovereign and law-giver of each believer. As being joined to the head makes the whole body one animal frame, so being joined to Christ makes the whole number of Christians one spiritual society. As communication with the head preserves our natural life: so communion with Christ supports our religious life. He therefore is to the church what the head is to the body: and each person who belongs to the church, is a member of that body, or, in the language of the catechism, *a member of Christ*. For he, as St. Paul expresses it, is *the head: from which all the body, having nourishment ministered, and knit together by joints and bands, increaseth with the increase of God**.

And this manner of speaking is frequently repeated in Scripture, as it well deserves; being not only, as you have seen, admirably fitted to represent the happy relations, in which we stand to our Redeemer, but also to remind us of the duties, which are derived from them: of the honour and obedience due to him, who is *head over all things to his body, the church* †; of our continual dependence on him, *since he is our life* ‡: and of the tenderness and kindness, which we owe to our fellow-Christians, and they to us, being all united, through him, so intimately to each other. For since, as the Apostle argues, *by one Spirit we are all baptized into one body: as, in the natural body, the eye cannot say unto the*

* Col. ii. 19.

† Eph. i. 22, 23.

‡ Col. iii. 4.

*hand, I have no need of thee, nor any one member to the rest, I have no need of you; but even the more feeble and less honourable members are necessary**: so in the spiritual body, they, who in any respect may seem to excel others, ought by no means to despise them; since every good Christian is, in his proper degree and place, both a valuable and an useful member of Christ. And again: as in the natural body there is a connection and sympathy of the several parts; by which the good state of one preserves the others in health and ease, or its bad state gives them pain and disorder: so should there be in the spiritual body, and there is in all true members of it, a natural caution not to do harm to each other, and a mutual desire of each other's benefit. *If one member suffer all the other members should, by a compassionate temper, suffer with it: and if one member be honoured, all the rest should sincerely rejoice with it*†. Think then, do you feel in your hearts this good disposition, as a mark of being members of Christ? If not, study to form yourselves to it without delay.

2. The second privilege of baptism is, that by it *we are made the children of God*, in a sense and manner, in which by nature we are not so.

Our blessed Saviour indeed is called in Scripture *the only begotten Son of God*. Nor can the highest of creatures claim God for his father by the same right, that he doth. But in a lower sense, God is the father of angels and men; whom he hath created in their several degrees of likeness to his own image. Adam, our first parent, was the son of God by a strong resemblance to his heavenly Father, in original uprightness. But as this similitude was greatly obscured both in him and his descendants by the fall,

* 1 Cor. xii. 13, 21, 22, 23. † 1 Cor. xii. 26.

though preserved by the covenant of the promised seed from being utterly effaced; so in time it was almost entirely lost among men, by the prevalence of sin; and they became in general *enemies of God**, and *children of the devil†*.

But our gracious Maker, pitying us notwithstanding, and treating us like children, even when thus degenerated, hath mercifully appointed a method for adopting us into his family again, after we have cast ourselves out of it; and for restoring and raising us gradually to the same and greater likeness to him and favour with him, than even our first parents ever enjoyed. Now this inestimable blessing was procured for mankind through the means of Jesus Christ; and we become entitled to it by taking him for our head, and becoming his members, in such manner as you have heard briefly explained. For *to as many as receive him, to them giveth he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe in his name‡*. Being therefore thus united to him, who is in the highest sense the Son of God; and claiming not in our own name, but under him: we are admitted again into such a degree of sonship as we are capable of; and made *te children of God, by faith in Christ Jesus§*.

Indeed not only Christians, but the Jews, are called in Scripture *the children of God||*; and such they really were; being first, as Christians were afterwards, the *children of his covenant¶*. But still, as theirs was a state of less knowledge, more burthensome precepts, and stricter government; the Apostle speaks of them compared with us, only as servants in his family. *Now I say that the heir, as long as he is*

* Rom. v. 10. Col. i. 21. † 1 John iii. 10. ‡ John i. 12.
Gal. iii. 26. || Deut. xiv. 1. ¶ Acts iii. 25.

a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all. Even so we, speaking of the Jewish nation, when we were children, unqualified for any great degrees of liberty, were in bondage under the elements of the world. But when the fullness of time was come, God sent forth his Son, to redeem them that were under the law. Wherefore we are no more servants but sons. Behold then, as St. John expresses it, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called, in this distinguished sense, the sons of God†; especially considering the consequence drawn by St. Paul, if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ‡: which is the*

3. Third and last privilege of baptism, and completes the value of it, that by entering into the Christian covenant we are *made inheritors of the kingdom of heaven*; that is, entitled to perfect and endless happiness in body and soul. Had we continued in the primitive uprightness of our first parents, and never sinned at all, we could have had no claim, but from God's free promise, to any thing more, than that our being should not be worse to us than not being. But as we are originally depraved, and have actually sinned, far from having any claim to happiness, we are liable to just punishment for ever. And least of all could we have any claim to such happiness, as eternal life and glory. But *blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ: who of his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope; to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for us§.*

These then are the privileges of the Christian covenant. As for those who have no knowledge of that co-

* Gal. iv. 1, 3, 4, 7.

† 1 John iii. 1.

‡ Rom. viii. 17.

§ 1 Pet. i. 3, 4.

venant; the Apostle hath told us indeed, that *as many as have sinned without law, shall perish without law**: but he hath told us also, that *when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, they are a law unto themselves†*. And whether none of them shall attain to any degree of a better life, is no concern of ours; who may well be contented with the assurance, that our own lot will be a happy one beyond all comparison, if we please. He, who hath shewn the abundance of his love to us, will undoubtedly shew, not only his justice but his mercy, to all the works of his hands, as far, and in such manner, as is fit. There is indeed *none other name under heaven, given among men, whereby we must be saved, but that of Jesus Christ‡*. But whether they, who have not had in this life the means of calling upon it, shall receive any benefit from him; or if any, what and how; as neither Scripture hath told us, nor reason can tell us, it is presumptuous to determine, and useless to inquire.

The points, to which we must attend, are these, which relate to ourselves: that we *give due thanks to the Father, who hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light§*; and be duly careful to *walk worthy of God, who hath called us to his kingdom and glory||*. For we have a right to the privileges of the covenant, only on the supposition and presumption of our performing the obligations of it. Children indeed of believers, who are taken out of the world before they become capable of faith and obedience, we doubt not, are happy. For the general declarations of holy writ plainly comprehend their case; and our Saviour hath particularly declared, that

* Rom. iii. 12.

† Ibid. viii. 14.

‡ Acts iv. 10, 12.

§ Col. i. 12.

|| 1 Thess. ii. 12.

*of such is the kingdom of God**. But all, who live to maturer years; as, on the one hand, they may intitle themselves, through God's bountiful promise, though not their own merit, to higher degrees of future felicity, in proportion as their service hath been considerable; so on the other, they are intitled to no degree at all, any longer than they practise that *holiness*, in which they have engaged to live, *and without which no man shall see the Lord†*. We shall be acknowledged as children, only whilst we obey our heavenly Father: and *the baptism, which saveth us, is not the outward putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the inward answer of a good conscience towards God‡*. Which therefore that we may all of us be able always to make, may he of his infinite mercy grant, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

* Mark x. 14. Luke xviii. 16.

† Heb. xii. 14.

‡ 1 Pet. iii. 21.

LECTURE III.

RENUNCIATION IN BAPTISM.

AFTER the privileges to which baptism gives us a claim, our catechism proceeds to set forth the duties, to which it binds us: those things *which our godfathers and godmothers promised and vowed in our names.* For without the performance of these conditions, neither hath God engaged, nor is it consistent with the holiness of his nature and the honour of his government to bestow such benefits upon us: nor indeed shall we be capable of receiving them. For a virtuous and religious temper and behaviour here, is absolutely requisite, not only to intitle, but to qualify and prepare us for a virtuous and religious blessedness hereafter, such as that of heaven is.

Now these conditions, or obligations, on our part, are three: that we renounce what God forbids: that we believe what he teaches, and do what he commands; or, in other words, repentance, faith and obedience. These things are plainly necessary, and they are plainly all that is necessary: for as, through the grace of God, we have them in our power; so we have nothing more. And therefore they have been constantly, and without any material variation, ex-

pressed in baptism from the earliest ages of the church to the present.

The first thing, and the only one which can be explained at this time, is, that we renounce what God forbids, every sin of every kind. And this is put first, because it opens the way for the other two. When once we come to have a due sense that we are sinners, as all men are, and perceive the baseness, the guilt, the mischief of sin, we shall fly from it, with sincere penitence, to the remedy of faith which God hath appointed. And when we in earnest resolve to forsake whatever is wrong, we shall gladly embrace all such truths as will direct us right, and do what they require. But whilst we retain a love to any wickedness, it will make us, with respect to the doctrines of religion, backward to receive them*, or unwilling to think of them, or desirous to interpret them unfairly: and with respect to the duties of religion, it will make our conduct unequal and inconsistent: perplexing us with silly attempts to reconcile vice and virtue, and to atone perhaps by zeal in little duties for indulgence of great faults: till at last we shall either fall into an open course of transgression, or, which is equally fatal, contrive to make ourselves easy in a secret one. The only and effectual method therefore is to form a general resolution at once, though we shall execute it but imperfectly and by degrees, of following in every thing the Scripture rule, *cease to do evil, learn to do well*†.

Now the evil, from which we are required to cease, is also ranged in our catechism under three heads. For whatever we do amiss, proceeds either from the

* Hence our Saviour, speaking of John Baptist, tells the Jews, Ye—repented not,—that ye might believe him. Matt. xxi. 32.

† Isai. i. 16, 17.

secret suggestions of an invisible enemy, from the temptations thrown in our way by the visible objects around us, or from the bad dispositions of our own nature: that is, from the devil, the world, or the flesh. And though every one of these, in their turns, may incline us to every kind of sin; and it is not always either easy or material to know, from which the inclination proceeded originally: yet some sins may more usually flow from one source, and some from another; and it will give us a more comprehensive, and, so far at least, a more useful view of them, if we consider them each distinctly.

1. First then, we renounce in baptism *the devil and all his works*. This, in the primitive ages, was the only renunciation made: the works of the devil being understood to signify, as they do in Scripture, every sort of wickedness: which being often suggested by him, always acceptable to him, and an imitation of him, was justly considered as so much service done him, and obedience paid him. But the method now taken, of renouncing the devil, the world, and the flesh separately, is more convenient, as it gives us a more particular account of our several enemies.

What we are taught concerning the devil, and demons or wicked spirits, in the word of God, is, that a number of angels, having sinned against their Maker (from what motives, or in what instances, we are not, as we need not be, clearly told, but) so as to be utterly unfit for pardon, were cast out from heaven, and are kept under such confinement as God sees proper, till the day comes, when the final sentence, which they have deserved, shall be executed upon them: but that, in the mean time, being full of all evil, and void of all hope, they maliciously

endeavour to make those, whom they can, wicked and miserable, like themselves. And being all united under one head, and actuated by one and the same spirit of ill-will against us, we are concerned to look upon them as one enemy: and therefore the catechism speaks of them as such.

What means they use to tempt us, we are not distinctly informed: and it is great folly, either, on the one hand, to doubt of the reality of the fact, because we know not the manner; or on the other, to entertain groundless imaginations, or believe idle stories; and ascribe more to evil spirits, than we have any sufficient cause. For there is no religion in favouring such fancies, or giving credit to such tales; and there hath frequently arisen a great deal of hurtful superstition from them. This we are sure of, and it is enough, that neither Satan nor all his angels have power either to force any one of us into sin, or to hinder us from repenting, or, without God's especial leave, to do any one of us the least hurt in any other way. And we have no cause to think, that leave to do hurt is ever granted them, but on such extraordinary occasions as are mentioned in Scripture. They are indeed often permitted to entice us to sin, as we too often entice one another. But these enticements of evil spirits may be withstood by us just as effectually, and nearly by just the same methods, as those of evil men. *Resist the devil, and he will flee from you: draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you**. Unquestionably our danger is the greater, as we have not only flesh and blood, our own bad inclinations, and the allurements of other bad persons to encounter, but the efforts of an invisible enemy likewise. And therefore it was great mercy in God, to grant us

* James iv. 7, 8.

the knowledge of this interesting, and otherwise undiscoverable circumstance of our condition, that we may increase our watchfulness in proportion. And if we do, *greater is he that is in us, than he that is in the world**: and *he will not suffer us to be tempted above that we are able to bear†*.

But, though the devil hath no power of his own over us, we may give him as much as we will; and become slaves and vassals to him as long as we please. In this sense his empire is very large: and on account of it the Scripture calls him *the prince of the power of darkness‡*, and even *the god of this world§*. For he was, and is still, in great propriety of speech, the god of many heathen nations; who, instead of the righteous and good Maker of heaven and earth, worship deities of such vile and mischievous characters, as we justly ascribe to the evil one. And even where faith in the true Deity is professed; yet pretended arts of magic, witchcraft, conjuring, fortune-telling, and such like wicked follies, approach more or less to the same crime. For if any of the wretches, guilty of these things, either have, or imagine they have, any communication with the devil; they plainly rebel against God, and endeavour at least to confederate with his enemy. Or if they only pretend a communication with him; as indeed usually, if not always, it is mere pretence; yet this is very inconsistent with renouncing him. And even when they do not so much as pretend it, and would make us believe, that they have such extraordinary skill and power derived from more innocent sources; though they profess no respect to his person, they imitate him in one of his worst qualities, as he is the father of lies. And the lies of this kind are very pernicious ones. They cor-

* 1 John iv. 4.

† 1 Cor. x. 13.

‡ Ephes. ii. 2. Col. i. 13.

§ 2 Cor. iv. 4.

rupt the notions of religion ; give persons unworthy opinions of God ; and lead them to imagine, that other beings, as the stars, or even mere names, as Chance and Fate, share with him in the government of the world. But indeed lies of all sorts are peculiarly the works of him, who was *a liar*, as well as *a murderer from the beginning**. And other sins mentioned in Scripture, as more especially diabolical, are pride, envy, malice, false accusations. Who-soever therefore allows himself in any of these things, *is of his father the devil, and the lusts of his father he doth*†. But whoever is by baptism *delivered from the power of darkness, and translated into the kingdom of God's dear Son*‡, renounces them all.

Ask yourselves then : Do you renounce them all in fact ? For mere words are nothing. Do you carefully avoid them, and labour to preserve yourselves free from them : or do you live in any of them, and love them ? that is, are you children of God, or of Satan ; and whose are you willing to remain ? Make us thine, good Lord, and keep us so for ever !

2. We renounce, in baptism, *all the pomps and vanities of this wicked world*. The world, which God created, was good : and so far as it continues good, we renounce it not. Therefore the innocent gratifications, which he hath provided for us in it, we ought not to condemn, but to partake of them with moderation and thankfulness : the difference of ranks and stations, which is requisite for the due order of society, we ought to maintain with prudent humility : and every one should take his proper part, as Providence directs him, in the various employments which furnish to us the necessaries and conveniencies of life. Labouring to procure such a competency for our-

* John viii. 44.

† Ibid.

‡ Col. i. 13.

selves and ours, as will support us comfortably in our present condition, is what we are bound to. And if, by lawful methods and reasonable care, we can rise higher, we may allowably do it, and justly consider it as the promised blessing of God upon our industry. In these respects then we do not renounce the world: for in these it is not wicked. And we should not affect to detach ourselves too much from the state of things, in which Heaven hath placed us: but, ordinarily speaking, take our share, (whatever it happens to be,) and that contentedly, of such employments as contribute to the common good. If we do meet with difficult trials in our way; as they are of God's chusing for us, we are not to fly from them improperly, but trust in him for ability to go through them well. And they, who resolve to retire out of the reach of all such temptations, seldom fail to run into more dangerous ones of their own creating.

We ought not therefore to shun what our Maker hath appointed us to engage in: but then we ought to engage in it only in such manner as he hath appointed; and to recollect continually, *that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness**. Not only the heathen world had its idolatrous pomps, or public spectacles, and its immoral vanities, which were peculiarly meant in this renunciation at first: but that, which calls itself Christian, is full of things, from which a true Christian must abstain. All methods of being powerful or popular, inconsistent with our integrity; all arts of being agreeable at the expence or hazard of our innocence; all ways of encroaching on the properties of others, and all immoderate desires of adding to our own; all diversions, entertainments, and acquaintances, that have a tend-

* 1 John v. 19.

ency to hurt our morals or our piety : making common practice the rule of our conduct, without considering whether it be right or wrong ; filling our time in such manner, either with business or amusements (be they ever so innocent in themselves,) as not to leave room for the main business of life, the improvement of our hearts in virtue, the serious exercise of religion, and a principal attention to the great concerns of eternity : these are the things, in which consists that *friendship with the world, which is enmity with God** : and if any man love it thus, *the love of the Father is not in him*†. Which then do you renounce, and which do you chuse ? the world, or the Maker of it ? Surely you will adopt the Psalmist's words : *I cried unto thee, O Lord, and said, Thou art my hope, and my portion, in the land of the living*‡.

3. We renounce, at our baptism, *all the sinful lusts of the flesh*, that is, every unreasonable and forbidden gratification of any appetite or aversion that belongs to the human frame. Whatever inclination is truly primitive in our nature may be innocently gratified, provided it be in a lawful manner, and a due subordination to the higher principles within us : but when these bounds are transgressed, there begins sin. All such indulgence therefore in eating or drinking, as obscures the reason of persons, inflames their passions, hurts their healths, impairs their fortunes, or wastes their time ; all sloth, indolence, and luxurious delicacy ; all wantonness, impurity, and indecency, with whatever tempts to it : these are renounced under this head : and not these only ; but every other sin, that hath its first rise within our hearts. For in the language of religion, as the *spirit* signifies the inward principle of all good, so doth the *flesh* that of

* James iv. 4.

† 1 John ii. 15.

‡ Psal. cxlii. 6.

all evil. Therefore vanity and self-conceit, immoderate anger, ill-temper and hard-heartedness, repining at the good of others, or even at our own disadvantages; in short, whatever disposition of our souls is dishonourable to God, prejudicial to our neighbour, or unreasonable in itself, falls under the same denomination with the afore-mentioned vices. For *the works of the flesh*, saith the Apostle, *are manifest: adultery, fornication, uncleanness, hatred, variance, wrath, strife, seditions, envyings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I also told you in time past, that they who do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God**. Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into this rest, any of you should come short of it†. And let us diligently and frequently examine our hearts, whether we use every proper method to *cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God‡*.

But before I conclude, I must desire you to observe, concerning each of the things, which we renounce in baptism, that we do not undertake what is beyond our power; that the temptations of the devil shall never beset and molest us; that the vain shew of the world shall never appear inviting to us; that our own corrupt nature shall never prompt or incline us to evil: but we undertake, what, through the grace of God, though not without it, is in our power: that we will not, either designedly or carelessly, give these our spiritual enemies needless advantages against us; and that, with whatever advantage they may at any time attack us, we will never yield to them, but always resist them with the utmost prudence and strength. This is the renunciation here meant: and

* Gal. v. 19—21.

† Heb. iv. 1.

‡ 2 Cor. vii. 1.

the office of baptism expresseth it more fully ; where we engage so to renounce the devil, the world, and the flesh, that we will not follow nor be led by them. Now God grant us all, faithfully to make this engagement good, that after we have done his will, we may receive his promise*!

* Heb. x. 36.

LECTURE IV.

OBLIGATION TO BELIEVE AND TO DO, &c.

OUR Catechism, in the answer to its third question, teaches, that three things are promised in our name, when we are baptized: that we shall renounce what God forbids, believe what he makes known, and do what he commands. The first of these hath been explained to you. The second and third shall be explained, God willing, hereafter. But before the Catechism proceeds to them, it puts a fourth question, and a very natural one, considering that children do not, as they cannot, promise these things for themselves, but their godfathers and godmothers in their names. It asks them therefore, *whether they think they are bound to believe and to do, as they have promised for them?* And to this the person instructed answers, *Yes, verily*: the fitness of which answer will appear by inquiring,

1. In what sense, and for what reason, they promised these things in our names.

2. On what account we are bound to make their promises good.

1. In what sense, and for what reason, they promised these things in our names. A little attention will shew you this matter clearly.

The persons who began the profession of Christianity in the world, must have been such, as were of age to make it their own free choice. And when they entered into the covenant of baptism, they undoubtedly both had the privileges of it declared to them, and engaged to perform the obligations of it, in some manner, equivalent to that which we now use. When these were admitted by baptism into the Christian church, their children had a right to be so too, as will be proved in the sequel of these Lectures: at present let it be supposed. But if baptism had been administered to children, without any thing said to express its meaning, it would have had too much the appearance of an insignificant ceremony, or a superstitious charm. And if only the privileges, to which it is entitled, had been rehearsed; they might seem annexed to it absolutely, without any conditions to be observed on the children's part. It was therefore needful to express the conditions also. Now it would naturally appear the strongest and liveliest way of expressing them, to represent the infant, as promising by others then, what he was to promise by and for himself, as soon as he could. So the form, used already for persons grown up, was applied, with a few changes, to children also. And though, by such application, some words and phrases must appear a little strange, if they were strictly interpreted; yet the intention of them was and is understood to be a very proper one; declaring in the fullest manner what the child is to do hereafter, by a figure and representation made of it at present.

But then, as baptism is administered only on the presumption, that this representation is to become in due time a reality: so the persons, who thus promise in the child's name, are, and always have been, looked on as promising, by the same words, in their own

name, not indeed absolutely, that the child shall fulfil their engagements, which nobody can promise; but that, so far as need requires, they will endeavour that he shall: on which it may be reasonably supposed, that he will. Anciently the parents were the persons, who at baptism, both represented their children, and promised for their instruction and admonition. But it was considered afterwards, that they were obliged to it without promising it: and therefore other persons were procured to undertake it also: not to excuse the parents from that care, from which nothing can excuse them; but only, in a case of such consequence, to provide an additional security for it. If then the parents give due instruction, and the child follows it, the godfathers have nothing to do, but to be heartily glad. But if on either side there be a failure, it is then *their part and duty* to interpose, as far as they have ability and opportunity with any prospect of success. Nor is this to be done only till young persons take their baptismal vow upon themselves at confirmation, but ever after. For to that end, even they, who are baptized in their riper years, must have godfathers and godmothers present: not to represent them, or to promise for them, neither being wanted; but to remind them, if there be occasion, *what a solemn profession they have made before those their chosen witnesses**.

This then is the nature, and these are the reasons of that promise, which the sureties of children baptized make in their name; which promise therefore may without question be safely and usefully made, provided it be afterwards religiously kept. But they, who probably will be wanted to perform their promise, and yet will neglect it, should not be invited to

* Office of Baptism.

enter into it: and if they are, should refuse. Let every one concerned think seriously, whether he hath observed these rules, or not: for evidently it is a serious matter, how little soever it be commonly considered as such.

2. The second question is, on what account we are bound by what was promised at our baptism, since we neither consented to that engagement, nor knew of it. Now certainly we are not bound to do whatever any other person shall take upon him to promise in our name. But if the thing promised be part of an agreement advantageous to us, we are plainly bound in point of interest; and indeed of conscience too: for we ought to consult our own happiness. Even by the laws of men, persons, unable to express their consent, are yet presumed to consent to what is for their own good*; and obligations are understood to lie upon them from such presumed consent ever after: especially if there be a representative acting for them, who is empowered so to do†. And parents are empowered by nature to act for their children; and by Scripture to do it in this very case: and therefore may employ others to do it under them. But further still: the things promised in baptism would have been absolutely incumbent on us, whether they had been promised or not. For it is incumbent on all persons to believe and do what God commands. Only the tie is made stronger by the care then taken, that we shall be taught our duty. And when we have acknowledged ourselves to have learnt it, and have solemnly engaged ourselves to perform it, as we

* The first foundation of obligations *quasi ex contractu* is, that *quisque præsumitur consentire in id, quod utilitatem affert*. See Eden, *El. Jur. Civ.* 1. 3. tit. 28. p. 206.

† Of stipulations in another's name, see *Inst.* 3. 20. 20.

do when we are confirmed, then the obligation is complete.

But perhaps it will be asked, how shall all persons, especially the poor and unlearned, know, that what they are taught to believe is really true; and what they are taught to do, really their duty? I answer: the greatest part of it, when once it is duly proposed to them, they may perceive to be so, by the light of their own reason and conscience: as I doubt not to shew you. Such points indeed as depend not on reason, but on the revelation made in Scripture, cannot all of them be proved in so short a way, nor perhaps to an equal degree of plainness: but to a sufficient degree they may; as I hope to shew you also. And in such matters, they, who have but small abilities or opportunities for knowledge, must, where they cannot do better for themselves, rely on those who have more: not blindly and absolutely, but so far as is prudent and fit: just as, in common business, and the very weightiest of our worldly concerns, we all trust, on many occasions, to one another's judgement and integrity: nor could the affairs of human life go on, if we did not. And though in this method of proceeding, some will have far less light, than others; yet all will have enough to direct their steps; and they who have the least, are as much obliged to follow that carefully, as if they had the most; and will be as surely led by it to a happy end. Hearken therefore to instruction diligently, and consider of it seriously, and judge of it uprightly: and fear not at all after this, but that when you are asked, whether *you think yourselves bound to believe and to do what was promised in your name*, you will be well able, and on good grounds, to answer in the first place, *Yes, verily.*

But your answer must not stop here. When you are thus persuaded, your next concern is, immediately to act according to that persuasion. Now as this depends on two things; our own resolution, and assistance from above: so both are expressed in the following words of the answer, *and, by God's help, so I will.* Further: because our own resolution is best supported by our sense of the advantage of keeping it; therefore the person instructed goes on, in the same answer, to acknowledge that the state, in which he is placed by baptism, is *a state of salvation*; and because assistance from above is best obtained by thankfulness for God's mercy hitherto, and prayer for it hereafter, he concludes, by *thanking our heavenly Father, for calling him to this state; and praying for his grace, that he may continue in the same to his life's end.*

Now the necessity and nature of God's grace and of prayer and other means to obtain it, will be explained in their proper places. The two points therefore, of which it remains to speak at present, are, the need of good resolution, and of thankfulness for that happy state, in which baptism hath placed us.

In every thing that we attempt, much depends on a deliberate and fixed purpose of mind. But particularly in religion, when once we are thoroughly convinced, that whatever it requires must be done; and have determined accordingly, that though we know there will be labour and difficulty in going on, and many solicitations and enticements to leave off, yet we will set about the work, and persevere in it; obstacles and discouragements, that till then appeared very threatening, will, a great part of them, vanish into nothing; and those, which remain, will serve only to exercise our courage, and make our triumph

glorious; provided we keep our resolution alive, and in vigour, by frequently repeating it in a proper manner: that is, in a strong sense of God's presence, and an humble dependence on his blessing. For if we trust in ourselves, we shall fail. And if we pretend to trust in God, without exerting ourselves, we shall fail equally. In either case, the good impressions made on our minds will be continually growing fainter of course: and multitudes of things will conspire to wear them quite out. Pleasures will soften us into dissoluteness; or amusements, into neglect of every serious attention. Love of riches or power or applause will engage us in wrong methods of attaining them: or the cares of life will banish the duties of it from our thoughts. Vehement passions will upset our virtue: or insinuating temptations undermine it as effectually. Some of these things must happen, unless we preserve a steady and watchful, a modest and religious resolution against them, ever fresh on our minds.

And nothing will contribute more to our doing this, than reflecting often, with due thankfulness, that the state, *to which God hath called us*, is a state of *salvation*: a state of deliverance from the present slavery of sin, and the future punishment of it: a state of the truest happiness, that this life can afford, introducing us to perfect and everlasting happiness in the next. Such is the condition, in which, through the mercy of God, we Christians are placed; and in which, by a Christian behaviour, we may secure ourselves; and not only preserve, but continually enlarge, our share of its blessings. But if we now neglect to do for ourselves what we ought; all, that hath been done for us by others, will be of no avail. Neither our baptism, nor our instruction; nor our learn-

ing ever so exactly, or understanding ever so distinctly, or remembering ever so particularly, what we were instructed in, can possibly have any effect, but to increase our condemnation, unless we faithfully *continue* in the practice of every part of it to *our life's end*. This therefore let us all determine to make our constant and most earnest care, with humble gratitude to God, *our heavenly Father*, for his undeserved mercy to us; and with sure confidence, that if we be not wanting to ourselves, *he that hath begun a good work in us, will perform it, until the day of Jesus Christ**.

* Phil. i. 6.

LECTURE V.

GROUND AND RULE OF FAITH.

HAVING already explained to you the several things, which Christians by the covenant of their baptism renounce; I come now to speak of what we are to believe: after which will follow properly what we are to do. For all reasonable practice must be built on some belief, or persuasion, which is the ground of it: virtuous practice, on a persuasion, that what we do is fit and right: religious practice, on a persuasion, that it is the will of God. Now God hath been pleased to make his will known by two ways: partly by the mere inward light of our own understandings; partly by the outward means of additional declarations from himself. The former of these we call natural religion: the latter, revealed religion.

The natural reason of our own minds, if we would seriously attend to it, and faithfully assist each other in using it, is capable of discovering, as shall be proved to you, not only the being and attributes, and authority of God; but in general, what sort of behaviour he must expect from such creatures, placed in such a world, as we are, in order to avoid his dis-

pleasure, and procure some degree of his favour. And as we cannot doubt of what our own clear apprehension, and the common sense of mankind, plainly tell us: here is one foundation of religious belief and practice, evident to all men. And if our belief and practice be not suitable to it, our consciences, whenever we consult them, nay often whether we consult them or not, will condemn us, to our faces, of sin; and proclaim to us beforehand the justice of that future condemnation, which God will pass upon it. Every one of you, that hear me, have at times felt this; make, every one of you, a proper use of it.

If then the light of nature were our only guide, it would teach us more than, I fear, many of us observe. But happy are we, that this is not our only guide. For it would leave us uninformed in many particulars of unspeakable moment, even were our faculties unimpaired, and employed to the best advantage. But alas, the very first of mankind fell into sin, and derived a corrupted nature down to their posterity: who yet further inflamed their own passions and appetites, perverted their own judgements, turned aside their attention from the truth; and *the light that was in them became*, in a great measure, *darkness**, even in respect of what they were to do. But what they were to hope and fear after doing wickedly, this was a matter of far greater obscurity still. And had we, here present, been left to ourselves, in all likelihood we had been, at this hour (like multitudes of other poor wretches in every part of the world that is unenlightened by Christianity), worshipping stocks and stones: or however, we should certainly, in other respects, have been *walk-*

* Matth. vi. 23.

*in gin the vanity of our minds, having the understanding darkened, alienated from the life of God**; strangers from the covenant of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world †.

But he was graciously pleased not to leave fallen men to themselves, but to furnish them with needful knowledge. What human abilities, when at the best, might have discovered, they would in all likelihood have discovered (if at all) so slowly, that we have great cause to believe, the religion of our first parents was derived from his immediate instruction. But certainly after their transgression, he made an immediate revelation to them; and thenceforward vouchsafed from time to time various manifestations, to such as would receive them, of his truths, his commands, and his purposes: not only republishing the original doctrines of reason, but adding new articles of belief, new promises, and new precepts, as the changing circumstances of things required; till at length, by his Son, our Saviour Jesus Christ, he confirmed all his past notifications, and took away all necessity of future ones; acquainting us fully, in the ever-blessed Gospel, with all that we shall need to know, or be bound to do, *till Heaven and earth pass*‡.

Thus then, besides those things in religion, which our own reason can discern, we receive others on the testimony of their being revealed by God: as unquestionably we ought. For if he, who cannot err, and cannot lie, communicates any information to us; though it require us to believe, what we had before not the least apprehension of, or should else have imagined to be exceedingly strange and unlikely; though it requires us to do, what otherwise we should neither have thought of doing, nor have chosen to

* Eph. iv. 17, 18.

† Eph. ii. 12.

‡ Matth. v. 18.

do; yet surely his testimony and command may well be sufficient reason for both. We admit every day, upon the testimony one of another, things utterly unknown to us, and in themselves extremely improbable: and we act upon such testimony in matters, on which our fortunes, our healths, our lives, depend: as indeed without doing so, the affairs of the world could not be carried on. Now *if we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater* *. And since we are able to convey the knowledge of our thoughts and our wills to each other, no question but God is able to convey his to his creatures.

But, allowing that he can, it may be asked, how do we prove, that he hath conveyed it to men in the Jewish and Christian revelations? I answer, we believe the Jewish revelation, for this plain reason, amongst others, because the Christian confirms it: and we believe the Christian, chiefly upon the full proof, which Christ and his Apostles have given of it. They who saw him, with their own eyes, perform things which man could not do; and heard him, with their own ears, foretel things, which man could not foreknow, and yet experienced them to come to pass: as for instance, his healing great numbers of sick persons with a word, and raising himself from the dead: they must be sure, that some power attended him more than human. And since his doctrines all promoted the spiritual worship and honour of the one true God, and virtue and happiness among men: they must be sure also, that this power was not that of an evil spirit, but of a good one; and consequently, that he came from God, and taught his will. If then it be true, that he did, in their presence, not

* 1 John v. 9.

only deliver such doctrine, but foretel and perform such things; then their faith was reasonable, and ours is so too. Now they do in the strongest manner affirm this; as you may read throughout the Gospel and Acts: and why are they not to be credited? They could not every one of them be mistaken in all; and think they saw and heard, day after day, and year after year, things which they did not: any more than we can be mistaken in every thing that we see and hear continually. Besides they affirm, that they were enabled to do the same wonders themselves; and enabled others to do them. All this could not be mistake too.

And as they could not be deceived in these points, so neither could they intend to deceive mankind. There is all the appearance in the world of their being fair and honest persons, that would not deceive for interest. But besides, what they affirmed was absolutely against their interest. It exposed them, as they could not but imagine it would, to reproach, imprisonment, stripes, and death itself. Yet all these things they underwent patiently, one after another, through a course of many years, for the sake of what they taught; none of them all confessing, or being convicted of, any falsehood: which they must have been, had they been guilty of any; for the things, which they affirmed, were many, indeed most of them, done publicly: and all the power, and all the learning, of the world were employed against them from the first, to detect them, if possible. Yet nobody pretends, or ever did pretend, that they were detected. Besides, if any such discovery had been made, their whole scheme must have been ruined immediately: whereas, instead of that, they spread their religion (though it was contrary to the esta-

blished superstitions, the deep-rooted prejudices, and favourite vices, of all mankind) through the whole earth, within a few years, by mere force of miracles, and arguments, and innocence, against all opposition. These things surely are proofs sufficient of our Saviour's coming from God, without saying any thing of the prophecies of the Old Testament, so many of which were so clearly fulfilled in him.

But then, as all the facts hitherto mentioned are ancient ones; it may be asked farther, How can we now be sure of the truth of what is said to have been done so many ages ago? I answer, By all the same means, which can assure us of any other ancient fact. And there are multitudes of much ancient-er, which nobody hath the least doubt of: and it would be reckoned madness, if they had. The miracles of Christ and his Apostles are recorded in the New Testament: a book very fully proved, and indeed, acknowledged, to be, the greatest part of it, written by the Apostles themselves; and the rest, in their days, by their direction: and no one material fact of it is, or ever was, so far as we can learn, opposed by any contrary evidence whatever. Then, that vast numbers of persons were converted to this religion, as they declared, by seeing these miracles, and vast numbers more, by the accounts, which they received of them; and persevered in their faith, against all worldly discouragements, till at length it became the prevailing one; appears partly from the New Testament also, partly from other books of acknowledged authority, written in that age and the following ones, by heathens and Jews, as well as Christians; and indeed is in the main universally owned and notorious.

But supposing the facts, on which our religion is

built, to be truly related, yet it may be asked further, How shall we be sure, that its doctrines were so too, in which it is much easier to mistake? I answer again: The doctrines of the Old Testament are attested and confirmed by the New. And for those of the New Testament: we have our Saviour's own discourses, recorded by two of his Apostles, Matthew and John, who heard him constantly, and by two other persons, Mark and Luke, who at least received them from his constant hearers. We have also the discourses of his first disciples after resurrection, recorded in the Acts: we have besides, many letters, written by them, the Epistles, sent on several occasions, for the instruction of several new-planted churches. Now all these agree in the same doctrine. But further, which adds inestimable value to what they have said and written, our Lord himself promised them, that the Spirit of God should *teach them all things, and bring all things to their remembrance, whatever he had said unto them**; should come and abide with them for ever, and guide them into all truth†. And accordingly this Spirit did come, and manifest his continual presence with them by his miraculous gifts. We have therefore the fullest evidence that both what they have delivered, as from our Saviour, and what they have said in their own names, is a true representation of his religion.

But another question is, Supposing the Scripture a true revelation, so far as it goes; how shall we know, if it be a full and complete one too, in all things necessary? I answer: Since our Saviour had the Spirit without measure, and the writers of Scripture had as large a measure of it, as their commission to instruct the world required, it is impossible, that in so many discourses concerning the terms of salvation, as the New Testament contains, they should all have

* John xiv. 26.

† John xiv. 16. xvi. 13.

omitted any one thing necessary to the great end, which they had in view. And what was not necessary when the Scripture was completed, cannot have become so since. For *the faith was once for all delivered in it to the saints**: and *other foundation can no man lay†*, than what was laid then. The sacred penmen themselves could teach no other Gospel than Christ appointed them; and he hath appointed no one since to make additions to it.

In the books of Scripture then the doctrines of our religion are truly and fully conveyed to us: and we cannot be so sure of any other conveyance. It is a confirmation of our faith indeed, that the earliest Christian writers, after those of Scripture, in all material points agree with it. But if they did not, no writers can have equal authority with inspired ones. And no unwritten tradition can long be of any authority at all. For things, delivered by word of mouth, always vary, more or less, in going through but a few hands. And the world hath experienced, that articles of belief, for want of having recourse to the written rule of them, have greatly changed in many churches of Christians: but in few or none more, than that of Rome, which absurdly pretends to be unchangeable and infallible. It is in the Scripture alone then, that we, who live in these later ages, can be sure of finding the Christian faith preserved, complete and undefiled: and there we may be sure of it.

For as to any pretence or fear of these books being corrupted and altered, either by design or mistake; had the Old Testament been depraved in any thing essential, our Saviour and his Apostles would have given us notice of it. And for the New, the several

* Jude 3.

† 1 Cor. iii. 11.

parts of it were so immediately spread through the world, and so constantly read in public and private, by all Christians; and so perpetually quoted in all their discourses, and all the disputes of one sect with another, that they could not possibly be changed, by any of them, in any thing considerable. For the rest would have immediately discovered it, and charged them with it, which must put an end to the danger. And indeed it is an agreed point, amongst all who understand these matters, that nothing of this kind either hath happened, or can happen, so as to affect any one article of faith.

But perhaps it will be alledged, that the Bible was written originally in languages, which have long been out of common use, and with which but a small part of Christians now are acquainted: and how shall the rest be sure, that we have them rightly translated into our own? The plain answer is, that all translations, made by all parties, agree in most places, and those of the most importance: and where they disagree, moderate consideration and enquiry will enable any persons who live in a country of knowledge and freedom, which, God be thanked, is our case, to judge on some good grounds, as far as they need judge, which is right, and which is wrong; which is clear, and which is doubtful. Nor doth any sect of Christians pretend to accuse our common translation of concealing any necessary truth, or asserting any destructive error.

But supposing all this, yet it may be urged, that many parts of Scripture in our translation, and in the original too, are dark and obscure: and how can it then be the guide and rule of our faith? I answer: these are few in proportion to such as are clear: and were they more, the Spirit of God, we may be sure,

would make all necessary points, in one part or another, sufficiently clear. These therefore the most ignorant may learn from Scripture; at least by the help of such explanations, as they are willing to ask and trust in all other cases, and much admirable instruction besides; which if they do but respect and observe as they ought, they may be content to leave for the use of others, what a little modesty will shew them is above their own reach.

But that every person may be enabled the better to distinguish between the necessary doctrines and the rest: those, which either Christ or his Apostles expressly taught to be of the former sort, or the nature of the thing plainly shews to be such, have from the earliest times been collected together: and the profession of them hath been particularly required of all persons baptized. These collections or summaries are in Scripture called, *the form of sound words**, *the words of faith†*, *the principles of the doctrine of Christ‡*: but in the present language of Christians, the Creed, that is, the Belief.

The ancient church had many such creeds: some longer, some shorter; differing in expression, but agreeing in method and sense: of which that called the Apostles' Creed was one. And it deserves that name, not so much from any certainty that the Apostles drew it up, as because it contains the apostolical doctrines: and was used by a church which, before it corrupted itself, was justly considered as one of the chief apostolical foundations, I mean the Roman.

But neither this, nor any other creed, hath authority of its own, equal to Scripture; but derives its principal authority from being founded on Scripture.

* 2 Tim. i. 13.

† 1 Tim. iv. 6.

‡ Heb. vi. 1.

Nor is it in the power of any man, or number of men, either to lessen or increase the fundamental articles of the Christian faith : which yet the church of Rome, not content with its primitive creed, hath prophanely attempted ; adding twelve articles more, founded on its own, that is, on no authority, to the ancient twelve, which stand on the authority of God's word. But our church hath wisely refused to go a step beyond the original form ; since all necessary truths are briefly comprehended in it, as will appear when the several parts of it come to be expounded, which it is the duty of every one of us firmly to believe, and openly to profess. *For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation**.

* Rom. x. 10.

LECTURE VI.

CREED.

Article I. *I believe in God, the Father, &c.*

THE foundation of all religion is faith in God: the persuasion, that there doth, ever did, and ever will exist, one being of unbounded power and knowledge, perfect justice, truth, and goodness, the creator and preserver, the sovereign Lord and ruler of all things. With this article therefore our creed begins. And as all the rest are built upon it, so the truth and certainty of it is plain to every man, when duly proposed to his consideration, how unlikely soever some men would have been to discover it of themselves.

We know, beyond possibility of doubt, that we now are: and yet the oldest of us, but a few years ago, was not. How then came we to be? Whence had we our beginning? From our parents, perhaps we may think. But did our parents know, or do we know in the least, how to form such a mind as that of man, with all its faculties: or such a body as that of man, with all its parts and members: or even the very smallest of them? No more, than a tree knows how to make the seed that grows into a like tree; no more, than any common instrument knows how to do the

work, which is done by its means. Our parents were only instruments in the hands of some higher power: and to speak properly, that *it is which made us, and not we ourselves**, or one another. And the same is the case of every animal and every plant upon the face of the earth.

But could our parents be the cause of our being; yet still the first human pair must have had some different cause of theirs. Will it then be said that there was no first? But we cannot conceive this to be possible. And it certainly is not true. For we have undoubted accounts, in ancient histories, of the time when men were but few in the world, and inhabited but a small part of it; and therefore were near their beginning: accounts of the times, when almost all arts and sciences were invented; which mankind would not have been long in being, much less from eternity, without finding out. And upon the whole, there is strong evidence, that the present frame of things is not more than about six thousand years old: and that none of us, here present, is 150 generations distant from our first parents.

If it be said, that universal deluges may perhaps have destroyed almost all the race of men, and so made that seem a new beginning, which was not: we answer, that one such deluge we own: but that no such can possibly happen according to the common course of nature, as learned persons have abundantly shewn. And consequently this proves a higher power, instead of destroying the proof of it.

But without having recourse to history, it is evident from the very form and appearance of this earth, that it cannot have been from eternity. If it had, to mention nothing else, the hills must all have

* Psal. c. 2.

been washed down by showers innumerable ages ago, to a level with the plains *. And indeed they, who have thought of these matters, well know and confess, that the present constitution of the heavens and earth both must have had a beginning, and must of itself come to an end.

To say therefore, that things are by nature what they are, is to say a plain falsehood, if we mean, that they are so by any necessity in their own nature. For then they must always have been such as we see them; and not the least part of any thing could possibly have been at all different from what it is: which is the wildest imagination in the world. The only nature therefore, which we and the whole universe have, was freely given us by a superior Being. And the regularity, in which things go on, is no more a proof, that they were of themselves from everlasting, or shall continue as they are to everlasting, than the regular motion of a clock is a proof, that no artist made it, or keeps it in order, or shall take it to pieces. On the contrary, the more complete this regularity is, and the longer it lasts, the more fully it shews the power of its author; and not only that, but his understanding and wisdom also.

Indeed what hath no understanding, hath, in strictness of speech, no power; cannot act, but only be acted upon: as all mere matter is; which never moves, but as it is moved. But were this doubtful: look around you, and see what marks of understanding and wisdom appear. Turn your eyes upon your-

* This argument is proved from Theophrastus, in Philo *περὶ ἀφθαρσίας κόσμου*, p. 510; and two answers to it attempted, p. 513: that mountains may lose parts, and gain them again, as trees do their leaves; or are supported by the internal fire, which threw them up. The first is an absurd assertion: the latter a groundless and false one.

selves: how *fearfully and wonderfully are we made**! Of what an incredible number and variety of parts, (a vastly greater perhaps than any of us suspect,) are our bodies composed! How were these formed and put together at first? What hath caused, and what hath limited their growth since? How hath proper and suitable nourishment been distributed to them all? How hath the perpetual motion of our blood, and of our breath, sleeping and waking, both of them so necessary to life, been carried on? How is it, that we move every joint belonging to us, instantly, and with such exactness, without knowing even which way we go about it? Our speech, our hearing, our sight, every one of our senses, what amazing contrivance is there in them; and the more amazing, the more strictly we examine them! In the works of men, it is often mere ignorance, that occasions our admiration: but in these, the minuter our inspection, and the deeper our search is, the greater abundance we always find of accurate adjustment and unimaginable precautions.

But then, besides ourselves, the earth is replenished with numberless other animals. Those, of which we commonly take notice, are an extremely small part of the whole. Different countries produce very different sorts. How many, still more different, the great waters conceal from us, we cannot even guess. Multitudes remain, so little as almost to escape our sight, with the best assistance that we are able to give it; and probably multitudes more, which escape it entirely. But all that we can observe, we find down to the very least, contrived with the same inconceivable art, strangely diversified, yet uniform at the same time, and perfectly fitted by most surprizing instincts

* Psal. cxxxix. 14.

for their several ways of living, so entirely different each from the other.

What wisdom and power must it be then, which hath peopled the world in this manner, and made such provision for the support of all its inhabitants; chiefly by the means of innumerable kinds of herbs and vegetables, just as wonderful in their make, as the animals themselves: that hath intermixed the dry land so fitly with springs, and rivers, and lakes, and the ocean, to supply every thing with necessary moisture, and make the communication of the most distant parts easy: that hath surrounded the earth with air for us to breathe in, to convey our voices to each other, and to support clouds for rain: that hath caused this air to be moved by winds, which preserve it healthful, and *bring those who go down to the sea in ships, unto the haven where they would be**: that hath placed the sun at so exact a distance from us, that we are neither burnt up by heat, nor frozen by cold; and hath kept bodies of such incredible bulk, as the heavenly ones, rolling on for thousands of years together, with so orderly and exact a motion, that the returns of day and night, and of the various annual seasons, are precisely foreknown; and perfectly suitable for labour and rest, and bringing the fruits of the earth to maturity: whereas were almost any one of these things considerably altered, we must all of necessity perish!

But then, how small a part of the universe our habitation may be; and how many, perhaps greater, wonders the rest may contain; we cannot so much as conjecture. The millions of miles, that are between us, and the nearest of the celestial globes, would be astonishing, if mentioned to you. Yet

* Psal. cvii. 23, 30.

their distance is as nothing, if compared with the farthest, which we see: and very possibly the farthest, which we see, may be as nothing to many others: every one of which, we have no reason to doubt, is as full of regularity, and beauty, and use, as our own abode. And from what origin can the whole of this proceed, but that which the psalmist rapturously expresses: *O Lord, how manifold are thy works! in wisdom hast thou made them all* *!

To speak of chance, as the cause of them, is absurd beyond measure. Chance is merely a word, to express our own ignorance: it is nothing, and can do nothing. Suppose one of us were asked, how this building, in which we are assembled, or the smallest part of the dress which we wear, came to be what it is; and should answer that no person made it, but it jumped together and held together by chance; would not this be gross folly? And how shockingly foolish must it be then, to give the same account of the existence of a whole world so admirably contrived, adjusted, and conducted throughout! As evidently therefore as any common piece of work proves a workman to have composed it, so evidently, and very much more, the immense fabric of the universe proves a being of unspeakable power and skill to be the creator of it.

And accordingly, the belief of a wise and mighty author of all hath been received in every age and nation: which clearly shews it to be founded in truth, and written in the hearts of men. They corrupted it gradually indeed: first, by unworthy representations of the true God, then by adding the worship of false gods, which at length excluded him. But undeniably the primitive notion was that of an invisible

* Psalm civ. 34.

mind, the maker and ruler of this visible frame: which being plainly under one uniform direction, shews itself to have one only sovereign director and governor. This doctrine God himself must have taught our first parents in the beginning: he hath confirmed it since by miracles from time to time; and perpetuated the evidence of it in his holy word.

That he is not perceived by any of our senses, is no objection at all against his being. For our minds also are imperceptible by sense. But as they, notwithstanding, shew their existence by moving and disposing of our bodies according to their pleasure; so doth God shew his, by moving and disposing of all things as he wills. And the same argument proves his presence with all things. For wherever he acts, there he certainly is: and therefore he is every where. Our presence is limited, and extends a very little way: but what is there to limit him? Our being is derived from his command; and therefore depends on it still: but he is underived; and therefore independent absolutely. Our powers are only what he hath thought fit to give us: but his power is infinite: for every thing depending on him, nothing can resist him. Our knowledge is every way imperfect: but he who made all things, and is present with all things, must in the completest manner know all things, even the most hidden thoughts of the heart. We are often unjust and wicked: but God cannot be otherwise than just and holy. For the only reasons of our failing to do right are, that we either perceive not what is so, or else are tempted to act contrary to our perceptions: but God is subject to no mistake, or weakness of any kind. And, which is the happiest attribute of all for his creation, he must be likewise good. For goodness is plainly a right thing;

and therefore he must see it to be so: it is plainly a perfection; and therefore the perfectest being must possess it in the highest degree. We should be always good ourselves, if nothing misled us: and him nothing can mislead. But the most valuable proof is, that we experience his goodness: for we live in a world full of it. All that we enjoy, and every capacity of enjoyment that we have, proceeds from him. Most of what we suffer proceeds from our own faults and follies. And so much of it as comes wholly from his providence, is designed for our present improvement and future reward: unless by obstinate misbehaviour we become unfit for reward: and then we have only ourselves to blame. For as God is knowing and wise: he cannot but observe the difference between good persons and bad: as he is just and holy; he cannot take pleasure in those, who are otherwise: and as he is the governor of the world; he cannot fail to shew his displeasure in that effectual manner, which the ends of government require. And they certainly do require the bad to be punished, as well as the good to be made happy.

Such then is the nature of God: to whom in the Creed the name of *Father* is given, as he is both the father of the creation by forming it, and also the father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and through him our gracious and reconciled father, as shall hereafter be explained. The next word *Almighty*, denotes, not barely his irresistible power, but principally that rightful and absolute authority, with which *his kingdom ruleth over all* *. And the last words of the description, *maker of heaven and earth*, are added; partly to express the ground of that authority, his being the creator, and therefore the proprietor of the

* Psal. ciii. 19.

world; and partly in opposition to the errors of the heathens, who worshipped many beings in the heavens and the earth, as gods, which, in these terms of our Creed, are by evident consequence declared to be no gods, because they are the work of his hands, *of whom, and through whom, and to whom, are all things* *.

The duties, owing to this our awful sovereign, will be specified in expounding the ten commandments, particularly the first. At present therefore I shall only beg you to remember the Apostle's exhortation: *Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God* †. Nothing, but an evil heart, can make unbelief desirable, or even supportable. For to every good heart it must be the greatest joy, to know that the world is governed by infinite wisdom, justice, and goodness; and the greatest affliction, to have any doubt of it. If therefore you find the thought of such a governor unwelcome; if you could inwardly wish there were none; be assured, *your heart is not right* ‡. And though you could with such a disposition bring yourself, almost or completely, to imagine there is none: what possible security can shutting your eyes give you against danger; or what excuse can wilfully denying God make for disobeying him?

But then observe further, that supposing you do not disbelieve God at all, yet if you never think of him, this is not, to any good purpose, believing in him at all: and if you think of him but seldom, it is believing in him but little. He on whom we depend continually, to whom we owe duty continually, in whose presence we continually are, ought never to be far from our thoughts: but we should set him before

* Rom. xi. 36.

† Heb. iii. 12.

‡ Acts viii. 21.

our eyes so constantly, as to live in his fear always. Doing this needs not keep us from common business; it needs not keep us from innocent pleasures. But it should influence us all effectually, (and happy are we, if it doth) to conduct ourselves in every thing, as persons who act under the inspection of a wise and just superior; whom we may indeed forget, if we will; but shall be remembered by him: from whom we may depart, but cannot escape. In our choice it is, whether we will be the better or the worse for him. But one we must: and that beyond expression. *For God will bring every work into judgement, with every secret thing; whether it be good or whether it be evil* *.

* Eccl. xii. 14.

LECTURE VII.

CREED.

Article II. *And in Jesus Christ his only Son our Lord.*

TO believe in God the Father Almighty, Maker of heaven and earth, is the universal creed of nature and reason. But divine revelation adds further professions to it; of which the first is, that of faith in our ever blessed Redeemer: whose direction was, *Ye believe in God; believe also in me**. Therefore, that we may believe in him as we ought, he is described, in the Creed, by his name and offices, his relation to God and to us.

1. His name, *Jesus*: by which indeed many of the Jews were called; but it was given him in obedience to an appointment from heaven, made with a peculiar regard to its proper meaning. For it signifies, a Saviour: which is a title conferred, in a lower sense, on several persons in Scripture, who delivered others from considerable dangers or evils, or obtained for them considerable benefits and advantages. Thus the judges of the Israelites, that freed them from the oppression of their enemies, are said to be *Saviours*, whom *God raised up†* to them. And Joshua, who

* John xiv. 1.

† Judges iii. 9, 15. Nehem. ix. 27.

brought them out of the wilderness into the land of Canaan, subdued it, and put them in possession of it, not only was in these respects a saviour to them : but, from a foresight that he would, was called so, as his proper name. For *Joshua* and *Jesus* are, in the original, the same word ; only pronounced a little differently. And hence *Joshua* is constantly called *Jesus* in the Greek language, and even in our translation of the New Testament, the two only times that he is mentioned there*. But if he deserved to be named a *saviour*, how much more did that person, who hath taught and enabled us to overcome our spiritual, which are infinitely our worst enemies ; who hath obtained for us, on most equitable terms, deliverance from the punishment due to our guilt ; who hath *destroyed* on our behalf, death, and *him that had the power of death*† ; and will bestow on us eternal salvation, in the kingdom of heaven ? With perfect justice therefore was the order given to his virgin mother, *Thou shalt call his name Jesus : for he shall save his people from their sins*‡ : only let us remember, that none will be saved from them hereafter, that continue to live in them here. For is the holy *Jesus the minister of sin* ? God forbid§ !

2. His offices are expressed by the word, *Christ*. This, and the Hebrew word *Messiah*, to which it answers, in their literal meaning signify *anointed*. Oil was anciently in very high esteem among the eastern nations on various accounts. And as they were wont to express almost every matter of importance by actions, as well as words ; one way of setting any thing apart, and appropriating it to an honourable use, was by anointing it with oil. Therefore we find

* Acts vii. 45. Heb. iv. 8.

† Heb. ii. 14.

‡ Matth. i. 21.

§ Gal. ii. 17.

Jotham in his parable makes the *olive tree* speak of its *fatness*, as that *wherewith they honour God and man**. Accordingly the tabernacle, and temple, and their furniture, were consecrated by anointing them. And almost every sacrifice had oil, mixed with flour, added to it, when it was offered up. Nor was it used only to such things, but such persons, as were distinguished in honour above others: to kings; who are thence frequently styled in Scripture, *the Lord's anointed*: to priests; concerning whom God commands, in the case of Aaron and his sons, *Thou shalt anoint them, that they may minister to me in the priests' office*†: and lastly to prophets; as where Elijah is directed to *anoint Elisha prophet in his room*‡.

And when once, by custom, anointing came to signify raising any one to a station of dignity, the same word was used, even on occasions where no oil was actually employed§. Thus when Elijah was bid to *anoint Hazael to be king over Syria, and Elisha for prophet in his own room*: we find not, that he ever did it literally||. Again, when God is introduced, as saying of the Jewish patriarchs, before Moses, *touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm*¶; we have no ground to think, that they were ever entitled to this name by any solemn outward unction, performed upon them: but only by the distinguished favour and regard of heaven. And in this sense it was, that *God anointed our Saviour with the oil of gladness, above his fellows*** : that is, exalted him to a rank of dignity and honour beyond all creatures.

* Judges ix. 9.

† Exod. xl. 15.

‡ 1 Kings xix. 16.

§ The Jews say that משיחה, *unction*, signifies *principality and greatness*; עריו קצינות ונגולה. Reland. Ant. Hebr. Par. 2. c. 8. § 6. and see this further proved, Ib. c. 9. § 6.

|| See 1 Kings xix. 15, 16. Comp. v. 19. and 2 Kings viii. 13.

¶ Psal. cv. 15.

** Psal. xlv. 7.

For in his person were united those three offices, in the highest degree, to which, you have seen, persons were anciently set apart by anointing.

He is the greatest prophet, that ever was: having given to mankind the fullest knowledge of God's will, and confirmed his doctrine by the most illustrious miracles and predictions. Hence Isaiah, speaking in his name, long before his appearance, gave that description of him, which he so justly in the synagogue applied to himself: *the Spirit of the Lord is upon me, he hath anointed me* to preach the Gospel to the poor†*. And St. Peter, after his resurrection, says, that *God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power*. What these words mean, the next explain: *who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him‡*: and the whole means just the same thing, with what he elsewhere says, that he was *a man approved of God by miracles and wonders and signs§*.

In the next place, he is a priest of an order, strictly speaking, confined to his own person, and of which no other ever was or can be: though in some respects the priesthood of Melchizedek peculiarly resembled and prefigured it. He offered up himself for the sins of mankind, as shall hereafter be explained to you. With this sacrifice he appeared before God, *not in the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but in heaven itself||*; made reconciliation for us with him, derives to us continually blessings from him: and thus remains for ever *an high-priest over the house of God¶*: compared with whom, the

* Chald. doth not understand the anointing here to be with material oil.

† Isa. lxi. 1. Luke iv. 18.

‡ Acts x. 38.

§ Acts ii. 22.

|| Heb. ix. 24.

¶ Heb. x. 21.

Jewish priesthood, and the sacrifices which they were daily making, were but as empty shadows to the real substance.

But lastly, he is in the highest sense a king; King and Lord of all. Hence, in the second Psalm, he is called the *Lord's anointed*, whom he *hath set to be king on his holy hill of Sion**. Hence in Isaiah it is prophesied, that he should *sit upon the throne of David*, (that is, reign over the people of God) to *order and establish it for ever†*. And hence his title in Daniel is, *Messiah the prince‡*, or the anointed prince: *the Son of man, to whom dominion should be given, and a kingdom; that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him§*. The completion of these prophecies we find in the New Testament: where as he professes himself *a king, but not of a kingdom of this world||*; so we find him, *after the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour¶*, infinitely superior to the highest of the mortal potentates: *all power being given to him in heaven and in earth***; and a name *above every name, that is named in this world, and that to come††*: for which reason he is in the Revelation styled, *King of kings, and Lord of lords‡‡*. This kingly power he exercises, partly by giving laws, which every one is bound to obey, and no one may alter, diminish, or add to them: partly by protecting his church against all its enemies, visible and invisible, so that neither shall at any time totally prevail against it: partly by conducting every member of it, who is dutiful to him, in the way of peace and happiness, through the grace of his Spirit, and the ministry of his ordinances: and finally he will, in the most con-

* Psal. ii. 2, 6.

† Isa. ix. 7.

‡ Dan. ix. 25.

§ Dan. vii. 3, 14.

|| John xviii. 33, 36.

¶ Heb. ii. 9.

** Matt. xxviii. 18.

†† Phil. ii. 9. Eph. i. 21.

‡‡ Rev. xix. 16.

spicuous manner, display his regal power, by everlastingly rewarding his faithful subjects: and punishing all, who have rejected his authority, rebelled against it, or disobeyed it.

These then are the offices, to which God hath anointed, that is, raised and exalted him: and in respect of which he is called the Christ. Let us all be careful to receive him suitably to them: and so hearken to him as our prophet, that we may partake of his atonement, as our priest; and live under his protection, as our king, for ever and ever.

3. The next thing, mentioned in the Creed, concerning our Saviour, is the relation, which he bears to God, as the *only Son* of the Father Almighty. Indeed the Scripture speaks of God, as the father of all men; and of all that are good, as his sons. Good Christians are so in a higher sense, than other good men. Angels are the sons of God, in a degree still superior to them. But yet, all other sonships are so inconceivably inferior to that of Christ, that they are in comparison as nothing; and he deserves notwithstanding to be called, as he is several times called in Scripture, *the only begotten Son* of God*; which greatest of titles appears to be his due, on several accounts.

First, because, being born of a virgin, he had no earthly father; but was begotten of God by his Holy Spirit. This reason the angel gives, in St. Luke: *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore that holy thing, which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God†.*

Secondly, as by virtue of the above-mentioned offices, to which he was anointed, he received higher

* John i. 14, 18. iii. 16, 18. 1 John iv. 9.

† Luke i. 35.

marks of divine favour, and higher degrees of divine likeness, than any other person ever did. For as himself argues with the Jews, if, on account of mere earthly power and dignity, men were called *gods, and children of the Most High**, much more might he, *whom the Father sanctified, and sent into the world*, in so vastly superior a character, be styled, by way of eminence, *the Son of God†*. And thus is he accordingly styled, on this account: *I will be his father, and he shall be my son†: also I will make him my first born, higher than the kings of the earth§*.

Thirdly, he is the Son of God, as being by the power of God *the first begotten of the dead||*, restored to life to die no more. For thus St. Paul expresses it: *God hath raised up Jesus again, as it is also written, Thou art my Son: this day have I begotten thee¶*.

Fourthly, he is so, as being *heir of all things***, and by this inheritance having obtained a more excellent name, than men or angels††: they being as servants in the house of God, he as a Son‡‡.

But the most important and eminent sense, in which Christ is the Son of God, remains yet to be mentioned: as, in respect of his divine nature, he derived his being from the Father, by an eternal generation; not as creatures do, who are made out of nothing, and were made by him; but in a manner peculiar to himself, and inconceivable to us: by which *all the fulness of the Godhead dwells in him§§*: and he and the Father are, in the strictest union, *one|||*.

* Psal. lxxxii. 6.

† 2 Sam. vii. 14. 1 Chr. xvii. 13. Heb. i. 5.

|| Rev. i. 5.

** Heb. i. 2.

†† Heb. iii. 5, 6.

||| John x. 30.

† John x. 34, &c.

§ Psal. lxxxix. 27.

¶ Acts xiii. 33.

†† Heb. i. 4.

§§ Col. ii. 9.

For God was his *Father*, with whom he had glory before the world was*: and he in the beginning was with God, and was God†; God over all, blessed for ever‡. Of this mysterious doctrine, I shall speak somewhat further, under the article of the Holy Ghost: and therefore shall only say at present, that being expressly revealed, it ought to be implicitly believed; without attempting in vain to be wise above what is written; to know more, than God hath enabled us. And now,

4thly, From all these things arises, what the Creed mentions, in the last place, his relation to us; *our Lord*. For being the only Son of God, he is heir and Lord of all in his Father's house. Having triumphed over the power of darkness, which held mankind in bondage, we are his by right of conquest: and though *other Lords have had dominion over us*, we are now to make mention of his name only§, as such: having purchased us to himself for a *peculiar people*|| with his own blood, *we are not our own*; for we are bought with a price¶: and he died for all, that they, which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him, which died for them, and rose again**. For to this end, Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living††: that he might be such, not in name only, but in deed and reality also. For not every one, that saith unto him, *Lord, Lord*, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven: but he that doth the will of his Father, which is in heaven‡‡. To all others his words will be at the great day, what they were whilst on earth: *Why call*

* John xvii. 5.

† John i. 1.

‡ Rom. ix. 5.

§ Isa. xxvi. 13.

|| Tit. ii. 14.

¶ 1 Cor. vi. 19, 20.

** 2 Cor. v. 19.

†† Rom. xiv. 9.

‡‡ Matth. vii. 21.

ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?*
 Obedience, constant, universal obedience, is the only manner of acknowledging him, that will finally prove acceptable to him: and in that manner we have solemnly promised that we will acknowledge him, and serve him all our days. Thus then let us ever honour him; thus let us ascribe to him, who is our Prophet, our Priest, and our King, our Saviour, our Lord, and our God, *glory and dominion, for ever and ever. Amen†.*

* Luke vi. 46. † 1 Pet. iv. 11. v. 11. Rev. i. 6.

LECTURE VIII.

CREED.

Article III. *Who was conceived by the Holy Ghost,
born of the Virgin Mary.*

AFTER setting forth, in general, the name and offices of our blessed Redeemer, his relation to the Father and to us; our Creed goes on to recount the several particulars of what he did and suffered, what he continues to do still, and will do finally, for our salvation.

The first of these is, that *the Word was made flesh**: that the eternal Son of God, wonderfully joining to himself a body and soul like ours, united the human nature with the divine into one person: thus becoming liable to the same necessities and wants, infirmities and pains; and endued with the same innocent passions, appetites, and affections that we are: on which account we read in the Gospels of his feeling hunger, and pity, and grief, and anger, nay, and *increasing, as in stature, so in wisdom also*†: not surely in respect of that nature, which *in the beginning was with God, and was God*‡, but of the other, by which he was the *man Christ Jesus*§. Further than these

* John i. 14.

† Luke ii. 52.

‡ John i. 1.

§ 1 Tim. ii. 5.

facts, we are not distinctly acquainted with the extent and properties of this unparalleled union. And it is no wonder, that we are not. For even that of our own souls with our own bodies, hath many things in it, utterly beyond our comprehension. We must therefore, in all reason, without insisting to know, *how these things can be**, confine ourselves to learn from Scripture, what they are. And it hath plainly taught us, that our blessed Lord was *conceived by the Holy Ghost, and born of the Virgin Mary*.

Concerning the Holy Ghost, there will be a proper place to speak more at large, in that article of the Creed, which directly relates to him. At present we are only to consider his influence in the conception of our Saviour: which conception was not in the ordinary course of things; but God himself, being already his Father with respect to that divine nature, which he had from the beginning, became again so, in a new sense, with respect to his human nature too, by the incomprehensible operation of his Spirit. For *the birth of Jesus Christ*, to use the words of Scripture, *was on this wise*. *When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph; before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost†*, in pursuance of what the angel had told her, *Thou shalt conceive and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus*. Then said Mary unto the angel, *How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?* And the angel answered and said unto her: *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing, which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God‡*.

And thus, in the fulness of time, was accomplished, what had been intimated as early as the fall of

* John iii. 9.

† Matth. i. 18.

‡ Luke i. 31, 34, 35.

man, by that remarkable expression, that *the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head** ; and what had been expressly spoken of by the prophet Isaiah, seven hundred years before our Saviour's incarnation, *Behold a virgin shall be with child, and bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel: which, being interpreted, is God with us*†. When the Scripture says, that such a person or thing shall be called by such a name, it frequently means no more than that they shall have a right to be so called: that what that name signifies, shall be verified in them, shall be true in relation to them. There are many instances of this in the Old Testament. And therefore, as our Saviour's coming in the flesh was the most effectual and illustrious manifestation of God's presence with men, and favour towards them, that could be: though perhaps in common speech he was seldom, if ever, called, yet in the language of prophecy, he was very justly called Emmanuel, or, God is with us. For in his person God was really amongst men, in such a manner, and to such purposes of grace and salvation, as he had never been before. And therefore this name agrees perfectly in sense, though it differs in sound, from his common name, Jesus, *i. e.* Saviour.

After saying, that he was *born of a virgin*, the Creed adds, that it was of the Virgin Mary: not that we are to seek for any particular mystery in her being called Mary; as some of the church of Rome have imagined, and accordingly formed groundless and ridiculous derivations of the word. But indeed the name was a very common one among the Jews: by which several women, mentioned in the New Testament, and several in other histories, went: and

* Gen. iii. 15.

† Isa. vii. 14. Matth. i. 23.

no intimation was given in Scripture of its having any especial propriety, or meaning, in relation to her. But the reason of inserting it into the Creed most probably was, because it is set down in Scripture; and that, by naming the particular person, of whom our Saviour sprung, he might appear to be of that family, from which it was foretold he should arise, being born of this *virgin of the house of David**.

Still we are very far from thinking lowly of one whom first an angel from heaven, then *Elizabeth, filled with the Holy Ghost*, declared to be *blessed among women*†: and who, with the greatest reason, said of herself, *He that is mighty hath magnified me, and holy is his name*‡. For greatly without doubt she was magnified, a high honour she received, in becoming, as Elizabeth styles her, *the mother of our Lord*§. But this, however singular, was not the most valuable distinction of the holy Virgin. In Scripture, no advantage of any other kind is ever put on a level with that of a pious heart, and a virtuous life. On the contrary, when on hearing one of our Saviour's discourses, a *certain woman of the company*, in a transport of admiration and affection, had cried out, *Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked*: his answer was; *Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it*||. Now of this truest blessedness the Virgin Mary enjoyed a most eminent share: appearing, in all that is said of her, to have been pious and devout, reasonable and considerate, humble and modest, mild and gracious, in the utmost degree.

But though, on account of these excellencies, as well as her peculiar relation to him, she was the

* Luke i. 27.

† Luke i. 28, 41, 42.

‡ Luke i. 49.

§ Luke i. 43.

|| Luke xi. 27, 28.

object, both of her son's dutiful subjection in his younger years ; and of his tender care, even when he hung upon the cross : yet we find no footsteps of any such regard paid her, either by him or his disciples, as can give the least pretence for ascribing to her those prerogatives and powers, which the church of Rome doth. Our Saviour, in more places than one of the Gospels, treats her in so cold, and seemingly negligent manner, that one cannot well avoid thinking he did it on purpose, to discourage that monstrous notion, of her right, as a mother, to command him, who was her Lord, as well as ours. In the other parts of the New Testament, excepting those which I have already quoted, or to which I have referred, there is only an incidental mention made of her occasionally ; as there is of many other persons : and not the most distant intimation of any especial honour shewn, or directed to be shewn her. Yet doth the Romish church appoint offices of devotion to her, bearing her name ; addresses her as *queen of heaven*, for so they expressly call her ; petition her, almost in the same breath with God and our Saviour, that she would bestow on them pardon and grace here, and everlasting life hereafter : things infinitely beyond the power of any creature whatever. Nay, some of them professedly bind themselves to pray much oftener to her, than they do to their Maker or Redeemer : and appear accordingly to place much more confidence in her. And all this, not only without the least proof, that she hath any authority in human affairs, or even any knowledge of them ; but in open defiance of the Scripture, which directs our prayers to God alone ; and particularly of that passage in St. Paul, where the *voluntary humility* of worshipping even *angels*, though they are known to be *ministering*

spirits, is forbidden, as what may *beguile us of our reward*; and the persons who practise it, condemned, as *not holding the Head*, which is Christ*.

But to return to our subject. The foregoing doctrine of *God manifest in the flesh*, is undoubtedly one very wonderful part of that, which the Apostle calls *the mystery of godliness*†. And yet there is nothing in it, either impossible, or indeed more difficult to the Almighty, than in those productions of his, which we commonly call the course of nature; and wonder at them less, for no other reason, but because we see them constantly; the manner of both being equally inconceivable.

And as the miraculous conception, and birth of Christ, was easy to infinite power; so was it undoubtedly proper and fit, since it was chosen by infinite wisdom. Indeed some footsteps of that wisdom even we may be able to trace in this wonderful dispensation. It appears most becoming the dignity of so extraordinary a person, not to enter into the world in the ordinary manner. As the *first Adam*, possessed of original uprightness, was formed immediately by the hand of God; it was suitable, that the *second Adam*, who came to restore that uprightness, should not be inferior, but indeed superior in that respect. Accordingly we read, that *the first man was of the earth, earthy; the second, the Lord from heaven*‡. It seems requisite also, that he, who was designed both for a spotless example to us, and a spotless sacrifice to God, should be perfectly free from every degree of that impurity, and inward irregularity, which the tainted nature of a fallen earthly father may, for aught we know, according to the established laws of this world, communicate: whereas being pro-

* Col. ii. 18, 19. Heb. i. 14. † 1 Tim. iii. 16. ‡ 1 Cor. xv. 45, 47.

duced in the manner that he was, may have qualified him perfectly for becoming, both a *lamb without blemish**, and a *high-priest*, in every respect and degree, *holy and undefiled, and separate from sinners†*.

But whether these or others, concealed from us for wise, though perhaps unsearchable ends, were the reasons why his incarnation was in this manner; yet, for his being incarnate, there are several weighty reasons very evident; and possibly many more, entirely unseen by us.

By becoming man, he was capable of becoming the most complete and engaging pattern of virtue to man. The example of the invisible God might seem too high, and too remote from our view. The examples of men were all, in one respect or another, faulty, and likely to mislead us. But our blessed Saviour, by joining in his own person perfection with humanity, gives us the most encouraging invitation to endeavour at doing so too, according to our power. *He was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin‡*; to leave us an example, that we might follow his steps§. But in particular, by this means he has set us the brightest example of that excellent virtue, humility, that ever was, or could be; to this intent, that *the same mind might be in us, which was in him; who being in the form of God, took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men||*. Of mutual love also he hath set before us the most amiable pattern, by this amazing proof of his love to mankind. He, who *was rich* in all the glories of God, *became poor for our sakes*; that we, through his poverty, might become rich¶ in heavenly blessings. He, who was exempted from all sufferings, suffered every

* Exod. xii. 5.

† Heb. vii. 26.

‡ Heb. iv. 16.

§ 1 Pet. iii. 21.

|| Phil. ii. 5, 6, 7.

¶ 2 Cor. viii. 9.

thing terrible in life and death for our good. Surely these are powerful motives both to give up, and do, and undergo, whatever we are called to, for our brethren; and to *love one another, as he hath loved us**. His resignation likewise, his meekness, his zeal, his prudence, every one of his virtues (and his whole character was composed of virtues), are most useful lessons, derived from his appearing in our nature, that in a very peculiar manner command our attention, and require our imitation.

But further still; by becoming man he had the means of most familiarly and beneficially instructing men, in every point of faith and practice. *The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, full of grace and truth, and of his fulness we have all received†*. This condescension enabled him to accommodate his manner of teaching to the capacities and dispositions of his disciples, to remove their prejudices, insinuate truth into their minds gradually: and thus gently training them up to the kingdom of heaven, lay such deep foundations of his church, as shall never be moved.

By taking upon him our nature, he was likewise capable of being a sacrifice for our sins: a doctrine, which in its proper place shall be explained to you: therefore, since we are *partakers of flesh and blood*, he also himself took part of the same, that, through death, he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil‡.

And there was another benefit, consequent to his suffering in our nature; viz. his rising again in it; and thus giving us the fullest certainty of our own resurrection to eternal life.

Even while he sits, at the right hand of the Father,

* John xv. 12.

† John i. 14, 16.

‡ Heb. ii. 14.

interceding for his church, and ruling over it, his being man both makes him a proper person to represent men, and offer up their devotions: and affords us the most sensible assurance of his knowing the wants, and being touched with the necessities of the nature in which he shares. *Wherefore in all things it behoved him, says the Apostle, to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining unto God. For, in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted*. Seeing then that we have not a high priest, that cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but one, who was in all points tempted, like as we are: we may come boldly to the throne of grace, in confidence of obtaining mercy, and finding grace to help, in time of need†. And since, lastly, we have a judge appointed us, who hath experienced whereof we are made; we may be in the utmost degree certain, that his judgement will be according to equity: that, on the one hand, all due allowances will be made to us: and, on the other, no undue ones must be expected by us, in that day, when God will judge the world in righteousness by that man, whom he hath ordained‡: and to whom he hath given authority to execute judgement, because he is the Son of man§.*

* Heb. ii. 17, 18.

† Heb. iv. 14, 15, 16.

‡ Acts xvii. 31.

§ John v. 27.

LECTURE IX.

CREED.

Article IV. *Suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead, and buried; he descended into hell.*

IMMEDIATELY after the mention of our Saviour's birth, the Creed goes on to the mention of his sufferings: for indeed his whole state on earth was a suffering state. By condescending to be *made in the likeness of man**, he exposed himself to all the necessities, infirmities, and pains, to which men are naturally subject. Besides this, he underwent the many inconveniencies of a low and unsettled condition. And, which was yet much heavier, though his whole life was spent in *doing good*†, yet was it spent also in bearing troubles and uneasiness from all around him.

The prejudices and misapprehensions of his kindred and disciples were no small trial. But the perverseness and malice of his enemies was a great one beyond example. They were no less persons than the rulers and guides of the Jewish people, with their blind followers: whom the purity and humility of his doctrine, and the very needful severity of his reproofs for

* Phil. ii. 7.

† Acts x. 38.

their pride, superstition, and wickedness, had rendered implacable against him. Every condescension to win them gained only contempt from them: every endeavour to convince and reform them, did but exasperate them: they misrepresented and derided, they reviled and threatened, they assaulted and persecuted him: till at length, the hour being come, which he knew was the proper one to yield himself up to them; they bribed one of his disciples to betray him into their hands; terrified the rest into forsaking him; and, after a most unjust condemnation, followed by a variety of spiteful usage amongst themselves, to obtain the execution of their sentence, they accused him to the Roman power; first as a blasphemer against their law: and failing in this, then as a rebel against the emperor, Tiberius Cæsar, the most suspicious of men: by which last suggestion they forced the governor, though declaring himself to be satisfied of his innocence, yet to comply with them for his own safety. After this he was abused and scourged by the soldiers, crowned in cruel mockery with thorns, and loaded, probably till he sunk under it, with the cross, on which he was to suffer.

This instrument of death consisted, as its name denotes, of two large pieces of wood, crossing each other. On one, the arms of the condemned person were stretched out, and his hands nailed; on the other, his feet, joined together, were fastened in the same manner: and thus he was to hang naked, exposed to heat and cold, till pain and faintness ended his life. The Jews, while they executed their own laws, never crucified any, till they were first put to death some other way; after which, their bodies were sometimes hanged on a tree till the evening.

But it seems, that only the worst of malefactors were thus treated; who are therefore styled in the law of Moses, *accursed**. The Romans indeed, and other nations, crucified men alive: but usually none but their slaves; a sort of persons, most of them, far lower than the lowest of servants amongst us.

This then was what the Son of God underwent, when having *taken upon him the form of a servant, he became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross†*. Now the torment of hanging thus by nails, that pierced through parts of so acute a feeling as the hands and feet, could not but be exquisite; especially as it was almost always of long duration. And therefore this punishment was accounted, in every respect, the severest of any. Our Saviour indeed continued under it only about three hours; a much smaller time, though a dreadful one, than was usual. And there are plain reasons for his expiring so soon. He had suffered the whole night before, and all that day, a course of barbarous treatment, sufficient to wear down the strength of a much rougher and robuster make, than probably his was. Before this, he had felt agonies within, grievous enough to make him *sweat, as it were, great drops of blood‡*. Partly the near view of what he was just going, most undeservedly, to suffer, might thus affect a mind, which, having so very much tenderness and sensibility in the case of others, could not be without some proportionable degree of it in his own. And further, the thought, how sadly, from the time of their creation to that day, men had contradicted the end for which they were created; how large a part of the world would still reject the salvation which he came to offer, and how few receive it effectually; what guilt even

* Deut. xxi. 23.

† Phil. ii. 7, 8.

‡ Luke xxii. 44.

good persons often contract, and how tremendous will be the final doom of bad ones; these reflections, which naturally would all present themselves to him in the strongest light on this great occasion, could not but cause vehement emotions in his breast, zealous as he was for the glory of God and the eternal happiness of men. But chiefly beyond comparison, the awful sense, that he was to *bear* all these innumerable *sins* of mankind *in his own body on the tree**, *being made a curse for us, to redeem us from the curse of the law†*, might well produce feelings inexpressible and inconceivable, which operating much more powerfully than mere bodily tortures, and making *his soul exceeding sorrowful, even unto death‡*, might so exhaust his strength, by heightening his sufferings, as to shorten them very considerably. And accordingly we read, that when he had hung on the cross from the sixth hour to the ninth, he cried with a loud voice, in the words of the twenty-second Psalm, where David speaks, as a type and representative both of his sufferings and his following glory, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* not in the least intending, as David before him did not, to signify a distrust of his love, in whom at the same time he claimed an interest, as his God; but only to express, that those comforts of the divine presence, which he used to feel, were now, for mysterious reasons, withheld from him in that concluding *hour* of temptation, which himself so emphatically called *the power of darkness§*. Then adding words of the firmest trust, *Father, into thy hand I commend my spirit, he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost||*.

Thus did God fulfil what he before had shewed by the

* 1 Pet. ii. 24.

† Gal. iii. 13.

‡ Matth. xxvi. 38.

§ Luke xxii. 53.

|| Luke xxiii. 46. John xix. 30.

*mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer**. It was intimated in the first prediction, made upon the fall; namely, that the *seed of the woman* should be *bruised*†. It was prefigured, both in the sacrifices of the Old Testament, and several remarkable portions of its history. He is mentioned by David, as having his *hands and feet pierced*‡: he is largely described by Isaiah as *a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief; wounded and bruised for our iniquities, and brought as a lamb to the slaughter*§: he is expressly styled by Daniel, *Messiah the prince*, that should be *cut off*||.

These prophecies, the Creed informs us, were fulfilled under Pontius Pilate: for so was the then governor of Judea under the Roman emperor called. And he is named, because the most usual way of signifying at what time any thing was done, anciently was by mentioning the person under whose government it was done: there not being any other method of reckoning universally received, as that of counting by the year of our Lord is now among Christians. And it was very useful to preserve the memory of the date: partly, that in after-ages inquiry might be better made into the histories and records of that age, concerning these extraordinary events, said to have then happened, and chiefly, that the Messiah might appear to have come and died at that exact *fulness of time*¶, when it was foretold he should. One mark of it was, that the *sceptre* was then to be *departed from Judah*** , which evidently was departed when it was reduced to be a Roman province. Another was, that the second temple was to be yet standing: for the

* Acts iii. 18.

† Gen. iii. 15.

‡ Psal. xxii. 17.

§ Isa. liii. 3, 5, 7.

|| Dan. ix. 25, 26.

¶ Gal. iv. 4.

** Gen. xlix. 10.

glory of it was to be greater than the glory of the former*: and this could be true only by the fulfilling of another prophecy, *The Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in*†. Accordingly he did come to it, and it stood but a few years longer. A third mark was, that, from the restoring of Jerusalem, to the Messiah's being cut off‡, were to be such a number of weeks; each plainly consisting, not of seven days, but of seven years: which number was completed, while Pontius Pilate was governor: and therefore it was requisite to observe, that under him our Saviour suffered.

Next to the mention of his death, in the Creed, follows that of his burial: a favour not allowed by the Romans to those who were crucified, unless some considerable person interceded for it. But the Jewish law requiring, that they should be taken down and buried before night§; and the next day being a great festival, when the violation of this law would give more than ordinary offence to the people; Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, who also waited for the kingdom of God, craved the body of Jesus from Pilate; who, after making due inquiry, if he were already, and had been any while dead, gave the body to Joseph; who buried him respectfully in his own new tomb, a sepulchre hewn out of a rock||; the entrance into which the Jews sealed up, and set a guard over¶. And thus were his own predictions fulfilled, that he should be crucified**, the most unlikely of all deaths: and at the same time that of Isaiah, that he should

* Hag. ii. 9.

† Mal. iii. 1.

‡ Dan. ix. 25, 26.

§ Deut. xxi. 22, 23.

|| Matth. xxvii. 57—60. Mark xv. 43—46. Luke xxiii. 50—53.

¶ Matth. xxvii. 62—66.

** Matth. xx. 19. John iii. 14. xii. 32, 33.

not only be buried, but with the most unlikely of all burials in such a case, *making his grave with the rich**.

The last part of this article is, that *he descended into hell*: an assertion founded on Psal. xvi. 10. where David prophesies of Christ, what St. Peter in the Acts of the Apostles explains of him†, that *his soul should not be left in hell*; which imports, that once he was there. And hence, after some time, it was inserted into our Creed, which in the beginning had it not. However, being taught in Scripture, the truth of this doctrine is indubitable: the only question is about the meaning of it.

The first thought of most, or all persons, to be sure, will be, that the word *hell*, in this article, signifies what it doth in common speech, the place where devils and wicked men are punished. And it hath been imagined, that Christ went to triumph over the devil there: and some add, to rescue part of the souls which he held under confinement‡, by *preaching*, as the Scripture saith he did, *to the spirits that were in prison*§. But the place of torment is never determinately expressed in Scripture by the word *hades*, which both the Scripture and the Creed use in this article, but by very different ones; though unhappily our translation hath used the same English word for both, instead of calling the former, what it strictly signifies, the invisible state or region. Besides, we do not read of our Saviour's *triumphing* over the devil any where, but *on the cross*||. And *the spirits in prison*, to whom St. Peter saith Christ by his Spirit

* Isa. liii. 9.

† Acts ii. 24—32.

‡ Origen against Celsus l. 2. § 42. saith that Christ converted souls to himself there, *τας βελομενας, η ας ευρα επιτηδαιστερας*.

§ 1 Pet. iii. 19.

|| Col. ii. 13, 15.

*preached, he saith also were those which were disobedient, when the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah**. And therefore Christ's *preaching to them by his Spirit* probably means, his exciting by *his Spirit*, which *strove with†* them for a time, that patriarch to be a *preacher of righteousness* among them, as the same St. Peter, in his other epistle, calls him‡. But not hearkening to him then, they are now in prison, reserved for the sentence of the last day. This opinion therefore hath no sufficient foundation. Nor would it be found, on further trial, agreeable either to reason or Scripture.

Others have thought the word, translated *hell*, to signify in this article, as it seems to do in some passages of the Old Testament, and as the English word anciently did, merely a place under ground, by which they understand the grave. And they plead for it, that the first Creeds, which mentioned our Saviour's descending into hell, used no other words to express his being buried, and therefore designed to express it by these. But allowing that, still our Creed, expressing the descent into hell after the burial, must mean a different thing by it.

And indeed the most common meaning, not only among heathens, but Jews and the first Christians, of the word *hades*, here translated hell, was in general, that invisible world, one part or another of which, the souls of the deceased, whether good or bad, inhabit. And this, how strange soever it may seem to the unlearned, yet is by others acknowledged§. Probably therefore all that was intended to be taught by the expression now before us, is, that when our Saviour died, as his body was laid in the grave, so his

* 1 Pet. iii. 20.

† Gen. vi. 3.

‡ 2 Pet. ii. 5.

§ See Pearson on this article, p. 239, 240.

spirit went where other separate spirits are. And we should remember, in repeating these words of the Creed, that this is the whole of what we are bound to profess by them. But in what part of space, or of what nature, that receptacle is, in which the souls of men continue from their death till they rise again, we scarce know at all: excepting that we are sure it is divided into two extremely different regions, the dwelling of the righteous, called in St. Luke *Abraham's bosom*, where Lazarus was; and that of the wicked, where *the rich man* was; *between which there is a great gulph fixed**. And we have no proof that our Saviour went on any account into the latter: but since he told the penitent thief, *that he should be that day with him in paradise*†; we are certain he was in the former; where *they, which die in the Lord, rest from their labours, and are blessed*‡; waiting for a still more perfect happiness at the resurrection of the last day.

How the soul of our Saviour was employed in this abode, or for what reasons he continued there during this time, further than that he might *be like unto his brethren in all things*§, we are not told, and need not guess. But probably this article was made part of the Creed, in order to assert and prove, that he had really a human soul, which was really separated from his body. And its residence, during the separation, in the same state and place, where other *spirits of just men made perfect*|| are, surely made a vast addition to

* Luke xvi. 22, 23, 26.

† Luke xxiv. 43. Non ex his verbis in cœlo existimandus est esse paradisos. Neque enim ipso die in cœlo futurus erat homo Christus Jesus; sed in inferno secundum animam, in sepulchro autem secundum carnem. Aug. Ep. 57. ad Dardanum. Pearson, p. 237.

‡ Rev. xiv. 13.

§ Heb. ii. 17.

|| Heb. xii. 23.

their felicity. For Abraham, who *rejoiced to see his day** at a distance, must be inexpressibly more rejoiced to see him present there. All the good persons, whose going thither preceded the death of our Lord, must certainly partake in the joy. And all who came, or shall come, after, must feel much greater consolation for being in a place, where their Redeemer had been seen by such numbers of his saints; and to which, in some peculiar sense, his presence is yet continued: for we learn from St. Paul, that the immediate consequence of a pious man's *departure* hence is *being with Christ*†.

But were the reasons of his *descending into hades*, or of the insertion of it into our belief, ever so obscure; it may suffice us, that the reasons of his sufferings and death are very plain, as well as very important. With these therefore I shall conclude this Lecture.

1. The first is, that he might be an example to his followers. For so he became the noblest and most engaging pattern imaginable of that great and hard duty, patient submission to the will of God: since being of a rank infinitely superior to the afflictions of this world, and having done nothing to deserve the least of them, he most willingly chose, and chearfully bore, the most grievous that were possible. Well then may we, mortals and sinners, take whatever befalls us, in life or in death, meekly and contentedly, *because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that we should follow his steps: who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth; who yet when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him*

* John viii. 56.

† Phil. i. 23. See Peters on Job, § 11. p. 399.

*that judgeth righteously**. The example also of kindness and love to men he shewed yet more fully by his crucifixion, than by his incarnation; foreseeing, as he plainly did, all the pains and torments he should undergo, in executing his great design of reforming and saving mankind; yet deterred by nothing from undertaking it, and persevering in it. *If, therefore, he so loved us, we ought also, as St. John argues, to love one another†: and because he laid down his life for us, we ought, if a proper occasion require it, even to lay down our lives for the brethren‡.*

2. A second reason of his dying was, that he might thus confirm the truth of his doctrine: to which it must needs add a very powerful confirmation, that, though the Jews expected a warlike and victorious Messiah, and therefore his taking upon himself a meek and suffering character must grievously prejudice them against him; yet he declared from the very first, what you read in St. John, that *as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so should the Son of man be lifted up§; signifying, as the same Evangelist elsewhere assures us, what death he should die||.* And he all along persisted in this declaration; rejected every opportunity of worldly power; fearlessly taught the most provoking truths, and voluntarily met what he foretold he should suffer. Stronger evidences of sincerity, than these, a man cannot give: and therefore St. John thus reckons up the testimonies to Christ's mission: *There are three, that bear witness in earth; the Spirit, the water, and the blood¶.* And St. Paul observes, that before Pontius Pilate *he witnessed a good confession***; on account of

* 1 Pet. ii. 23.

† 1 John iv. 11.

‡ 1 John iii. 16.

§ John iii. 14.

|| John xii. 32, 33. xviii. 32.

¶ 1 John v. 8.

** 1 Tim. vi. 13.

which he is called in the book of Revelation, the *faithful witness*, or martyr*.

3. The third and principal reason of our Saviour's death was, *to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself†*, that being justified by his blood, we may be saved from wrath, and reconciled to God‡. But as I cannot now enlarge on this doctrine suitably to its importance; and the article of *the forgiveness of sins* will be a proper place to treat of it; I shall only add at present, that *God hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him§*. For if one died for all, then were all dead: and he died for all, that they which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again ||. This we should do with great dutifulness; for *we are not our own, we are bought with a price¶*: and with great thankfulness, for he hath delivered us from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God**. Unto him therefore, that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father, unto him be glory and dominion, for ever and ever. Amen ††.

* Rev. i. 5.

† Heb. ix. 26.

‡ Rom. v. 9, 10.

§ 2 Cor. v. 21.

|| Ibid. 14, 15.

¶ 1 Cor. vi. 19, 20.

** Rom. viii. 21.

†† Rev. i. 5, 6.

LECTURE X.

CREED.

Article V. The third day he rose again from the dead.

HAVING carried on the history of our Saviour to the lowest act of his humiliation, our Creed sets forth, in the next place, how God was pleased to exalt him for undergoing it. And the first part of this brighter view of things, was his resurrection: that is, the restoring of his body to a condition of performing the several functions of life, as before; and the re-union of his soul to it. In discoursing of which, I shall speak, first, concerning the reality of his rising again; secondly, the circumstances; thirdly, the uses of it.

I. The reality; which depends on two things; that he was really dead, and that he was really alive afterwards.

As for the former: the whole of the history shews it fully, nor did any of his opposers ever call it in question. His crucifixion was public, at noon-day, before a great multitude. The Jews who procured it, the Romans who executed it, would both take care that it was done effectually. And the piercing of his side with a spear, which, by the blood and water

that followed, plainly appeared to reach his heart; as it must have produced some signs of life, had there been any remaining, must also have destroyed, in a few moments, all that could remain. Then, after this, we find him treated as dead, both by friends and enemies: Pilate, after a particular inquiry into that very matter, granted his body to be buried; one of his disciples embalming him with spices, another laying him in his own sepulchre; the Jews making no objection; but fully satisfied of his death, and only careful to guard against any pretence of a resurrection.

But that, notwithstanding, he was afterwards really alive again, which is the other point, we have multiplicity of evidence of the strongest kinds. The sepulchre was newly hewn out of a rock, shut up with a very large stone rolled to the mouth of it, and guarded night and day by a band of soldiers: who were to watch till the time was over, within which he had said he should rise. Yet, on that very day, the sepulchre was found open, and the body was gone. Now by what means could this come to pass? To his disciples it could be of no possible use, to carry on a deceit, by getting his corpse into their possession. For if they had succeeded so ill with their master at their head, what could they expect by carrying on the same scheme after they had lost him, but to come to the same end? And what in all reason had they to do, but get quietly out of the way, at least till the matter was a little forgotten? Indeed we find in fact, that far from being enterprising, they were so disheartened, even when he was first seized, that they all forsook him: and there was little likelihood, that they should have more courage to attempt any thing, just after he was executed. Or if they had, what

manner of chance was there, that when a band of sixty men, used to military discipline, were set to watch the grave, they should either find them all asleep at once, though it was death to be so, and not wake one of them; or be able to convey the body away from them, though they were awake? Evidently they must have failed, and probably have been seized, in the attempt. Or could they have carried their point; yet by the resistance made to them, it must have appeared, how unfairly they had carried it; and all hope of getting a resurrection believed must have been utterly at an end. Since then the body was not found, and could not, by any human means, or indeed for any rational purpose, have been carried away; it must have been raised by the power of God, as the Gospels relate it was.

But to give a full and sensible demonstration of it, *he shewed himself alive to his disciples, after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days* *. Now in this they could no more be mistaken, than you can in seeing and hearing me, and knowing me to be alive at this time. As they had almost despaired of his rising again, they were but too backward to believe it: and indeed they would believe it on no other testimony, than that of their own eyes and ears; and Thomas even not without touching him, and putting his hands on the marks of his wounds; which the rest, as well as he, when they were *terrified, and supposed they had seen a spirit*, and not their Lord, were invited to do. *Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have* †.

They could not, after such trials, be deceived in so

* Acts i. 3.

† Luke xxiv. 37, 39.

plain a matter. And if it be imagined, that they might intend to deceive others; consider: they began their testimony to his resurrection, at the very time, and in the very place, where they affirmed this fact to have happened: their adversaries had all the power of the place in their hands; and all the advantages, that men could wish, for detecting the fraud, if it was one; and they were in the strongest manner interested and concerned to make use of them. Is it possible now, that men so timorous, as the disciples plainly were just before, should, immediately after, venture, without need, to bring the just resentment of both magistrates and people upon themselves, by asserting so strange an event, if it was not true? Yet they did assert it: and far from being disproved in it, thousands at once, notwithstanding the most powerful worldly motives, and the deepest-rooted prejudices, to the contrary, were convinced by them. And thus they went on, through many years, to the end of their days, all of them suffering patiently and joyfully, for the sake of this testimony, every thing that could be terrible in life, and at length death itself: nor is it pretended, that any one of them either retracted at any time what he had said, or behaved in any respect so as to weaken the credit of it. On the contrary, they were uncommonly pious and virtuous, as well as bold and unwearied: and, to complete the strength of their evidence, they not only taught, illiterate as they were, a doctrine more worthy of God, than the wisest of men had known before, professing to have received it from their master's mouth; but they confirmed the whole by vast numbers of miracles, which he enabled them, and they enabled their followers, to perform, both during that age and the next.

This is briefly the proof of our Saviour's resurrection. And if this be sufficient proof, then it is no objection, that more than sufficient was not given: for instance, that he did not appear to the rulers and whole people. They had no way deserved it. He was no way bound to it. Nor doth God, in any case, give men just such evidence, as they please; but such as he knows to be enough for honest minds: and if others will not believe without more, they must take the consequence. Christ appeared to the twelve Apostles often: to five hundred persons at once besides. If this number be thought too small, when was ever the tenth part of it required in any other matter? And if Christ was to appear to all the Jews, why not to all the Gentiles? Why not to all of us at this day? We have no proof, that any one, who desired it, was refused seeing him. Possibly many, certainly St. Paul, were converted by seeing him. Some perhaps nothing would have convinced: others would not have owned their conviction. This would have made strange confusion, and had the whole nation been convinced, their notions of the Messiah's temporal kingdom would probably have thrown them at the same time into a rebellion against the Romans; or however, the suspicions of the Romans would have driven them into one: and then the Gospel would have been thought a mere political artifice, to serve a favourite purpose. Nay, had they continued quiet, and the Romans let them alone; even then we should have lost that evidence for the truth of our religion, which arises from the persecutions undergone by the first teachers of it: from the very advantageous circumstances, that the Jews our adversaries have been the keepers of those prophecies, which prove Christ to be come; and also from their

wonderful dispersion and preservation: besides the proof which will arise, in God's good time, from their conversion to Christianity.

II. Thus much for the reality of Christ's resurrection. The circumstances of it, which was the second head proposed, it is best that you should read in the New Testament where they are told at large. And if the accounts, which the several Evangelists give, should seem not easy to be reconciled in some particulars; you will recollect, that nothing is more common in all historians, than for one to omit what another relates; to tell but part of what another tells more fully; to join close together in writing, what happened at some distance of time in fact; and to neglect a trifling exactness in points, that are not material. And the Spirit of God, which directed the Gospel historians, might with great wisdom permit them to do thus: it being a strong proof to every considerate mind, that they did not contrive together what story they should tell; but that each related fairly and artlessly, what he saw and heard at the time, and recollected afterwards, concerning this great fact: of which the more absolutely certain they were in general, the less they would think of being accurate in every little part; and of drawing up a methodical, and minute, and scrupulously strict narration of the whole that had passed.

But there is one circumstance, which requires to be considered more distinctly: that of the time. The almost constant expression of Scripture concerning this is the same with that of the Creed, that *he rose again the third day*: reckoning the day of his death for the first; the day which he continued dead for the second; the day of his resurrection, for the third. And this is the common way of computing every where.

Thus the Jews computed the eighth day, on which their children were to be circumcised. Thus also the physicians call that a tertian, or third day ague, in which there is but one day wholly free from it. And thus men reckon in all cases. Sometimes the expression in Scripture is, that *he should rise after three days*: meaning, not after the third day was ended, but after it was begun. Just as when Rehoboam had said unto the people, *Come again unto me after three days*; it follows, *So all the people came to Rehoboam on the third day, as the king bade, saying, Come again to me on the third day**. And in one single place of the New Testament, it is said, *the Son of man should be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights†*. But this without doubt was intended to be understood conformably to the rest: as it well may. For a day and night in the Jewish language is no more, than what we commonly call a day in ours. Hence we find in the book of Esther, that when she had appointed the Jews to fast for her good success, *neither eating nor drinking three days, night nor day*, that is, to fast three days and three nights; and, after that, *she would go in to the king to petition for them*; the very next words, notwithstanding, are, that *on the third day she put on her royal apparel*, and went into the king's presence‡. Again, when we read that Elijah went forty days and forty nights to Horeb the mount of God, 1 Kings xix. 8. we have no cause to think the meaning is, that he travelled incessantly night and day; for so his journey must have been much sooner ended: but that he employed in it such a part of every day, during all that time, as he was

* 2 Chron. x. 5, 12. See Whitby on Mark viii. 31.

† Matth. xii. 40.

‡ Esth. iv. 16. v. i. See Whitby on Matth. xii. 40.

conveniently able. This way of speaking may seem strange to us: but the Jews understand it so well, that not a man of them, excepting a very weak one of late date*, hath ever pretended to raise an objection from this passage, though very slight pretences will serve their turn†. Thus then our Saviour, dying on Friday, and rising on Sunday, was dead three days, and yet rose the third: which was a sufficient space of time to prove him really dead: but not sufficient, either for him to see corruption, or for his enemies to leave off watching his grave, or for his disciples to despair absolutely and totally: and therefore no fitter time could have been fixed.

III. The third point to be considered is; the uses of the resurrection of Christ: which are great and many.

In general, it appears plainly from hence, that he really came from God; and that therefore whatever he hath commanded must be done; and whatever he hath affirmed, promised, or threatened, will be found true. For there can possibly be no stronger proof of his divine mission, than, when he had been openly put to death as a deceiver, for God to reverse the sentence in so extraordinary a manner, as restoring him to life again. This was the great evidence, to which he had before his death appealed. No one either did, or could, object against it, as not being a decisive one. And therefore on its coming to pass, as he had foretold it would, he is justly said by the Apostle to be *declared the Son of God with power, by the resurrection from the dead*‡. But there are two things proved by it more particularly.

* Nizzachon vet. in Wagenseil, p. 236, who objects, that at most it could be but three days and two nights.

† Concerning this whole matter, see Reland, Ant. 4. 1. 21.

‡ Rom. i. 4.

1. That his sufferings are accepted by our heavenly Father, a full atonement for the sins of men: For since God hath loosed the bands of the grave with which he was holden on our account; it is manifest, that he hath completed the satisfaction owing from us: that he hath *through death destroyed him that had the power of death, that is the devil; and delivered those, who, through fear of it, were all their life-time subject to bondage**. If then we do by faith and repentance, qualify ourselves to receive the pardon, that he is authorized to give; we may boldly say with the Apostle, *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth: who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died; yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who maketh intercession for us†*.

2. From our Saviour's resurrection appears the certainty of our own. The promise which he made, was, that *every one who believeth on him should have everlasting life, and he would raise him up at the last day‡*: and to shew the truth of it, he raised up himself from the death, which he had suffered for the sins of men. This is a proof, clear and strong beyond all exception or cavil. Since Christ is risen, our resurrection is possible: and since Christ hath promised, it is certain. *If then we believe that Jesus died, and rose again, we must believe too, as St. Paul justly argues, that them also, which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; and they which are alive and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the*

* Heb. ii. 14, 15.

† Rom. viii. 33, 34.

‡ John vi. 40.

clouds, and so shall we be ever with the Lord*. Blessed therefore be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again to a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead; to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for us†. And may the God of peace, that brought again from the dead that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make us perfect in every good work, to do his will; working in us that which is well pleasing to his sight, through Jesus Christ: to whom be glory, for ever and ever. Amen‡.

* 1 Thess. iv. 14, 16, 17. † 1 Pet. i. 3, 4. ‡ Heb. xiii. 20, 21.

LECTURE XI.

C R E E D.

Article VI. *He ascended into heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of God, the Father Almighty.*

THE first care of our blessed Lord, in consequence of his resurrection, was to satisfy his disciples fully of the truth of it: the next to fit them for instructing mankind in his religion, of which it was one principal doctrine and evidence. He *therefore shewed himself alive to them, after his passion, by many infallible proofs; being seen of them forty days; and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God**. This being done, as he had now gone through the whole of his work on earth; it was proper, that he should return to that happy place, from whence his compassion to a lost world had brought him down: according to the words of his own prayer: *Father, the hour is come; I have glorified thee on earth; I have finished the work, which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with the glory, which I had with thee, before the world was†*: there did not remain any further reason for his appearing personally amongst men; till he should come again, to judge the quick and the dead. Many ages were to pass before

* Acts i. 3.

† John xvii. 4, 5.

*that great and terrible day of the Lord**. It was fit therefore that, as St. Peter speaks, the *heaven* should receive him, *until the times of the restitution of all things†*.

And though the redemption of mankind was completed by him so far, as, in this lower world, it could be; yet there was left an important part of it, to be accomplished above. The Jewish dispensation, as the Epistle to the Hebrews more especially informs us, was *a shadow of good things to come‡*. As therefore, under this, the great sacrifice of atonement was yearly slain without the sanctuary first: and then the high priest entered alone, with the blood of it, into the most holy place; there to offer it before the Lord, and atone for the sins of the people: so, in the Gospel age, was our blessed Saviour, first, as *the lamb of God§*, to be sacrificed for our sins on earth; and then, as the *high-priest of our profession||*, to enter, with his own blood, into heaven, the true holy place, of which the other was a figure; there to appear with it, in the presence of God, for us¶: and thus, having offered one sacrifice for sins, he was for ever to sit down on the right hand of God**.

When the time therefore was come, for this purpose of divine wisdom to take effect; having gradually prepared the minds of his Apostles to bear his departure, he, in the last place, with his usual tenderness, gave them a solemn blessing: the words of which indeed are not delivered down to us; but probably they might not be unlike, and certainly they could not well be more affectionate, than those, which we find he used for their consolation, even before his sufferings, on a more distant prospect of his being taken

* Joel ii. 31.

† Acts iii. 21.

‡ Heb. x. i.

§ John i. 29.

|| Heb. iii. i.

¶ Heb. ix. 12, 24.

** Heb. x. 12.

from them. *Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God; believe also in me. I go to prepare a place for you; and I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. Whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another comforter, that he may abide with you for ever. Peace I leave with you: my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid*. It is expedient for you, that I go away. For if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer: I have overcome the world†.*

Undoubtedly with such like words of grace and affection, which every good Christian may and ought to consider as spoken to himself, did our Lord, before his departure, comfort his disciples under the immediate view of that interesting event. *And it came to pass, the Evangelist informs us, that as he was yet blessing them, while they beheld, he was taken up: and a cloud received him out of their sight‡.*

It is hardly possible to conceive stronger or more various emotions of mind, than those, with which the breast of every one of his followers must be filled, on this occasion: of surprise and astonishment at what they had seen; of gratitude and tenderness, in return for what they had heard; of grief and fear concerning their new solitary condition: yet mixed, at the same time, with submission and hope, and faithful

* John xiv. 1, 2, 3, 13, 16, 27.

† John xvi. 7, 22, 33.

‡ Luke xxiv. 51. Acts i. 9.

trust in their dear Lord. But as he himself had told them, *If they loved him, they would rejoice, because he went unto the Father**; so, in fact, amidst all the passions working within them, this prevailed above the rest; and triumphant gladness of heart was the feeling, that took possession, and dwelt with them. *They worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy: and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God†.*

Let us then rejoice also in this glorious exaltation of Christ our head. Let us consider the opportunity it gives us of exercising that *faith* in him, which the Apostle justly calls *the evidence of things not seen‡*: and of obtaining a reward, suitable to the greater virtue and piety that we shew, in conducting aright our understandings, our hearts, and our lives, under a lower, and yet sufficient, degree of evidence for our holy religion. *Because thou hast seen me*, saith he himself to St. Thomas, *thou hast believed: blessed are they, that have not seen, and yet have believed§*. This blessedness therefore, by his ascension, he hath left to his whole church the means of acquiring: *that the trial of your faith, as St. Peter expresses it, may be found unto praise, and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Jesus Christ: whom not having seen, ye love; and in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory; receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls||*. Let us consider too, that if his absence tries our faith, the manner of his going away powerfully confirms it. For the Apostles were eye-witnesses of his ascending into the clouds: and what stronger proof need we, of his coming from God, than his being thus taken up

* John xiv. 28.

† Luke xxiv. 52.

‡ Heb. xi. 1.

§ John xx. 29.

|| 1 Pet. i. 7, 8, 9.

to him again ; according to his own repeated predictions ; besides the remarkable, though obscurer, intimations of the same things in the Old Testament ?

Nor let it seem strange, that the Scripture should speak of one especial place, as the peculiar and appropriated residence of God. We acknowledge that he is, and cannot but be, every where. *Heaven and earth are full of the majesty of his glory** ; yea, the heaven, and heaven of heavens, cannot contain him†. *Whither shall I go from thy spirit ? or whither shall I flee from thy presence ? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there : if I go down to hell, thou art there also. If I take the wings of the morning, and remain in the uttermost parts of the sea ; even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me ‡.* Yet, notwithstanding this, the Scripture constantly mentions him, as having condescended to establish his throne in one particular place ; and exhibit himself there, in the symbol of light inaccessible : where therefore his holy angels attend upon him, and see his face ; from whence he issues forth his commands, as princes do theirs from the royal palace ; and is represented, as viewing and observing the actions of his creatures ; and pouring down blessings or vengeance, as their behaviour requires. *The Lord is in his holy temple, the Lord's seat is in heaven : his eyes behold, his eye-lids try, the children of men §.* Here it is, that *thousand thousands minister unto him ; and ten thousand times ten thousand stand before him ||*, celebrating his praises, and rejoicing in the light of his countenance. For *in his presence is fulness of joy, and at his right hand there are pleasures for evermore ¶.*

* Te Deum.

† 1 Kings viii. 27.

‡ Psal cxxxix. 7—10.

§ Psal. xi. 4.

|| Dan. vii. 10.

¶ Psal. xvii. 12.

In this blessed place then did our Saviour ascend: and there, as the Creed, in conformity with Scripture, teaches, *sat down at the right hand of the Father*. Not that God, who is an infinite spirit, and by the word of his power doth whatever he pleases, both in heaven and earth; either hath, or needs, bodily members, for instruments of perception or action, like our imperfect nature. But these things are figuratively ascribed to him, in condescension to human capacities. And the meaning of such figures is easily understood. He is the king of the whole world. Now into a king's immediate presence not all persons are usually admitted, and of those who are, not all possess the same rank and degree of nearness to him: but every one such as he pleases to appoint. Now the highest mark of dignity, which the eastern monarchs conferred on the person, whom they esteemed and favoured most, was placing him, on occasions of solemnity, at their right hand: the second in honour was next to the royal person, on the other side; and the rest of the court succeeded in the same order. Thus, when the mother of king Solomon came to petition for Adonijah, the Scripture informs us, *he sat down on the throne, and caused a seat to be set for her, and she sat on his right hand**. And when the sons of Zebedee had, by mistake, imagined the kingdom of our Saviour to be like one of this world, their petition was, *that they might sit, one on his right hand, the other on his left, in his kingdom*†. Sometimes the posture of standing is mentioned: as Psalm xlv. 9. *on thy right hand did stand the queen in gold of Ophir*. And, when the court of heaven, attending on their sovereign, is described; *I saw, saith the prophet, the Lord sitting on his throne: and all the host of heaven*

* 1 Kings ii. 19.

† Matth. xx. 21.

standing by him, on his right hand and on his left.* When therefore our blessed Lord is represented by St. Stephen to stand, or in the cxth Psalm, and frequently in the New Testament, to sit at the right hand of God: we are to conceive by it, not that he is confined to this or that posture or place; but that he is raised, in respect of his human nature, to a rank and station above all creatures: possess of the fullest happiness, the highest honour, and the most sovereign authority: that authority, with which Daniel foretels his being invested: *I saw, and behold, one, like the Son of man, came with the clouds of heaven: and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him; and there was given him dominion and glory and a kingdom; that all people, nations, and languages should serve him; his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away; and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed†.* The fulfilling of which prophecy is thus recorded by the Apostle: *God raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality and power, and might and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come ‡, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth§: and he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet ||.* Sitting at God's right hand implies this pre-eminence: for to which of the angels said God at any time, *Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool ¶?*

Indeed all power, both in heaven and in earth, was given to** our Saviour before his ascension; but not

* 1 Kings xxii. 19.

† Dan. vii. 13, 14.

‡ Eph. i. 20, 21.

§ Phil. ii. 10.

|| 1 Cor. xv. 25.

¶ Heb. i. 13.

** Matth. xxviii. 18.

till afterwards was his title to it publicly recognized, and possession of it solemnly taken by him: which, in other words, is *sitting down at the right hand of God*.

But let us consider, not only the nature of our Saviour's exaltation: but what principally concerns us, the benefits of it to mankind, which are three: his sending the Holy Spirit to abide for ever with his church: his interceding for it with the Father: his powerful protection of it against its enemies.

1. His sending the Holy Spirit. This was reserved with great wisdom, till after his ascension; both because it was then most needed, to comfort his disciples under the loss of his personal presence: and also, because it afforded a new evidence of his divine power, that, far from being in a worse condition by his departure, they were endued with higher degrees of miraculous gifts, than ever they had been before. St. John therefore, upon our Saviour's promising the Spirit to them who should believe on him, observes, that *the Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified* *. And St. Peter, on the day when it was bestowed, saith, *Therefore, being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear* †. The miraculous gifts of the Holy Ghost, indeed, being no longer necessary, ceased many ages ago: but his sanctifying graces, a much more important blessing, which we shall always need, continue still; and constitute his present share in the work of our redemption: agreeably to the assurance, which our blessed Lord gave, of *another comforter to abide with us, and dwell in us for ever* ‡.

* John vii. 32.

† Acts ii. 33;

‡ John xiv. 16, 17.

2. His intercession with the Father. For this oblation of himself being accepted, as the foundation of a new covenant of mercy and favour; we have now an advocate in heaven, sure to prevail; *an high priest, that can be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, having been tempted in all points as we are**, ever appearing for us in the presence of God: and efficaciously pleading the pardon, which he hath purchased, for all who repent of and forsake their sins. *Who then is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died; yea rather, that is risen again; who is even at the right hand of God; who also maketh intercession for us †.*

3. His protection of his church against all its enemies, spiritual and temporal. The attempts of the former he defeats by the above-mentioned methods, the influences of his Spirit to preserve us from sin, and the efficacy of his intercession to procure us pardon on most equitable terms, whenever we fall into it. As for the latter: upon the first opposers of his church, the Jewish and Roman persecutors, his vindictive power had been most remarkably exercised: and the succeeding adversaries of religion, in every age, have served, and shall serve, only for a trial of *the faith and patience of the saints ‡*: generally, without prevailing to their harm even here; and always being subservient to their happiness hereafter: till at length the appointed time shall come, when *the kingdoms of this world shall become the kingdoms of the Lord and of his Christ §*: and having reigned on this earth, till its period arrives, he shall resign up to God his kingdom of grace, its end being accomplished; and reign over his saints in

* Heb. iv. 15.

† Rom. viii. 34.

‡ Rev. xiii. 10.

§ Rev. xi. 15.

that of glory, for ever and ever; fully performing that invariable promise, *To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne; even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne**.

These things being so, instead of amusing ourselves with the speculative consideration of his ascension, and the reasons of it; we should learn from his departure to prepare for his return. To this was the attention of those, who saw it, directed by the angels. *Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven†.* The present article of our Creed is, that he *sitteth at the right hand of God*. The next is, that, *from thence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead*. And what should this very close connexion teach us, but that we all be careful to behave in such manner, that we may be ready to *meet our Lord ‡* at his coming, and *enter with him into his joy §*? He hath descended upon earth to procure us a right to future happiness; and instruct us, how to obtain it: he is now ascended up into heaven, *to prepare a place for us ||*: there seated in glory, he invites us to him. What then remains, but that we fix *our hearts where our treasure is ¶*: and *set our affections on those things that are above, where Christ sitteth at the right hand of God***? But in vain do we rejoice in a glorified Saviour, unless we become *his friends, by doing what he commands us ††*: in vain do we lift up our eyes and our wishes to his happy abode; unless, by resembling him now in purity and holiness, we qualify ourselves to partake hereafter the resemblance

* Rev. iii. 21.

† Acts i. 11.

‡ 1 Thess. iv. 17.

§ Mat. xxv. 21.

|| John xiv. 2.

¶ Mat. vi. 21.

** Col. iii. 1.

†† John xv. 14.

of his glory. *Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord? or who shall stand in his holy place? Even he that leadeth an uncorrupt life, and doth the thing that is right, and speaketh the truth from his heart. He that hath used no deceit in his tongue, nor done evil to his neighbour, and hath not slandered his neighbour. He that setteth not by himself; but is lowly in his own eyes. In whose eyes a vile person is contemned: but he honoureth them that fear the Lord. He that hath clean hands and a pure heart, and doth not lift up his soul unto vanity. He shall receive the blessing from the Lord, and righteousness from the God of his salvation*.*

* Psal. xv. and xxiv.

LECTURE XII.

C R E E D.

Article VII. *From thence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead.*

THIS is the great and awful doctrine, which makes all the preceding ones so important to us: that *God hath appointed a day, in which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained**: a truth, the belief of which it infinitely concerns every one of us to settle well in our souls, and be duly affected by it.

The reason of our minds, and even the feelings of our hearts, give us very strong grounds to be persuaded of a future judgement, had we no further evidence. We are all of us, by nature, capable of perceiving what is just and right for us to do, and what is otherwise: we are all capable of acting according to this perception: we all see, it is fit we should; and fit we should suffer for it, if we do not. When we behave according to our duty, there springs up a delightful peace and security within our breasts: when we knowingly transgress it, we not only disapprove and accuse ourselves, whether we will or not,

* Acts xvii. 31.

but experience a foreboding expectation of just recompence. *For wickedness condemned by her own witness is very timorous: and, being pressed with conscience, always forecasteth grievous things**. Nor do these horrors relate only, or chiefly, to what we have deserved to suffer in this world; but when our share in it draws to an end, and death approaches, then our fears grow stronger than ever, concerning somewhat, which is yet to come †. And thus are all men *a law unto themselves; and shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness ‡*.

That some persons are able to overwhelm these apprehensions under business and pursuits, to drown them in debauchery and intemperance, to divert them by pleasures and amusements, to set up little cavils against them, and even affect to ridicule them; is no objection in the least to their being just and well-grounded. The feeling is plainly natural: every one of these methods to get rid of it, is plainly a force upon nature. Often it returns with double terror, for having been unjustly driven away; and seldom, or never, can the most thoughtless, or most hardened person, lose intirely those fears, which are seated in the very bottom of our souls; and which if we could lose, we should only be the more surely miserable; for still the foundation of them would remain unshaken.

Still it would be true, that there is a God, who made us, and is at all times intimately present with us: who therefore with unspeakably more ease perceives all that passes in our very hearts, than we do one ano-

* Wisd. xvii. 11. † Επειδαν τις εγγυς η τ8 οισεθαι τελευτησειν, εισερχεται αυτο φοβος και φροντις περι ων εν τω προσθεν ηκ ειπυει.
Plat. de Rep. l. i. ‡ Rom. ii. 15.

ther's outward actions: who being perfect in knowledge, distinguishes, in every case, what is good from what is evil; and being perfect in holiness, approves the one, and abhors the other. Even we are thus affected in some degree; and his infinite purity must therefore be infinitely more so. Now what he hates, he can punish as he pleases; and reward what he loves: for all power is in his hands: all nature depends on the word of his mouth; and he is *the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever**.

Think then: will the righteous and holy king of the whole earth, when he hath planted his laws in our hearts, when he hath made us for the very purpose of obeying them, when he hath filled us with so deep a sense of what will follow if we disobey them; suffer us after this to despise and dishonour him, to injure his creatures, abuse ourselves, and disappoint the great design of forming us; and yet take no notice? Doth he govern the world, to the very least parts of it, with so much wisdom and care, in every other respect: and will he be so unwise and negligent, as to overlook the one thing, that deserves his attention above all; and make no distinction *between him that serveth God, and him that serveth him not*†? It cannot be; and the conscience of every one of you, at this moment, tells you it cannot.

If then such a distinction will be made, when and where will it be made? Here, in this world, it plainly is not done, to a degree that the Almighty governor of it can possibly think sufficient. Perpetually we see *just men, to whom it happeneth according to the work of the wicked; and wicked men, to whom it happeneth according to the work of the righteous*‡. Amidst all this disorder, there are indeed evident marks of a

* Heb. xiii. 8.

† Mal. iii. 18.

‡ Eccl. viii. 14.

providence: but of a providence, that gives only specimens and earnest of its justice at present; reserving the full vindication and display of itself for that future state, in which our souls, being naturally immortal, are evidently destined to exist; and where all men shall receive according to their works. This is the great end that God had in his view, when he created us; and it is the principal point, that we should have in our own view, through the whole of our lives.

More or less all mankind, even in their darkest ignorance, have always had some persuasion of a future recompence; which, however mixed with errors, yet, being thus universal and lasting, must have been grounded in nature and truth. And the wiser and better any persons were, amongst the heathens, the stronger and more rational belief they had of this doctrine: which yet was not owing merely to their wishes and their hopes: for the worst of sinners, that were the farthest from desiring a just reward hereafter, feared it, whether they would or not. Thus we find it recorded of a very wicked heathen, that when Paul *reasoned of righteousness, and temperance, and judgement to come, Felix trembled**.

But still, while the evidence of this great article consisted wholly in mere human reasonings, about a matter that was out of sight; bad persons, though they could not help at some times believing enough to fright them, yet made a shift at others to disbelieve enough, to make them tolerably easy in doing wrong; and good persons, though they might have hope sufficient to influence them in common cases; yet often had not sufficient to support them under harder duties, and heavier afflictions, than ordinary. Even the obscurer confirmations of this doctrine in

* Acts xxiv. 25.

the Old Testament therefore were a great benefit to those, who partook of them: and as they had no right to any such assurances of it, they had no cause to complain, that they were not clearer. But we have infinite cause to be thankful, who are favoured in the Gospel with the fullest and strongest attestation to this most interesting of all our concerns. Christians, unless they renounce their Christianity, cannot disbelieve a future judgement. The only difficulty is, to be influenced by our belief, as we ought. And in that also the Scripture hath given us the best help, which is possible to be given; by its affecting accounts of the several particulars that relate to this awful transaction: the persons on whom, the person by whom, the time when, the things for which, and the manner in which, the final sentence of happiness or misery is to be pronounced. These points therefore I shall now endeavour to place before you distinctly. And,

1. The persons on whom, are, the *quick*, that is, the living, *and the dead*. All that have died before, in every age of the world, shall be restored to life: and all that remain alive, shall be joined with them to receive their doom; nor shall any exception be made. For we are expressly assured, that the *dead, small and great, shall stand before God**. The very highest therefore shall not escape by their power, the richest by their wealth, the wisest by their abilities or artfulness: nor, on the other hand, shall the meanest wretch be looked on, as too inconsiderable for God's notice; or the most ignorant be exempted from answering for the care, which he hath taken, to get the knowledge, that he might, and to use the knowledge, that he had, of his duty. Whatever our

* Rev. xx. 12.

station be, we are bound alike to behave in it, as well as we can: and how far we have done so, and how far we have failed of it, is the one inquiry that our Judge will make. Other distinctions, how considerable soever they appear in our eyes, to him are as nothing. All creatures are equally beneath his infinite majesty; but none are either beneath or above his inspection now, or his sentence hereafter. Here then we are put, every one of us, on a fair trial, without any disadvantage or inequality whatever. Both the most honourable, and the most contemptible persons, as to worldly circumstances, may be either the happiest or the most miserable in the next life, just as they shall chuse. Let those of high degree therefore be humble, those of low be content, and all be watchful over themselves.

2. The person, by whom the sentence shall be passed, is Jesus Christ. *For the Father himself judgeth no man; but hath committed all judgement to the Son, and given him authority to execute it, because he is the Son of man**: because he is the person, described by that name in the prophet Daniel, before whom the *judgement was to be set, and the books opened* †: who also is no less peculiarly qualified, than expressly appointed for it; since in him divine perfection is joined with experience of human infirmity. So that being judged by one, who *was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin* ‡; we may be sure, that every due allowance will be made to our natural weakness, and no undue one to our wilful wickedness. Unless therefore we repent and amend, he, that came the first time to save us, will come the second to condemn us; and the meek and merciful Jesus appear cloathed with such terror, that we shall

* John v. 22, 27.

† Dan. vii. 10, 13.

‡ Heb. iv. 15.

say to the mountains, and to the rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: for the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?*

3. The time when these things shall be, himself informs us, *it is not for us to know*; being known to the Father alone, and *put in his own power†*. But still what there is need we should be told concerning it, the Scripture hath revealed: that it should come unexpectedly, and that it shall come soon. The general judgement may come, when we least think of it. But however distant it may possibly be in itself, yet to every one of us it is undoubtedly in effect very near, and even at the door. For *it is appointed unto men once to die, and after this the judgement‡*. A few years, it may be a few days, will bring us to our end here: and in whatever state death finds us, in the same will the last judgement find us also. *For there is no device, nor wisdom in the grave §: but where the tree falleth, there shall it be||*. Take heed therefore to yourselves, lest your hearts be overcharged, either with the pleasures and amusements, or the cares and labours of this life; and so that day come upon you unawares: for as a snare shall it come on all them, that dwell on the whole earth¶. The evil servant that shall say in his heart, *My Lord delayeth his coming*; and shall begin to smite his fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken: the Lord of that servant shall come in a day, that he looketh not for him; and in an hour, that he is not aware of; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth**. Watch ye, therefore, and be

* Rev. vi. 16, 17.

† Acts i. 7.

‡ Heb. ix. 27.

§ Eccl. ix. 10.

|| Eccl. xi. 3.

¶ Luke xxi. 34, 35.

** Matth. xxiv. 48—51.

ready: blessed is that servant, whom his Lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing.*

4. The things, for which we shall be judged, are all our voluntary deeds, words, and thoughts. *For we must all appear before the judgement-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body†.* Now what we say, and what we think designedly, is as truly part of our doings, as what we act. Our discourse may be of as much service or harm to others: and even our inward imaginations may as much prove us to be good or bad in ourselves, and contribute to make us yet better or worse. Often indeed we cannot help wicked fancies coming into our minds; and that alone will never be imputed to us as a sin. But we can help inviting, indulging, and delighting in them: and if we do not, it is just, that we should account for our fault. And on the other hand, it is fit and reasonable, that every good person should be rewarded, not only for the religious and worthy actions that he hath performed; but for every good word, that hath proceeded from his good heart; for his pious and virtuous purposes and affections. For God sees the one, just as clearly as the other; *there is no creature, that is not manifest in his sight; but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him, with whom we have to do†.* And certainly what he sees, and sees to be proper for his notice, he will not fail to take suitable notice of it. The Scripture therefore assures us, with the utmost reason; not only, that *by our words we shall be justified, and by our words condemned;* giving account for the very idlest and slightest of them, either with grief or joy, according

* Matt. xxiv. 42, 44, 46.

† 2 Cor. v. 10.

‡ Heb. iv. 13.

as its tendency was right or wrong*: but also, that God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ†: that there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid that shall not be known‡. For God shall bring every work into judgement, and every secret thing; whether it be good, or whether it be evil§.

Therefore, with respect to other persons, let us be charitable, and judge nothing needlessly before the time; until the Lord come, who will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and make manifest the counsels of all hearts||. And with respect to ourselves, let us be easy under human censures, if we have given no occasion for them; for in that case, it is a small thing to be judged of man's judgement§: but let us carefully prepare for the divine sentence, by perfecting holiness in the fear of God¶: and after all our care, let us be thoroughly humble: for though we know nothing by ourselves, yet are we not hereby justified, if it be through partiality or forgetfulness, as possibly it may; but he that judgeth us, is the Lord**.

5. As to the manner of the judgement, it will be with the greatest solemnity and awfulness, and with the greatest justice and equity. The Lord himself shall descend from heaven††, with his mighty angels, in flaming fire‡‡; and the trumpet shall sound||, and all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and come forth§§. Then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory¶¶, and the books shall be opened, and they shall be judged out of those things, which are written in the books, according to their

* Matt. xii. 36, 37. † Rom. ii. 16. ‡ Matt. x. 26. § Eccl. xii. 14.

|| 1 Cor. iv. 5.

§ Ibid. 3.

¶ 2 Cor. vii. 1.

** 1 Cor. iv. 4.

†† 1 Thess. iv. 16.

‡‡ 2 Thess. i. 7, 8.

||| 1 Cor. xv. 52.

§§ John v. 28, 29.

¶¶ Matt. xxv. 31.

works. As many as have sinned without a revealed law, shall perish without a revealed law: and as many as have sinned in the law, whether Jewish or Christian, shall be judged by the law†. Unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom much is committed, of him will the more be asked‡. He which hath sowed sparingly, shall reap also sparingly: and he which hath sowed bountifully shall reap also bountifully§. Whatsoever a man hath sowed, that shall he also reap||.*

What manner of persons ought we to be then in all holy conversation and godliness: looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God; wherein the heavens, being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. Wherefore, beloved, seeing that we look for such things, be diligent, that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless: grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: to him be glory, both now and for ever. Amen¶.

* Rev. xx. 12.

† Rom. ii. 12.

‡ Luke xii. 48.

§ 2 Cor. ix. 6.

|| Gal. vi. 7.

¶ 2 Pet. iii. 11—14, 18.

LECTURE XIII.

CREED.

Article VIII. *I believe in the Holy Ghost.*

THE former articles having expressed the belief of Christians concerning the two first persons of the sacred Trinity, the Father and the Son; our creed proceeds in this to the third object of our baptismal faith, the Holy Ghost. And to explain it properly there will be need to speak, first, of his nature: secondly, of his peculiar office in the work of our redemption: thirdly, of the duties owing to him: fourthly, of the sins, which we are liable to commit against him.

I. Of the nature of the Holy Ghost, or Spirit. For *Ghost*, in the ancient use of our language, denoted the same thing, which Spirit doth now: a substance different from body or matter. Indeed we still use it, in expressing the departure of the spirit from the body, which we call, *giving up the ghost*: and in speaking of supposed apparitions of the spirits of persons after their decease. Hence also the catechism mentions *ghostly dangers*; and the communion service, *ghostly counsels*; meaning such dangers, and such counsels, as relate to our spiritual part.

In like manner, the Holy Ghost is the Holy Spirit:

concerning whose nature, we can know, as I told you before concerning that of the Son, only what results from the discoveries made to us in Scripture. And these, though they enlighten us but in part, are both credible and sufficient. For it is no objection against believing what God hath revealed in relation to any subjects, that many questions may be asked about what he hath not revealed, to which we can give no answer. And he will never expect us, in this or any matter, to apprehend more, than he hath afforded us the means of apprehending. Now the chief things, revealed in the present case, are the following.

The Holy Ghost is not merely an attribute or power of the Father, but hath a real subsistence, distinct both from the Father and the Son. For the New Testament expressly and repeatedly uses the word *he*, concerning him*: which is never used in that manner of a mere attribute or power. It ascribes to him will and understanding†: it speaks of him as being sent by the Father, coming and acting on various occasions, relative both to the Son and to others; nay, as shewing *himself in a bodily shape, like a dove*‡.

Further: the Holy Ghost is, truly and strictly speaking, God. For the language of Scripture concerning him is such, as cannot belong to any created being. He is there called, *the eternal Spirit*§, *the Lord*§: said to *quicken or give life*¶; to be every where present with all good Christians**; to *search all things, yea, the deep things of God, even as the things of a man are known by his own spirit, which is in*

* John xiv. 26. xv. 26. xvi. 13.

† Rom. viii. 27. Heb. ii. 4. Comp. 1 Cor. xii. 11.

‡ Luke iii. 22.

§ Heb. ix. 14.

¶ 2 Cor. iii. 17.

¶ 1 Pet. iii. 18.

** John xiv. 16, 17.

him*. Christ being conceived by him, became *the Son of God*†. Christians, by his dwelling in them, become *the temples of the Holy Ghost*‡, or, as another place expresses it, *the temples of God*§. Ananias, by lying to him, *lyed not unto men, but unto God*||. He is said to distribute spiritual and miraculous gifts, *dividing to every man severally, as he will*¶. And as the disciples ministered to the Lord and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, *Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them***.

He is represented by our Saviour, as able fully to supply the want of his personal presence with the Apostles††. And lastly, he is joined with the Father and the Son, on equal terms, both in the form of baptism, where his name and theirs are used alike‡‡; and in the solemn form of blessing, where *the fellowship of the Holy Ghost* is placed on a level with *the love of God*, and *the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ*§§.

These, and many other Scripture expressions, are surely such, as cannot be used of any creature; but prove the Spirit, as others, already mentioned to you, prove the Son, to partake of the same authority and perfections, and therefore the same nature, with the Father. Yet we know, that though in holy writ men and angels are, sometimes on account of their extensive power, sometimes as representatives of the Deity, called gods, yet in literal propriety of speech there is but one God, and not either three supreme beings, or a superior and inferior object of adoration. *Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord*|||. *Is there a God besides me? yea, there is no God: I know not*

* 1 Cor. ii. 10, 11.

† Luke i. 35.

‡ 1 Cor. vi. 19.

§ 1 Cor. iii. 16, 17.

|| Acts v. 3, 4.

¶ 1 Cor. xii. 11.

** Acts xiii. 2.

†† John xvi. 7.

‡‡ Matth. xxviii. 19.

§§ 2 Cor. xiii. 14.

||| Deut. vi. 4.

*any**. *Before me was no God formed: neither shall there be after me†. I am the Lord,—and my glory will I not give to another‡. Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve§. Since then there is not a plurality of gods; and yet the Son and Spirit are each of them God, no less than the Father: it plainly follows, that they are, in a manner by us inconceivable, so united to him, that these three are one||; but still, in a manner equally inconceivable, so distinguished from him, that no one of them is the other.*

Now certainly, in general, it is no contradiction, that things should be in one respect the same, and in another different. But the particular and explicit notion of this union and this distinction, the word of God hath not given us. Whether we are capable of apprehending it, we know not: and therefore it is no wonder in the least, that we are incapable of forming one to ourselves. For indeed we are incapable of forming clear notions concerning thousands of other things, which are unspeakably less beyond our reach. All that we can do therefore is, to use those expressions in relation to it, which either Scripture furnishes, or experience hath found useful to guard against false apprehensions: for with very imperfect ones we must be content. Thus in speaking of the difference of the Son and the Spirit from the Father and from each other, we say, with our Bible, that the Son is *begotten*, and the Spirit *proceeds*, without pretending to know any further, what these two words mean, than that each denotes something different from the other; and both something different from creation out of nothing. And this distinction

* Isa. xliv. 8.

† Isa. xliii. 10.

‡ Isa. xlii. 8.

§ Matt. iv. 10.

|| 1 John v. 7.

giving occasion to Scripture to speak of them in somewhat the same manner, as of different persons amongst men; we call them the three Persons of the Trinity: not at all intending by it to say, that the word, *person*, suits them in every respect that it suits us: but only to acknowledge, that as we find them thus spoken of, we doubt not but there is some sufficient ground for it. And as we find further, that in point of rank, the person of the Father is represented as supreme, the Son as subordinate to him, the Holy Spirit to both; and in point of relation to us, creation is ascribed peculiarly to the first, redemption to the second, sanctification to the third; and yet, in some sense, each of these things to each: we imitate the whole of this likewise. Still we are very sensible, at the same time, that many more doubts and difficulties may be raised, almost about every part of the doctrine, than God, in his unsearchable wisdom, hath given us light enough to solve. But we apprehend it is our duty, to believe with humility and simplicity what the Scripture hath taught us: and to be contentedly ignorant of what it doth not teach us; without indulging speculations and conjectures, which will only perplex the subject more, instead of clearing it. And surely it is our duty also, to interpret with candour, and use with prudent moderation whatever well-meant phrases the church of Christ, especially in its earlier days, hath applied to this subject; to think, on matters, which are both so mysterious in their nature, and so hard to be expressed, with great charity of other persons: and for ourselves, to keep close with great care to so much as is plain and practical. In order to this, I now proceed to lay before you,

II. The peculiar office of the Spirit in the work of

our redemption: on account of which he is called, in our Catechism, *God the Holy Ghost, who sanctifieth us, and all the elect people of God.* For probably he is called the Holy Spirit so frequently in Scripture, and *the Spirit of Holiness* once*, not merely as being perfectly holy in himself, which the Father and the Son are also, but as being the cause of holiness in believers; who are elected by God, to eternal life, on foreseeing that their faith will produce obedience.

To be holy is to be pure from defilement; but particularly, in this case, from the defilement of iniquity: and being sanctified is being made holy: to which blessed change in sinful man, the Spirit of God, we are taught, contributes many ways.

In baptism we are *born again of water and of the Spirit*†; restored by him to the state of God's children, and endued with the principles of a new, that is, the Christian, life. As we grow up, it is through him, that our understandings are enlightened by the knowledge of God's will. He directed the ancient prophets in what they preached and wrote. For *holy men of old time, spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost*‡: which more especially testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glories that should follow§. Then afterwards, when our Saviour became man, the Holy Ghost was upon him, and accompanied him through the whole of his ministration||: and after his ascension was communicated more fully than before to his Apostles; to *teach them all things needful, and bring to their remembrance whatever he had said to them*¶: so that in all their discourses for the instruction of mankind, *it was not so much they who*

* Rom. i. 4. † John iii. 3, 5. ‡ 2 Pet. i. 21. § 1 Pet. i. 11.

|| Matt. iii. 16. Luke iii. 22. iv. 1. Acts i. 2. x. 8.

¶ John xiv. 26.

*spoke as the Spirit of the Father that spoke in them**. Nor can we doubt but he afforded them equal assistance at least in what they wrote for the use of all future ages. The same Spirit was also their comforter, under every suffering: and, lastly, bore witness to the truth of their doctrine and our faith, by a multitude of *signs and wonders and supernatural gifts†*: by which means, and the ministry of their successors, whom likewise the *Holy Ghost made overseers over Christ's flock‡*, the light of his Gospel hath filled the world, and now shines upon us.

Nor is it outwardly alone, that he reveals and confirms to us divine truths: but as the blessed Jesus promised, that *he should dwell in his disciples, and abide with them for ever§*; so, by his inward operations, the credibility of which I shall, God willing, prove to you in its proper place, he *opens our hearts||* to receive the word of God, influences our affections to delight in it, and excites our wills to act conformably to it: for which reasons good persons are said to *be led by the Spirit¶*; and all Christian graces to be *the fruits of the Spirit***. With the wicked *he strives††*, till they obstinately harden themselves, and then forsakes them. But those, who yield to his motions, he *renews‡‡*, and *strengthens with might in the inner man§§*; helps their infirmities, and both directs and animates their prayers, thus making, as it were, *intercession|||* within them. By this *one Spirit*, being in all Christians, they are united into *one body¶¶*, and made to love each other. By the *Holy Ghost* also, *the love of God is shed*

* Matth. x. 20.

§ John xiv. 16.

** Gal. v. 22.

§§ Eph. iii. 16.

† Heb. ii. 4.

|| Acts xvi. 14.

†† Gen. vi. 3.

||| Rom. viii. 26, 27.

‡ Acts xx. 28.

¶ Rom. viii. 14.

‡‡ Tit. iii. 5.

¶¶ Eph. iv. 4.

*abroad in our hearts**; teaching us to look upon him, not as an austere master, but a kind parent; or, in the language of St. Paul, to cry, *Abba, Father†*. And thus *the Spirit beareth witness with our spirit*, joins with our consciences to complete the evidence, *that we are the sons of God‡*: from whence arises that joy in the *Holy Ghost§*, which different persons have in very different degrees, and therefore no one should despond, because he feels but little, or at times perhaps nothing, of it, provided he truly honours and serves God. But to some persons, on some occasions, the heavenly Comforter vouchsafes, both strong assurances of their good state; (*hereby know we, that God abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us||*); and such lively consolations from it, as amount to a pledge and foretaste of happiness to come. Accordingly they are said to be *sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of their inheritance¶*.

But to prevent wicked persons of enthusiastic tempers from mistaking, as they often have done, their own groundless confidence for the inward testimony of the divine Spirit, they should be carefully reminded, that *by our fruits we are known***, and must know ourselves††, that *the fruit of the Spirit is in all righteousness and truth‡‡*, and only good men are full of the *Holy Ghost§§*. For into a malicious soul he will not enter; nor dwell in the body, that is subject unto sin. The Holy Spirit of discipline will flee deceit; and remove from thoughts that are without understanding; and will not abide, when unrighteousness cometh in|||.

* Rom. v. 5.

† Rom. viii. 15. Gal. iv. 6.

‡ Rom. viii. 16.

§ Rom. xiv. 17.

|| 1 John iii. 24.

¶ Eph. i. 13, 14.

** Matt. vii. 16.

†† 1 John ii. 3.

‡‡ Eph. v. 9.

§§ Acts xi. 24.

||| Wisd. i. 4, 5.

III. The next thing proposed was to speak of the duties owing to the Holy Ghost: which, besides the general one of honouring him suitably to his nature as God, are in particular to be baptized in his name, as I have already mentioned; to pray for his graces; for God *giveth grace unto the humble**, and *will give his Holy Spirit to them that ask him†*; to be heartily thankful for all his good motions, and conscientiously to obey them in every instance. By this last I do not mean, that we should *believe every spirit‡*; follow every strong imagination of our own, or pretence of light from above in others: but adhere steadily to that rule of life, which the Holy Ghost hath directed the writers of Scripture to teach us, and inwardly prompts and disposes us to observe. For other inspiration than this, being now become unnecessary; we have reason to distrust it. But especially, if we be urged, under colour of such authority, to break any one standing precept of the Gospel, or add to, or take away from, any single article of our Creed; *though an angel from heaven§* were to require it, we are not to yield; but keep close to *the faith and holy commandment, which were once delivered to the saints||*, and shall never be altered.

These then are our duties to the ever-blessed Spirit. There are likewise mentioned in Scripture,

IV. Sins against him. And one of these, not all, as melancholy persons are apt to imagine, but one alone, is said by our Saviour to be unpardonable: which is *blasphemy against the Holy Ghost¶*. Now that means only, speaking reproachful words delibe-

* James iv. 6.

† Luke xi. 13.

‡ 1 John iv. 1.

§ Gal. i. 8.

|| 2 Pet. ii. 21. Jude, ver. 3.

¶ Matth. xii. 31. Mark iii. 28, 29. Luke xii. 10.

rately and maliciously, against the miracles done by the power of the Holy Ghost, or the supernatural gifts proceeding from him; and the only persons to whom Christ declared, that this should not be forgiven, were those, who had the testimony of their own senses for the reality of these miracles and gifts; and notwithstanding the fullest evidence of their coming from the Spirit of God, obstinately persisted in reviling them, and even ascribed them to the devil. Now there is a plain reason, why this sin, under these circumstances, must be unpardonable. The persons guilty of it, had stood out against all the means, which Heaven had provided for the conviction and conversion of mankind: none more powerful remained to bring them to repentance; and as they could not be forgiven without repenting, there was plainly no way left for their recovery.

But then it is equally plain, that persons, who never were witnesses to any such miraculous powers; but live, as we do, many ages after they are ceased; cannot in this respect, sin to the same degree of guilt, since it is not against the same degree of evidence: and that as they, who were guilty of it originally, were unbelievers in Christ, so indeed, no believer in him, continuing such, can possibly design, whilst his thoughts and words are in his own command, to speak evil of the Holy Ghost or his mighty works. Nor therefore can he come under the condemnation of those, whom the Epistle to the Hebrews describes, as *wilfully doing despite to the Spirit of grace*; and of whom it pronounces, that *there remains for them no more sacrifice for sin, but a fearful expectation of judgement**. Believers may indeed rashly and thoughtlessly use

* Heb. x. 26—29.

prophane words concerning the Holy Ghost: but these, though undoubtedly great offences, and too likely to make way for greater still, are very far from the unpardonable sin. And as for what some good persons are often terrified about, the wicked imaginations that come into their minds, and expressions that come out of their mouths, at times, almost whether they will or not; in proportion as they are involuntary, they are not criminal in them, be they in their own nature ever so bad. When therefore poor scrupulous souls affright themselves about such things as these; or when they who have not sinned at all against the Spirit, otherwise than as every ill action is a sin against him; or have sinned in a quite different manner from the Jews in the Gospel, and heartily repented of their sin; when they apprehend, that notwithstanding this they cannot be pardoned; they intirely mistake their own case; either through ignorance, or false opinions infused into them, or excessive tenderness of mind: or indeed more commonly by reason of some bodily disorder, though perhaps unperceived by themselves, which depresses their spirits, and clouds their understandings, and requires the help of medicine.

Another sin against the Holy Ghost, mentioned in Scripture, is *lying to him**: which means there, asserting falsehoods, being conscious that they were such, to persons inspired by him with the knowledge of men's hearts, as did Ananias and Sapphira. But the offences, which we are in danger of committing against him, are *resisting*† and *quenching*‡ his good motions and influences, and *grieving* him by *corrupt communication*§, evil thoughts, or unholy actions. These things therefore let us diligently avoid: or, if we have

* Acts v. 3. † Acts vii. 51. ‡ 1 Thess. v. 19. § Eph. iv. 29, 30.

fallen into them, sincerely repent of them: the opposite duties let us conscientiously practise, and steadfastly persevere in them: for so shall we commend ourselves to God, and to the Spirit of his grace; who is able to build us up, and give us an inheritance amongst them who are sanctified*; to which he of his mercy bring us all for the sake of our Redeemer Jesus Christ. Amen.

* Acts xx. 32.

LECTURE XIV.

CREED.

Article IX. *The Holy Catholic Church, the Communion of Saints.*

THE most ancient creeds of all went no further than a declaration of faith in the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, in whose name we are baptized. For in this profession all those other points of doctrine were understood to be implied, which it was very soon after found most convenient to express by additional articles. And the first of these, is that now to be explained: wherein we declare our belief in *the holy catholic church* and *the communion of saints*.

The Scripture word, translated *church*, originally signifies any regular and orderly assembly of persons, called to meet on any occasion. But in the Bible it signifies, almost always, a religious assembly. And when used in its largest sense there, it comprehends the whole number of good persons, in every age: all those who from the beginning of the world, under whatever dispensation of true religion, have believed in God, and served him, according to the degree of their light; and shall in the end of it be gathered together, and rewarded by him according to the degree

of their improvement. This is *the general assembly and church of the first-born, which are written in heaven*, as the Epistle to the Hebrews calls it*. And since the salvation of all these is owing to Jesus Christ; the only name by which men can be saved†; they are all, in that respect, members of the church of Christ, how obscure and imperfect soever their knowledge of a Saviour may have been. But the word is usually taken in a narrower sense. And thus it is sometimes applied to the Jewish nation; which in the Old Testament is called, by a phrase of just the same meaning, *congregation of the Lord*‡, and by St. Stephen, *the church which was in the wilderness*§. But the church more especially meant here in the Creed, is the Christian; which, though in some respects the same with the Jewish, in others differed from it; which therefore our Saviour, in the Gospel, speaks of himself as about to *build*¶: and accordingly, immediately after his ascension, in the Acts of the Apostles, we find it built: that is, we find an assembly of believers in Christ, met together at Jerusalem under their teachers and governors, to worship God, and edify one another, in the manner which he appointed.

This was the original Christian church; small indeed at first; but *the Lord*, we read, *added to the church daily such as should be saved*¶; till, the Gospel spreading every way, the number of Christians, which in the beginning required no more than one congregation, was of necessity divided into several. And henceforward we find many churches spoken of, at some times; yet all these many spoken of as one, at others. For since they all proceeded from the same source; are all, as the Apostle argues, *one body*; and

* Heb. xii. 23.

† Acts iv. 12.

‡ Num. xvi. 3, &c.

§ Acts vii. 38.

¶ Matt. xvi. 18.

¶ Acts ii. 47.

are directed by *one Spirit*; even as they are called in *one hope of their calling*: as they have *one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all**; so are they, in great propriety of speech, though *many*, yet *one in Christ†*. His church therefore is the whole number of those, who believe on him. How much soever they may differ in some opinions or practices, yet they are one in all things essential. How wide soever they may be dispersed throughout the world, they shall at last be *gathered together unto him‡*. We can judge only according to appearances: and therefore to us all those must be members of Christ's church, who make a visible profession of being Christians. But God sees every secret thought; and in his eye, they alone belong truly to his church, who truly serve him in *the hidden man of the heart§*: that inward sincerity, which to human eyes is invisible. And this invisible true church of Christ, here on earth, is militant: carrying on a continual war, against the outward temptations of the world and the devil, and the inward struggles, of every wrong inclination: till having faithfully *fought the good fight*; and really, though not perfectly, *gotten the victory* in this life; it shall, in the next, become triumphant, and receive the *crown of righteousness||*.

Such then being the church of Christ in its different states: let us proceed to consider the two qualities ascribed to it in the Creed: that it is *holy*, and that it is *catholic*.

To be holy, is to be separate from all defilement and impurity, particularly of the moral kind. Thus God is perfectly holy: angels and good men are so in their different degrees. And because nothing unclean

* Eph. iv. 4, 5.

† Rom. xii. 5.

‡ 2 Thess. ii. 1.

§ 1 Pet. iii. 4.

|| 2 Tim. iv. 7. Rev. xv. 2.

or impure, in any sense, ought to enter into the service of God, therefore whatever is set apart from common use, and dedicated to his worship, is called holy also. Hence the places, times, and things, that are so employed, have that name given them. And the persons, who attend on his ministry, are styled holy on account of their outward relation to him, whether they are really and inwardly such as they ought or not. Now in outward profession, the whole visible church of Christ is holy: separated and distinguished from the rest of the world, by acknowledging his holy laws, and using the means of holiness which he hath appointed. But in the inward sense, and the only one which will avail hereafter, they alone are indeed members of his holy church, who, by the help of these means, do really improve themselves in piety and virtue, becoming *holy in all manner of conversation, as he which hath called them is holy**: and such as are truly so here, shall be made completely so hereafter. For *Christ loved the church, and gave himself for it, that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water, and present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, but that it should be holy, and without blemish*†. Ask your hearts then: Are you giving your best diligence to *cleanse yourself from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God*‡? For without it no man shall see the Lord§.

The word *catholic*, applied to the church in our Creed, is no where used in Scripture; but frequently in the early Christian writers; and it means *universal*, extending to all mankind. The Jewish church was not universal, but particular: for it consisted only

* 1. Pet. i. 15.

† Eph. v. 25, 26, 27.

‡ 2 Cor. vii. 1.

§ Heb. xii. 14.

of one nation ; and their law permitted sacrifices only in one temple ; nor could several other precepts of it be observed in countries at any considerable distance from thence : but the Christian consists of *every kindred, tongue, and people** equally ; and *offers unto the name of God in every place, from the rising of the sun unto the going down of the same, incense and a pure offering*†. The catholic church then is the universal church, spread through the world ; and the catholic faith is the universal faith ; *that form of doctrine*, which the Apostles *delivered*‡ to the whole church, and it received. What this faith was, we may learn from their writings, contained in the New Testament ; and, at so great a distance of time, we can learn it with certainty no where else. Every church or society of Christians, that preserves this catholic or universal faith, accompanied with true charity, is a part of the catholic or universal church ; and because the parts are of the same nature with the whole, it hath been usual to call every church singly, which is so qualified, a catholic church. And in this sense, churches, that differ widely in several notions and customs, may notwithstanding, each of them, be truly catholic churches. But the church of Rome, which is one of the most corrupted parts of the catholic church, both in faith and love, hath presumed to call itself the whole catholic church, the universal church : which it no more is, than one diseased limb, though perhaps the larger for being diseased, is the whole body of a man. And by attempting to exclude us, they take the direct way to exclude themselves, unless God impute their uncharitable way of thinking and acting, as we hope he will, to excuseable ignorance

* Rev. v. 9.

† Mal. i. 11.

‡ Rom. vi. 17.

and mistake. The church of England pretends not indeed, absurdly, to be the whole catholic church; but is undoubtedly a sound and excellent member of it. So that we have much better ground to call ourselves catholics, than they: were such names worth disputing about, which they are not: only one would not flatter and harden them, by giving them a title, which they both claim unjustly, and turn into an argument against us.

In this *holy catholic church* our Creed professes belief. But the meaning is not, that we engage to believe all things, without exception, of which the majority of the church, at any time, shall be persuaded; and much less, what the rules of it, or, it may be, a small part of them, who may please to call themselves the church, shall at any time require; for then we must believe many plain falsehoods, uncertainties without number, and contrary doctrines, as contrary parties prevail. Our church doth indeed believe whatever the first and best ages of Christianity thought necessary: whatever all the other churches of the present age agree in. But this is more than we declare in the Creed. For there, as believing in God, means only believing there is a God; and believing in the resurrection, means only that there shall be a resurrection: so believing in the holy catholic church, means only believing that by our Saviour's appointment there was founded, and through his mercy shall ever continue, a society of persons, of what nation or nations is indifferent, who have faith in his name, and obey his laws: not indeed without being deformed and disfigured, by mixtures both of sin and error; but still, without being destroyed by either. For as he hath promised, that *the gates of hell*, or of

the invisible world, that is, persecution and death, *shall not prevail against his church**, so neither shall any other power. Nothing shall abolish it; though several things may obscure and corrupt it. That sin doth, we see: why then may not error too? It is certainly not a worse thing: nor is our Saviour's promise a greater security against the one, than the other. He requires us indeed to *hear the church*. But in what case? *If thy brother trespass against thee*, admonish him privately. This relates then, not to disputed speculative opinions, but to known practical transgressions against our neighbour. *If he neglect private admonition, tell it unto the church*. Not surely to the whole catholic church all over the world; that is impossible: but the particular church to which you both belong. Now all sides allow, that every particular church is fallible; and therefore to be heard no farther, than it appears to be in the right. It follows next: and *if he neglect to hear the church*; if he will not reform his injurious behaviour on a public warning, *let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican†*: treat him no longer with the tenderness and regard, that is due to a Christian; but consider him in the same light with an infidel sinner, till he makes reparation. This rule therefore by no means proves the infallibility, even of the universal church, and much less of the Romish, which is far from universal: but relates to a matter entirely different. And it still remains true, that professing to believe in the holy catholic church, is only acknowledging that Christ hath formed the whole number of his followers, under him their head, into one regular and sacred body, or society, to last for ever; the unity and holiness of which

* Matt. xvi. 18.

† Matt. xviii. 15, 16, 17.

is to be carefully preserved by what the latter part of this article specifies.

The communion of saints. The word *saints*, is of the same meaning with the word *holy*; and therefore comprehends all Christians, in the manner which I have just explained. Having *communion*, is being entitled to partake of benefits and kindnesses, and bound to make suitable returns for them. And thus Christians, or saints, have communion or *fellowship with the Father, from whom cometh down every good and perfect gift: with his Son Jesus Christ**, through whom forgiveness and mercy is conveyed to us: with the Holy Ghost, whose sanctifying graces are conferred on such as duly qualify their hearts for the reception of them. And for these blessings we owe all thankfulness and all duty in thought, word, and deed. Christians have also communion with the holy angels; as these *are ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them, who shall be heirs of salvation†*. And undoubtedly we ought to think of what they do for us, with an inward sense of gratitude and love. But as we are unacquainted with particulars, we can make no particular acknowledgements: nor ought we to make any general ones, by outward expressions of respect; since *worshipping God alone* is commanded‡, and *worshipping angels* condemned § in Scripture.

With respect to those of our own nature, we are bound so far to hold communion, even with the worst of unbelievers, as not only to do them every kind of justice, but sincerely to wish, and, if occasion offer, heartily endeavour their good, both in body and soul. But to all, *who have obtained the like precious faith*

* 1 John i. 3. James i. 17.

† Heb. i. 14.

‡ Matth. iv. 10.

§ Col. ii. 18.

with ourselves *, we bear a still nearer relation ; as being, in a peculiar sense, children of the same Father, disciples of the same Master, animated by the same Spirit, members of the same body. And these things oblige us to the utmost care of preserving, by prudent order and mutual forbearance, as much unity in the church, as possibly we can. Such indeed, as obstinately deny the fundamental doctrines, or transgress the fundamental precepts of Christianity, ought to be rejected from Christian communion. But to renounce communicating with any others, who are willing to admit us to it on lawful terms, is the way to cut off ourselves, not them, from the body of Christ : who yet, we doubt not, will allow those on both sides to belong to his church, who, through pardonable passions or mistakes, will not allow one another to do so.

And as we should maintain communion with all proper persons, we should shew our disposition to it in all proper ways : attend on the public instruction, join in the public worship, sacraments, and discipline, which our Lord hath appointed ; and keep the whole of them pure from all forbidden or suspicious alterations or mixtures : avoid with great care, both giving and taking needless offence, in respect to these, or any matters ; and, by all fit means, *edify one another in love* † : obeying those who are set over us ; condescending to those who are beneath us ; esteeming and honouring the wise and virtuous ; teaching and admonishing the ignorant and faulty ; bearing with the weak, relieving the poor, and comforting the afflicted.

Nor have we communion only with the saints on earth ; but are of one city, and one family, with such as are already got safe to heaven. Doubtless they exercise that communion towards us by loving

* 2 Pet. i. 1.

† Rom. xiv. 19.

Eph. iv. 6.

and praying for their brethren, whom they have left behind them. And we are to exercise it towards them, not by addressing petitions to them, which we are neither authorized to offer, nor have any ground to think they can hear; but by rejoicing in their happiness, thanking God for the grace which he hath bestowed on them, and the examples which they have left us; holding their memories in honour, imitating their virtues, and beseeching the Disposer of all things, that having followed them in holiness here, we may meet them in happiness hereafter; and become in the fullest sense, *fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God**; having, with all those that are departed in the true faith of his holy name, our perfect consummation and bliss, both in body and soul, in his eternal and everlasting glory, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen†.

* Eph. ii. 19.

† Burial Office.

LECTURE XV.

CREED.

Article X. *The Forgiveness of Sins.*

WE are now come to that article of the Creed, for which all the preceding ones have been preparing the way: a doctrine of the greatest comfort to believe, and the utmost danger to misapprehend. I shall therefore endeavour clearly to explain,

I. The nature of sin, its different kinds, and its guilt.

II. The nature and conditions of the forgiveness promised to it.

I. The nature of sin. Both men and all other beings, endued with sufficient reason, must perceive a difference between different inclinations and actions, of their own and others: in consequence of which, they must approve some, as right and good; and disapprove others, as wrong and evil. Now this distinction, which we are capable of seeing, God must see as much more clearly, as his understanding is more perfect than ours. Therefore he must intirely love what is good, and utterly hate what is evil: and his will must be, that all his rational crea-

tures should practise the former, and avoid the latter. This he makes known to be his will, in some degree, to all men, however ignorant, by natural conscience; and hath more fully made known to us, by the revelation of his holy word, wherein also besides those things, which we of ourselves might have known to be fit, he hath signified his pleasure, that we should observe some further rules, which he knew to be useful and requisite, though we should otherwise not have discerned it. Now the will and pleasure of a person having authority, as God hath absolute authority, is, when sufficiently notified, a law. Those laws of his, which human reason was able to teach us, are called natural or moral laws: those which he hath added to them, are called positive ones. Obedience to both sorts is our duty; transgression of either is sin: whether it be by neglecting what the law commands, which is a sin of omission; or doing what it forbids, which is a sin of commission.

Further: as God hath a right to give us laws, he must have a right to punish us, if we break them. And we all of us feel inwardly, that sin deserves this punishment: which feeling is what we call a sense of guilt. Some sins have more guilt, that is, deserve greater punishment, than others; because they are either worse in their own nature, or accompanied with circumstances, that aggravate, instead of alleviating them. Thus if bad actions, known to be such, are done with previous deliberation and contrivance, which are called wilful or presumptuous sins; they are very highly criminal. But if we do amiss in some smaller matter, through inconsiderateness or other weakness of mind, or else through a sudden unforeseen attack of temptation; which are usually called sins of infirmity or surprise: these, though

real, are yet less offences. And if, lastly, we act wrong through invincible ignorance, that is, have no means of knowing better; then the action is not, strictly speaking, a fault in us, though it be in itself. But if we might, with a reasonable attention, have known our duty, and did not attend; we are justly blameable, even for a careless ignorance, and full as much for a designed one, as if we had known ever so well.

Another difference in the kinds of sins is this: that though they be only in smaller instances, yet if persons take so little pains to guard against them, that they live in a constant or frequent practice of them, which are called habitual sins; the guilt of these may be full as heavy as that of greater transgressions, provided they be less common. But if they be great and habitually indulged also; that makes the worst of cases.

Committing sin can never be a slight matter; for it is acting as our own hearts tell us we ought not. It is likewise, for the most part, injuring, one way or another, our fellow-creatures; and it is always behaving undutifully and ungratefully to our Creator, who hath sovereign power over us, and shews continual goodness to us. We may be sure therefore, that the punishment, due to the least sin, is such as will give us cause to wish from the bottom of our souls, that we had never done it. More enormous ones are of worse desert, according to their degree. And since recompences proportionable to them are not, with any constancy, distributed in this world; as certainly as God is just, they will in the next; unless we obtain forgiveness in the mean time: and all will be made miserable, as long as they are wicked.

This is the main of what human abilities unassisted seem capable of discovering to us concerning sin and its consequences; excepting it be, that as we have a natural approbation of what is good, so we have, along with it, a natural proneness to what is evil; an inconsistency, for which reason finds it hard, if possible, to account.

But here most seasonably revelation comes in; and teaches, not indeed all that we might wish, but all that we need to know of this whole matter; that our first parents were created upright; but soon transgressed a plain and easy command of God, intended for a trial of their obedience: by which they perverted and tainted their minds; forfeited the immortality, which God had designed them; brought diseases and death on their bodies; and derived to us the same corrupt nature and mortal condition, to which they had reduced themselves. An imperfect illustration of this lamentable change, and I give it for no other, we may have from our daily experience, that wretched poverty, fatal distempers, and even vicious inclinations, often descend from parents to their children. Now the sinful dispositions, which our origin from our primitive parents hath produced in us, are called original sin. And this transgression of theirs may, very consistently with divine justice, occasion, as the Scripture shews it hath, our being condemned, as well as they, to temporal sufferings and death. For even innocent creatures have no right to be exempt from them: and to fallen creatures they are peculiarly instructive and medicinal. The same transgression may also, with equal justice, occasion our being exposed to a more difficult trial of our obedience, than we should else have undergone; indeed than we should be able, by the strength which

remains in us, to support. And thus, were we left to ourselves, we must, in consequence of the fall of our first progenitors, become finally miserable. But God is ready to give us more strength, if we will ask it: and he may undoubtedly subject us to any difficulties that he pleases, provided he bestows on us, whether naturally or supernaturally, the power of going through them in the manner that he expects from us: which he certainly doth bestow on all men. And if they use it, they will be accepted by him in a proper degree: what that is, we are no judges.

But when, instead of resisting our bad inclinations, as through the grace of God we may, we voluntarily follow and indulge them; then we fall into actual sin; and are in strictness of speech guilty, and deserving of punishment. And this punishment the Scripture frequently expresses by the name of death. For death being the most terrible to human nature, of all the punishments that man inflicts; it is used to signify the most terrible that God inflicts; even those, which extend beyond death, and are therefore called the *second death* *. Accordingly our Saviour directs his followers: *Be not afraid of them that kill the body; and after that have no more that they can do. But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear. Fear him, which, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say unto you, Fear him* †.

The nature and duration of the future sufferings, reserved for sinners, are most awfully described in the word of God: the declarations of which concerning them I shall soon have occasion to lay before you. But in the mean while we all know them to be such, as may abundantly suffice to engage us

* Rev. xx. 14. xxi. 8.

† Luke xii. 4, 5.

in a most serious inquiry, how we shall obtain, what was proposed to be explained,

II. *The forgiveness of sins.* Now thus much our own reason evidently teaches; that when we have done amiss, we are to undo it as far as we can. We are to disapprove it, and be sorry for it, as we have great cause; to beg pardon of God, for having offended him; to make the best amends we are able to our fellow-creatures, if we have injured them; to be very humble in our hearts, and very watchful in our future conduct. These things, through God's help, we can do: and these are all that nature directs us to do. Undoubtedly he will never accept less: but the question is, whether he will so far accept this, as to be reconciled to us upon it. Since wickedness deserves punishment, it may be justly punished. Being sorry for it, is not being innocent of it. And the most careful obedience afterwards no more makes a compensation for what went before, than avoiding to run into a new debt pays off the old one: besides that we never obey so well, as not to add continually some degree of fresh misbehaviour. God indeed is merciful; but he is equally righteous and holy, and abhorrent of sin. And what can the mere light of our own understandings discover to us, with any assurance, from these attributes joined? We see, that in this world the most merciful rulers, if they are just and wise also, which God is, often punish even those offenders, who repent the most heartily. The honour and good order of their government requires it. And why may not he have reasons of the same, or even of a different nature, for doing the same thing?

Still the case of penitents must be more favourable, than that of others. And there is ground for all such

to hope, that such pity, as can, will be shewn them in some manner, though they cannot be sure how, or to what effect. And God hath been pleased to confirm this hope, from time to time, by various revelations, gradually unfolding his gracious designs: till, by the coming of our blessed Lord, the whole purpose of his goodness was opened; as far as it is proper, that mortals should be acquainted with it.

From these revelations, contained in the Bible, we learn, that repentance alone, even the completest, would not be sufficient to reinstate us fully in God's favour; much less the poor endeavours towards it, which we of ourselves are capable of using: but that our pardon and salvation depend on the compassionate intercession of a Mediator appointed by our heavenly Father: that a person, who should deliver mankind from the bitter fruits of their transgressions, had in general been promised, and the promise been believed, from the earliest ages; and more particular notices of him gradually imparted to the successive generations of the chosen people: that at length in the season, which infinite wisdom saw to be fittest, he appeared on earth, in the character of the only begotten Son of God; taught his followers the precepts, and set them the example, of perfect piety and virtue; and after bearing cheerfully, for this purpose, all the inconveniences of mortal life, submitted to suffer a cruel death from wicked men, provoked by the perfections which they ought to have adored: that this voluntary sacrifice of himself, the Almighty was pleased to accept from him, whose divine nature, united to the human, gave it unspeakable value, as a reason for entering into a covenant of mercy with all those, who should be influenced, by faith in his doctrines, to obey his laws: that still neither our obedi-

ence, nor our faith itself, is at all meritorious, or in any degree the cause of our acceptance: for they are both of them God's gift; and they are both, through our fault, very imperfect: but yet that thankful belief in Christ, as our Saviour from the power and the punishment of sin, *working by love** to our Maker, our Redeemer, our Sanctifier, our fellow-creatures, is appointed the condition of our obtaining, and the instrument of our receiving, pardon.

The reasons of this appointment *we see, as through a glass, darkly†*: yet enough of them to convince us of its being *the wisdom of God, though in a mystery‡*. With respect to ourselves, it hath the most powerful tendency to inspire us with humility, gratitude, and diligence. With respect to the blessed Jesus, it was a fit reward for what he had done and suffered, to take those into favour again, for whom he had interested himself with such inexpressible goodness. And with respect to God, it was a strong demonstration of his concern for the glory of his attributes, and the honour of his government, that he would not be reconciled to sinners on any other terms, than such an interposition of such a person in their behalf: which yet since he himself provided, as well as accepted, his kindness to us is no less, than if he pardoned us without it. Thus then did *mercy and truth meet together, righteousness and peace kiss each other§*; and God shew himself *just, and yet the justifier of them which believe in Jesus||*.

But then we must always remember, that none will be forgiven and made happy by the means of Christ, but they who are reformed and made holy by his means: that his sacrifice is not to stand instead of

* Gal. v. 6.

† 1 Cor. xiii. 12.

‡ 1 Cor. ii. 7.

§ Psal. lxxxv. 10.

|| Rom. iii. 26.

our repentance and amendment; but is the consideration which induces God first to work in us pious dispositions, then to accept us, if we cultivate and exert them faithfully.

Perhaps the benefit of this sacrifice may extend, in a very valuable, though inferior degree, even to those who have had little or no knowledge of him who offered it. But in such questions we have no concern. Our business is to take care that it may extend to us, by embracing, with an active, as well as joyful faith, the gracious tenders of the Gospel dispensation.

Indeed, the first advantage, that we have from it, is before we are capable of knowing our happiness, at the time of our baptism. For baptism restores the infants of believing parents, as will be proved hereafter in explaining it, to that assurance of immortal life, which our first parents lost, and we by consequence. But when administered to persons of riper years, as it conveys a further privilege, the pardon of their former actual sins, it also requires a suitable condition, the exercise of an actual faith, such as will produce future obedience. And as infants are baptized only on presumption of their coming to have this faith in due time: so, if they live, and refuse to be instructed in it, or despise it, their baptism will avail them nothing. For it is a covenant: at first indeed made for us; but to be afterwards acknowledged and ratified by us, as it is in confirmation. And in this covenant we engage, on our part, to keep ourselves, with an honest care, free from sin: and God engages, on his, to consider us (not because of our care, though on condition of it, but for the sake of Christ), as free from guilt; notwithstanding such infirmities and failings as may overtake well-meaning persons. He will not look on these as breaches of

his covenant, but readily pass them over; provided we make a general confession of them in our daily prayers, and strive against them with a reasonable diligence. For such things we cannot expect to avoid intirely: but greater offences we may. And therefore, if we fall into any habitual wickedness, or any single act of gross and deliberate sin; we forfeit the happiness, to which our baptism entitles us: and if we continue impenitent, the more privileges we have enjoyed, the more severely we shall be punished. For *to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required**.

But if God allows us time; and we make use of it, not only to be sorry for having lived ill, for this alone is not Gospel penitence; but to be sorry from a principle of conscience; and to shew of what sort our sorrow is, by living well afterwards, in all those respects, in which we have been faulty, we become entitled again to the divine favour. For though the Scripture declares it *impossible to renew* some sinners *to repentance†*; yet if this be taken strictly, it can mean only *blasphemers against the Holy Ghost‡*. Besides, *impossible*, in all languages, often signifies no more than extremely difficult: and *with God all things are possible§*. Experience proves, that great numbers are *renewed to repentance*: and that they shall not be forgiven, when they repent, is no where said. It is true, *there remains no more sacrifice for sin||*, no other method of salvation, than that, to which they have lost their claim. But still, if they humbly apply for a fresh interest in it; since the Apostle directs all Christians to *restore such* to their communion, as brethren, *in the spirit of meekness¶*; there can be no

* Luke xii. 48.

† Heb. vi. 4, 6.

‡ Matth. xii. 31.

§ Matth. xix. 26.

|| Heb. x. 26.

¶ Gal. vi. 1.

doubt, but God will receive them, as a father, with pity and mercy. Indeed the words of St. John alone would be sufficient to banish all despondency from the breast of every Christian penitent: *My little children, these things I write unto you, that ye sin not. But if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ, the righteous; and he is the propitiation for our sins**.

You see then the inestimable goodness of God, in providing means, by which we not only shall be pardoned, but have the comfort of knowing beforehand, that we shall. But then you see also the only terms, on which we are to expect it. And these are, not that we live on in a circle of sinning and repenting; not that we abstain from some sins, and indulge others: but that we so repent of all our sins, as not wilfully to sin again. And till we are arrived at this, we must never think ourselves in a safe condition. For, as on the one hand, *if the wicked man turn from his wickedness, he shall live†*; so on the other, *if the righteous man turn from his righteousness, he shall die‡*. *Blessed are they, whose transgression is forgiven, and whose sin is covered. Blessed are they to whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile§*.

* 1 John ii. 1, 2.

† Ezek. xviii. 21, 27.

‡ Ezek. xviii. 24.

§ Psal. xxxii. 1, 2.

LECTURE XVI.

CREED.

Articles XI, XII. Part I. *The Resurrection of the Body, and the Life everlasting.*

THE resurrection of the body and life everlasting being the consequences of the preceding article, the forgiveness of sins, our belief of that comfortable truth leads us naturally to believe these also. And as they complete the whole of what we are concerned to know; so here the profession of our faith happily concludes, having brought us to the *end of our faith, the salvation of our souls**.

But, though this part of our Creed expresses only two things; yet it implies two more: and so comprehends the four following particulars:

- I. That the souls of all men continue after death.
- II. That their bodies shall at the last day be raised up, and re-united to them.
- III. That both souls and bodies of good persons shall enjoy everlasting happiness.
- IV. That those of the wicked shall undergo everlasting punishment.

* 1 Peter i. 9.

I. That the souls of all men continue after death. We are every one of us capable of perceiving and thinking, judging and resolving, loving and hating, hoping and fearing, rejoicing and grieving. That part of us, which doth these things, we call the mind or soul. Now plainly this is not the body. Neither our limbs, nor our trunk, nor even our head, is what understands, and reasons, and wills, and likes or dislikes: but something that hath its abode within the head*, and is unseen. A little consideration will make any of you sensible of this. Then further: our bodies increase, from an unconceivable smallness, to a very large bulk, and waste away again; and are changing, each part of them, more or less, every day. Our souls, we know, continue all the while the same. Our limbs may be cut off one after another, and perish: yet the soul not be impaired by it in the least. All feeling and motion may be lost almost throughout the body, as in the case of an universal palsy: yet the soul have lost nothing. And though some diseases do indeed disorder the mind: there is no appearance, that any have a tendency to destroy it. On the contrary, the greatest disorders of the understanding are often accompanied with firm health and strength of body: and the most fatal distempers of the body are attended, to the very moment of death, with all possible vigour and liveliness of understanding. Since therefore these two are plainly different things; though we knew no further, there would be no reason to conclude, that one of them dies, because the other doth. But since we do know further, that it can survive so many changes of the other; this alone affords a fair probability, that it may survive

* In quo igitur loco est (mens)? Credo equidem in capite: et cur credam, adferre possum. Cic. Tusc. Disp. l. i. c. 29.

the great change of death. Indeed, whatever is once in being, we are to suppose continues in being, till the contrary appears. Now the body, we perceive, becomes at death insensible, and corrupts. But to imagine the same thing of the soul, in which we perceive no change at that time, would be almost as groundless, as if having frequently heard the music of an organ, but never seen the person that played on it, we should suppose him dead, on finding the instrument incapable of playing any more. For the body is an instrument adapted to the soul. The latter is our proper self: the former is but something joined to us for a time. And though, during that time, the connection is very close; yet nothing hinders, but we may be as well after the separation of our soul from our present body, as we were before, if not better.

Then consider further: when the body dies, only the present composition and frame of it is dissolved, and falls in pieces: not the least single particle, of all that make it up, returns to nothing; nor can do, unless God, who gave it being, thinks fit to take that being away. Now we have no reason to imagine the soul made up of parts, though the body is. On the contrary, so far as the acutest reasoners are able to judge, what perceives and wills must be one uncompounded substance. And not being compounded, it cannot be dissolved, and therefore probably cannot die*.

God indeed may put an end to it, when he pleases. But since he hath made it of a nature to last for ever, we cannot well conceive, that he will destroy it after so short a space, as that of this life: especially considering, that he hath planted in our breasts an earnest

* See Cic. Tusc. Disp. i. 29.

desire of immortality, and a horror at the thought of ceasing to be. It is true, we dread also the death of our bodies, and yet we own they must die: but then we believe, that they were not at first intended to die: and that they shall live again wonderfully improved. God hath in no case given us natural dispositions and hopes, which he purposed at the same time to disappoint: much less, when they are such, that the wisest and best men feel the most of them, and are made still wiser and better by them.

Besides, there are plainly in our souls capacities for vastly higher improvements, both in knowledge and goodness, than any one arrives at in this life. The best inclined, and most industrious, undeniably have not near time enough to become what they could be. And is it likely, that beings qualified for doing so much, should have so little opportunity for it; and sink into nothing, without ever attaining their proper maturity and perfection? But further: not to urge, that happiness here is very unequally divided between persons equally entitled to it; which yet is hard to reconcile with God's impartial bounty: it hath been already observed, in speaking of the judgement to come, that though, in general, the course of things in this world doth bear witness to God's love of virtue, and hatred of sin; yet, in multitudes of particular cases, nothing of this kind appears. Not only good persons often undergo, in common with others, the largest shares of evil in life; and bad persons enjoy, in common with others, the highest degrees of prosperity in it: but the former are frequently sufferers, and sometimes even to death, for the very sake of their duty; and the latter gain every sort of worldly advantages by the very means of their wickedness. Yet evidently there is a difference between right be-

haviour and wrong: and God must see this difference: and his will must be, that mankind should observe it: and accordingly we feel ourselves inwardly bound so to do. Now is it possible, that a being of perfect justice and holiness, of infinite wisdom and power, should have ordered things so, that obeying him and our own consciences should ever make us miserable, and disobeying them prove beneficial to us, on the whole? We cannot surely imagine, that he will permit any one such case to happen.

And therefore since in this world such cases do happen; this world is not our final state; but another will come after it, in which every one shall be recompensed according to his works. Without this belief, religion and virtue would often want sufficient motives: with it they never can; and therefore this belief is true.

Strongly as these arguments prove the doctrine of a life after death; yet it receives a considerable addition of strength from the universal agreement of all mankind in it, with but few exceptions, from the very beginning. Of the earliest ages indeed we have only short accounts: yet enough to judge, what their notions of this point were. What could they be indeed, when they knew, that Abel, with whom God declared himself pleased, was murdered by his brother for that very reason? Surely his brother's hatred did not do him more harm, than God's love of him did him good. That would be thinking lowly indeed of the Almighty. And therefore, since plainly he had not the benefit of his piety here, there must be another place in which he received it. Again, when *Enoch walked with God, and was not, for God took him**: could this peculiar favour be only depriving him, before his natural time,

* Gen. v. 24.

of the enjoyments of the present state? Must it not be admitting him to those of a future one? When God called himself, in a distinguished sense, *the God of Abraham*, and the patriarchs, what had they enjoyed in this life, answerable to so extraordinary a manner of speaking? Many, in all likelihood, both equalled and exceeded them in worldly satisfactions: but *therefore*, as the Epistle to the Hebrews teaches, *God was not ashamed to be called their God, because he had prepared for them a heavenly city*. When Jacob confessed himself a pilgrim and stranger on earth, he plainly declared, as the same Epistle observes, that *he desired a better country** for his home. Again, when mourning for the supposed death of his son Joseph, he saith, *he will go down to him*: we translate the next word wrongly, *into the grave†*, as if he meant to have his body laid by him: that could not be; for he thought him devoured by wild beasts: it means into the invisible state, the state of departed souls. And in this sense it is said of several of the patriarchs, that *they were gathered unto their people‡*; and of *all that generation*, which lived with Joshua, that *they were gathered unto their fathers§*.

In the time of Moses we find, that even the heathens had a strong notion of another life. For they had built a superstitious practice upon it, of seeking to the dead||, and enquiring of them concerning things to come. A foolish and wicked custom indeed: but however, it shews the belief was deeply rooted in them. And though future recompences were not, directly and expressly, either promised to good persons, or

* Heb. xi. 13—16.

† Gen. xxxvii. 35.

‡ Gen. xxv. 8. xxxv. 29. xlix. 29.

§ Judg. ii. 10.

|| Deut. xviii. 9—12.

threatened to bad, in the law of Moses: yet that might be, not because they were unknown, but because God thought them sufficiently known; and for reasons of unsearchable wisdom, did not think proper, that Moses should make any considerable addition to that knowledge: of which there was the less occasion, as temporal rewards and punishments were more equally administered by Providence amongst the Jews, than any other people. Besides, a life to come is not mentioned in the laws of our own nation neither: though we know, they were made by such, as professed firmly to believe it. And the reason is, partly that national laws are more immediately designed to procure men peace and prosperity on earth, than happiness in heaven: and partly also, that they propose such encouragements, as they are able to bestow; and such penalties, as they are able to inflict; which are those of this world only. Moses indeed went beyond the sanctions, which are in man's power: and assured the Jews of God's blessing on their obedience, and curses on their disobedience. But as, in so doing, he spoke not so much to single persons considered singly, as to the whole people in a body; these blessings and curses could be only, what they were, those of the present life: because the division of mankind into nations will subsist no longer; and therefore national good or evil can be enjoyed or suffered only here. But still, since it is evident, through the whole of his law, that the Jews had the most serious belief of a just Providence; and also, from the above-mentioned proofs, that they believed a future state; surely they must believe in general, that this providence would be so exerted in that state, as to reward the good, and punish the wicked. More and

stronger evidences of this will be given under the second particular, *the resurrection of the body*.

At present I shall go on to observe further, that not only the Jews, but all the nations of the world, whether learned or unlearned, whether known in former times or discovered of later times, appear to have been persuaded, that the souls of men continue after death. Now this so universal agreement must surely have arisen from an inward principle of nature, dictating to all persons, that they are designed for a future existence; and that as they are plainly creatures accountable for their actions, yet often do not account here, they must expect to do it hereafter. Or should the notion be supposed to have its origin from tradition; that tradition must have been derived from what God himself had taught the first of men: else it had never reached to all men: and it must have found some powerful confirmation in the minds and hearts of men: else in so great a length of time, amidst so many changes of human circumstances, it must have been universally worn out and forgotten.

Indeed, before our Saviour's days, length of time, and folly, and wickedness, had every where obscured and darkened this great truth, by fabulous additions and absurd alterations: which hindered the good influence of it, on some persons, and discredited the belief of it with others. And had there been none of these obstacles thrown in their way; though reason and conscience teach the doctrine of a future state; yet by the generality of men, reason is little exercised, and conscience little consulted, in relation to unwelcome truths. And though the Old Testament gave some further intimations of it; yet these were neither very clear and explicit, nor known by the greatest

part of the world. No wonder then if their conclusions, concerning a matter so intirely out of sight, were often doubtful, and often false: and thus they were misled in a subject of the greatest importance to them of all others. It is therefore one inestimable benefit of the Christian revelation, that our blessed Lord hath thoroughly removed the preceding uncertainties and errors; and *brought life and immortality to perfect light through the Gospel**: not only confirming by divine authority whatever had been rationally taught before; but adding, by the same authority, several interesting particulars, which human faculties could not discover: and which partly have been mentioned to you, in discoursing on the general judgement; and partly will be, in what I shall further say under the heads now proposed.

All that remains to be said under the first is, that neither the full reward of good persons deceased is as yet bestowed on them, nor the full punishment of the wicked as yet inflicted; these things being to follow the general resurrection; but that still, since our Saviour describes the soul of Lazarus, as *carried by angels into Abraham's bosom*, and there *comforted†*: since he promised the penitent thief, that he should *be that day with him in paradise‡*; and St. Paul speaks of being *present with Christ*, as the immediate consequence of death, and *far better§* than this life: therefore the state of those, *who die in the Lord*, is now a state, not of insensibility, but happiness; wherein they *are blessed, in resting from their labours||*; and doubtless *rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory¶*,

* 2 Tim. i. 10.

† Luke xvi. 22, 25.

‡ Luke xxiii. 43.

§ 2 Cor. v. 8. Phil. i. 23.

|| Rev. xiv. 13.

¶ 1 Pet. i. 8.

in the prospect of that completer felicity, which the righteous Judge of all will hereafter give them.

For as to the pretence of a purgatory, where the greatest part of good persons are to suffer grievous temporal punishments, after death, for their sins, though the eternal punishment is remitted: it hath no ground in the least. Our Saviour's saying, *that the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven in this world, nor that which is to come**, is merely saying, it shall not be forgiven at all, but punished both here and hereafter. *The prison, out of which, he saith, the person, who agrees not with his brother, shall not come, till he hath paid the last farthing†*; is either a literal prison of this world, or the prison of hell, in the next, out of which the contentious and uncharitable shall never come, for they can never pay the last farthing. *The spirits in prison, to whom St. Peter saith, Christ by his spirit preached, he saith also, were the disobedient in the days of Noah‡, with whom his spirit strove§, whilst they were on this earth: and who for their disobedience were sent, not to purgatory, but to a worse confinement. When St. Paul bids men take heed, how they build on the foundation of Christianity; adding, that the fire shall try every man's work; and if any man's work shall be burnt, he shall suffer loss; but still shall be saved, yet so as by fire||*: he means, that persons must not mix doctrines of their own invention with the Gospel of Christ, which in this instance, amongst others, those of the church of Rome have done: for when *the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven in flaming fire¶*, to

* Matth. xii. 31, 32.

† 1 Pet. iii. 18, 19, 20.

|| 1 Cor. iii. 10—15.

† Matth. v. 26.

§ Gen. vi. 3.

¶ 2 Thess. i. 7.

judge the world, such notions will not stand the trial; they that hold them will be losers by them; and though still they may be saved, it may be with difficulty and danger; as a person escapes, when his house is burning. When, lastly, many of the ancient Christians prayed for the dead: besides that they had no warrant for so doing, it was only for the completion of their happiness, whom they apprehended to be already in paradise: it was for the apostles, saints, and martyrs; for the blessed Virgin herself: whom they certainly did not think to be in purgatory. And observe, if they prayed for them, they did not pray to them. Purgatory then is nothing, but an imaginary place, invented by men, to give bad persons hope, and good persons dread of being put into it; that they may get what they can from both, by pretending to deliver them out of it again. Fear not therefore such vain terrors. *The souls of the righteous are in the hands of the Lord: and there shall no torment touch them**.

Those of the wicked, on the contrary, as they are to be hereafter with the devils, we may justly believe are, like them, now *delivered into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgement†*: and though the worst of their sufferings shall not begin, till the day of judgement comes; yet they are represented by our Saviour, as being, instantly after death, in a place where they are *tormented‡*: and undoubtedly, the loss of their past pleasures and gains, remorse for their past follies and crimes, despair of pardon, and the fearful looking for of judgement and fiery indignation, which shall devour them§; cannot but make their

* Wisd. iii. 1.

† Luke xvi. 25.

‡ 2 Pet. ii. 4.

§ Heb. x. 27.

intermediate state intensely miserable: and what then will their final one be! God grant, that thinking frequently and seriously of these awful subjects *we may know, and consider, in this our day, the things that belong to our peace, before they are for ever hid from our eyes*!*

* Luke xix. 42.

LECTURE XVII.

C R E E D.

Article XI, XII. Part II. *The Resurrection of the Body, and the Life everlasting.*

UNDER the two last articles of the Creed, as I have already observed to you, are comprehended four points of doctrine :

- I. That the souls of all men continue after death.
- II. That their bodies shall at the last day be raised up, and re-united to them.
- III. That both souls and bodies of good persons shall enjoy everlasting happiness.
- IV. That those of the wicked shall undergo everlasting punishment.

The first of these being the foundation of all the rest; I chose to enlarge on the proof and explanation of it. Now I proceed to shew,

II. That the bodies of all men shall be raised up again, and re-united to their souls. This reason alone cannot prove: and accordingly the heathen were ignorant of it: but it carries with it no contradiction to reason in the least. For God is infinite, both in power and knowledge: and it is unquestionably as possible to bring together and enliven the scattered parts of our body again, as it was to make

them out of nothing, and give them life, at first. And therefore, since we must acknowledge the original formation of our bodies to have been of God, we have abundant cause to be assured, that he can, after death, form them anew, whenever he pleases. And that this will be done, was probably implied in that general promise, made to our first parents, that *the seed of the woman, our blessed Lord, should bruise the serpent's head**; destroy his power; and consequently take away the curse, under which he had brought mankind. For as part of that curse consists in the death of the body, it cannot be completely taken away, but by the resurrection of the body. In aftertimes, Abraham, we find, had so strong a belief of the possibility of this article, that he was willing, on the divine command, to sacrifice his son: *reasoning*, as the Epistle to the Hebrews teaches us, *that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead†*. And indeed he could not have been induced to this, by any other reasoning. God had promised him, that by his son Isaac he should have a numerous posterity: and this promise he firmly believed. Now he must know, it could never be fulfilled, if Isaac was to be sacrificed, but by his rising again: and therefore he must be persuaded, that he would rise again for that purpose. On proceeding somewhat further in the sacred history, we find Job expressing himself on this head, if we at all understand his words, in very strong terms: *I know that my Redeemer liveth; and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth. And though, after my skin, this body be destroyed ‡; yet in my flesh shall I see God§*. Again,

* Gen. iii. 15.

† Heb. xi. 19.

‡ So, I think, the original should be translated.

§ Job xix. 25, 26.

when Elijah was taken up alive into heaven, this must surely give an expectation, that the body as well as the soul, was to partake of future happiness. And when the several persons, mentioned in the Old Testament, were raised up to life in this world, it could not but increase the probability of a general resurrection in the next. Then in the book of Daniel, we have an express declaration, that a time should come, when *they who slept in the dust of the earth, should awake: some to everlasting life, and some to shame, and everlasting contempt* *. And indeed, when those, whom we commonly call the Three Children, in the former part of that book, tell the king, that even though it were not the pleasure of God to deliver them from the fiery furnace, yet *would they not serve his gods* †; on what other principle could they so rationally, or did they so probably say this, as on that, which the brethren in the book of Maccabees explicitly profess? There, one of them, stretching forth his hands to the torment, saith, *These I had from heaven: and for his laws I despise them; and from him I hope to receive them again*. Another, *It is good, being put to death by men, to look for hope from God; to be raised up again by him*. And lastly, the mother declares to her children: *I neither gave you birth, nor life; nor was it I, that formed your members: but doubtless the Creator of the world, who formed the generation of man, and found out the beginning of all things, will also of his mercy give you breath and life again; as you now regard not yourselves for his law's sake* ‡. In the later times indeed of the Jewish church, not a few denied this doctrine: but much the greater number held it; *allowing, as*

* Dan. xii. 2.

† Dan. iii. 17, 18.

‡ 2 Macc. vii. 10—23.

St. Paul acquainted Felix, *that there shall be a resurrection, both of the just and unjust* *.

Yet still, the full confirmation of it was reserved for our Saviour to give: who, having in his lifetime raised up three several persons, as you may read at large in the Evangelists, raised up himself from the dead, in the last place; to afford us the strongest demonstration possible, that he both can and will raise us all at the day of judgement.

This great event will doubtless, when it comes to pass, exhibit to the whole universe an astonishing evidence of the power and the truth of God: who may easily have many reasons for restoring our bodies, which we apprehend not; besides those, which in some measure we do apprehend: that the soul of man being originally, and in the state of innocence, united to a body, is probably capable of completer perception and action, and consequently of higher degrees of reward or punishment, in that state, than a separate one: or at least will be so, with such a body, as in the next life shall be allotted to it: and likewise that our belief of enjoying happiness, or suffering misery, in both parts of our frame hereafter, must naturally incline us to preserve the purity of both here: *abstaining, or cleansing ourselves, from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, and perfecting holiness in the fear of God* †.

The truth and reasonableness of the doctrine being thus established; it ought to be no objection, that several particulars relating to it exceed our comprehension. *How the dead are raised*, it is sufficient that God knows; and by no means wonderful, that we do not: for we scarce know, how any one part of the course of nature is carried on. And as to the

* Acts xxiv. 15.

† 2 Cor. vii. 1.

inquiry, that follows this in St. Paul, *with what body do they come* * ? we are taught, they shall be so far the same bodies, that every one shall have properly his own, and be truly the same person he was before: but so far different, that those of good persons will be subject to none of the sufferings, none of the infirmities, none of the necessities of this life. For, to use the same Apostle's words, *What is sown in corruption, shall be raised in incorruption: what is sown in dishonour, shall be raised in glory: what is sown a natural body, shall be raised a spiritual body* †. But the particular nature of spiritual bodies, or the distinction that shall be made in them, between the more eminent in goodness and their inferiors, as *one star differeth from another star in glory* ‡; these things we are not qualified, in our present state, to understand. And it is some degree of weakness, even to ask questions about them: but would be much greater, to attempt giving answers. I shall therefore only add, that such of the good, as *are found alive at the coming of the Lord* §, *shall not sleep, or die, and therefore cannot rise again; but shall be changed* || into the same likeness with those who do: as the Scripture hath plainly taught us. But what the appearance and condition of the bodies of wicked persons will be at the resurrection, it hath not, I think, afforded us the least knowledge, further than is implied in the description of their punishment, of which I shall treat before I conclude: and let us be so wise as to dread the terrors, that are thus concealed from us.

Concerning the general judgement, which is to come immediately after the resurrection, I have spoken under the article of the Creed, which relates

* 1 Cor. xv. 35. † 1 Cor. xv. 42, 43, 44. ‡ Ibid. 41.

§ 1 Thess. iv. 15. || 1 Cor. xv. 51.

to it: and therefore proceed now to the consequences of that judgement, by shewing you,

III. That both the souls and bodies of the pious and virtuous will enjoy *everlasting life*: that is, in their case, happiness. For a happy life being the only one, that is a blessing: life, in Scripture, very commonly signifies felicity; and death, misery.

Now that good persons will, sooner or later, be recompensed by a good God, is an undoubted truth. But then as no one is perfectly good, and many have been very bad: there is room for much doubt, who hath a right to apply this comfort to himself, and who not. But what reason might be at a loss to determine, the Scripture hath cleared up; and entitled all to pardon and reward, who truly repent of their sins; and sincerely, though not without mixtures of human frailty, obey God, from a principle of faith in Christ, and in reliance on the grace of the Holy Ghost. Still, after this, reason unassisted can only guess, of what nature, of what degree, of what duration, this reward will be. And here once more revelation interposes, and most happily enlightens us. *For eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit**. Not that any exact account is given us, of the particulars, that shall make up our future bliss: for in all probability we are not capable of receiving such a one: our present faculties are not fitted for it.

But however, in general, our Saviour tells us, we shall be *as the angels of God in heaven* †. Nay, his beloved disciple St. John tells us, that though *it doth not yet appear what we shall be, this we know, that*

* 1 Cor. ii. 9, 10.

† Matth. xxii. 30.

*when God shall appear, we shall be like him**. Now to be like God implies, in few words, every thing desirable, that ever so many words can express. Further yet, a voice from heaven proclaims, in the Revelation, that we shall be free, in that state, from every thing, that is uneasy: for *God shall wipe away all tears from our eyes, and there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain†*. And multitudes of Scriptures assure us, that we shall enjoy every thing, that is delightful: for they use the noblest and strongest images, of all that in this world is great and splendid, and capable of giving the most exalted and most refined satisfactions, to represent that happiness figuratively, which cannot be literally described.

Our vile bodies shall be fashioned like unto the glorious body‡ of our blessed Lord; which, in his temporary transfiguration here on earth, shone as the sun, and his raiment was white, as the light§. They shall be freed from all tendency to decay or disorder; and become unwearied instruments for every excellent purpose, to that better part, which they used to *press down||*. They shall doubtless also have such gratifications allotted to them, as will suit, though not their present gross nature, yet their future spiritual condition: and be adorned with all the dignity and beauty, that ought naturally to accompany absolute innocence, universal love, divine favour, and heavenly joy.

Then for our minds, when once *the spirits of just men are made perfect¶*, as they shall be, in every thing worthy and amiable: what pleasure must we take in meeting again the dear objects of our former

* 1 John iii. 2.

† Rev. xxi. 4.

‡ Phil. iii. 21.

§ Matth. xvii. 2.

|| Wisd. ix. 15.

¶ Heb. xii. 23.

affections, now become infinitely more deserving of them; in conversing with all the great and good persons that ever were, concerning the various scenes of this present world, and the blessed exchange that we have made of it for a better: in learning from them, and that *innumerable company of angels**, which minister to God's will, continually new instruction, concerning all his works of nature, providence, and grace! What surprising advances must we make by these means in most pleasing knowledge! what rapturous engagements in mutual friendship! nor can it be questioned but such employments too, however beyond our reach to guess at them now, will be assigned to each person, as shall produce him high honour, and equal happiness. But above all happiness will be that of incessantly seeing and loving God, and feeling that we are beloved by him. Thus *shall we be abundantly satisfied with the fatness of his house, and made to drink the river of his pleasures: for with him is the fountain of life†, in his presence is fulness of joy, and at his right hand there are pleasures for evermore‡*. Were we to have a prospect, that our felicity would end: the more exquisite our enjoyments were, the more melancholy our reflections might be. But in the word of God we find repeated assurances, that *the righteous shall go into life eternal§; that the inheritance, reserved in heaven for us, is incorruptible, and fadeth not away||*. Nay indeed, as there will always be room for finite creatures, to advance without end towards him, who is infinite; and as every improvement in perfection must be of itself a fresh delight, and will certainly be re-

* Heb. xii. 22.

† Psal. xxxvi. 8, 9.

‡ Psal. xvi. 11.

§ Matth. xxv. 46.

Rom. ii. 7.

|| 1 Pet. i. 4.

warded by our Maker with fresh bounties, we have reason to conclude that our happiness, far from ever ending, will be continually increasing to all eternity.

It is true, the greatest, the ablest, the best of us merit no such blessedness: far from it. But still, what *God only wise** hath not thought too much to promise, the meanest and most ignorant may humbly expect. They are as capable, as others, of love and duty to him, good-will to their fellow-creatures, and moral government of themselves. Now these are the things which he values; the true seeds of future bliss; and whoever cultivates them faithfully, will be sure to reap their fruit, each in proportion to his improvement. And thus every one shall be happy to the height of his capacity, neither despising those below him, nor envying those above him. But, though we ought to dwell upon this most delightful and useful subject, in our thoughts, much more than we do, we must now turn our eyes from it to a very different view, set before us:

IV. That the souls and bodies of the wicked shall undergo everlasting punishment.

This, it must be owned, is not explicitly mentioned in the Creed. And God had rather, that we should be moved to obey him by love, and hope of his favour, than by fear of his anger. But both motives are implied in this article. For though life in Scripture more especially means happiness; yet its original sense is only continuance in being, whether happy or miserable: and as the wicked are raised, and judged, in order to suffer what they have deserved, so they must live afterwards for the same purpose.

* Rom. xvi. 27. 1 Tim. i. 17. Jude, ver. 25.

That disobedience to God can never end well, is the plainest truth in the world: for nothing is hid from his knowledge, nothing can escape his power: he is holy as well as good; besides that goodness itself requires the incorrigibly bad to be made examples, for the sake of deterring others. Yet lest, after all, they should promise themselves that he will spare them, he hath solemnly and repeatedly declared, that he will not. In this world, however, many such come off, to all appearance, with impunity: committing much evil, and enjoying much good. And they, who are punished, are often but slightly punished; and seldom according to the degree of their crimes: for the deliberate and artful sinners, who are the worst, usually fare best here below. As sure therefore as God is just and true, another state remains, in which all this will be set right.

What sufferings, in particular, the divine justice will then inflict on unpardoned sinners, reason cannot determine: and revelation hath given us only general and figurative descriptions of them; but such descriptions, as are beyond all things terrible: and I shall lay them before you, not in my own words, but those of holy writ. The Judge of all shall say unto them, *Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels**. There they shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out, without mixture, into the cup of his indignation, and shall be tormented with fire and brimstone; and the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever, and they have no rest, day nor night†: their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched‡.

* Matt. xxv. 41.

† Rev. xiv. 10, 11.

‡ Isa. lxvi. 24. Mark ix. 44, 46, 48.

How severe soever these denunciations may appear to us, assuredly the threatenings of God will not be vain terrors. We are partial and incompetent judges in our own case: prone to flatter and deceive ourselves. But he knows exactly what sin deserves, and what the honour of his government requires; from his declarations therefore we are to learn our fate. *He hath set before us life and death: and whether we like, shall be given us**. If therefore the latter be our wilful choice, in which we obstinately persist; what wonder, if we are left to it? For sin and misery must and will be companions for ever. Not that in any case, the anger of God shall prevail over his justice: but the degree of each person's condemnation shall be so exactly proportioned to that of his guilt, that when the eyes of sinners, which here they endeavour to shut, are opened, as they shall be hereafter, to see what their deeds have merited, *every mouth shall be stopped†, and all flesh be silent before the Lord‡*. For every circumstance, that can either aggravate, or excuse, will be impartially weighed; and *some be accordingly beaten with many stripes, and some with few§*. But what the lowest degree of the Almighty's final vengeance may amount to, God forbid we should any of us try: for whoever sins, purposely or carelessly, in hopes of a small punishment, will for that very reason deserve a heavy one.

Let us all therefore make the use that we ought, both of the terrors and the mercies of the Lord; awing ourselves by the former from transgressing our duty, and encouraging ourselves by the latter to the

* Eccles. xv. 17.

† Rom. iii. 19.

‡ Zech. ii. 15.

§ Luke xii. 47, 48.

utmost diligence in performing it: that so we may pass through life with comfort, meet death with cheerfulness, and having faithfully served God in this world, be eternally and abundantly rewarded by him in the next.

FIRST COMMANDMENT.

The whole duty of man consists in three points: renouncing what God hath forbidden us, believing what he hath taught us, and doing what he hath required of us: which accordingly are the things promised in our name at our baptism. The former two I have explained to you. And therefore I proceed at present to the third, which God requires to be done. Now the things which God requires to be done are of two sorts: either such as have been always the duty of all men: or such as are peculiarly the duty of Christians. And our Catechism very properly treats of the former sort first, comprehending them under those ten commandments which were delivered by the Creator of the world, on mount Sinai, in a most awful manner, as you may read in the 19th and 20th chapters of Exodus. For though indeed they were then given to the Jews particularly; yet the things contained in them are such as all mankind from the beginning were bound to observe. And therefore, even under the Mosaic dispensation, they and the tables on which they were engraven, and the

LECTURE XVIII.

FIRST COMMANDMENT.

THE whole duty of man consists in three points: renouncing what God hath forbidden us, believing what he hath taught us, and doing what he hath required of us: which accordingly are the things promised in our name at our baptism. The former two I have explained to you. And therefore I proceed at present to the third.

Now the things, which God requires to be done, are of two sorts: either such, as have been always the duty of all men: or such as are peculiarly the duty of Christians. And our Catechism very properly treats of the former sort first, comprehending them under those ten commandments, which were delivered by the Creator of the world, on mount Sinai, in a most awful manner, as you may read in the 19th and 20th chapters of Exodus. For though indeed they were then given to the Jews particularly, yet the things contained in them are such, as all mankind from the beginning were bound to observe*. And therefore, even under the Mosaic dispensation, they, and the tables on which they were engraven, and the

* Decem sermones illi in tabulis nihil novum docent, sed quod oblitteratum fuerat admonent. Novatian. de lib. Judaicis, c. 3.

ark in which they were put, were distinguished from the rest of God's ordinances by a peculiar regard, as containing the covenant of the Lord*. And though the Mosaic dispensation be now at an end, yet concerning these moral precepts of it our Saviour declares, that *one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled*†. Accordingly we find both him, and his Apostles, quoting these ten commandments, as matter of perpetual obligation to Christians: who are now, as the Jews were formerly, *the Israel of God*‡.

Indeed the whole New Testament, and especially the sermon of our blessed Lord on the mount, instructs us to carry their obligation farther, that is, to more points, than either the Jews, a people of gross understanding and carnal dispositions, commonly took into consideration; or their prophets were commissioned distinctly to represent to them: the wisdom of God foreseeing, that it would only increase their guilt: and further indeed, than the words of the commandment, if taken strictly, express. But the reason is, that being visibly intended for a summary of human duty, they both may, and must, be understood, by those who are capable of penetrating into the depth of their meaning, to imply more than they express. And therefore, to comprehend their full extent, it will be requisite to observe the following rules. Where any sin is forbidden in them, the opposite duty is implicitly enjoined: and where any duty is enjoined, the opposite sin is implicitly forbidden. Where the highest degree of any thing evil is

* Exod. xxxiv. 28. Deut. iv. 13. ix. 9, 11, 15. Josh. iii. 11. 1 Kings viii. 9, 21. 2 Chron. v. 10. vi. 11.

† Matt. v. 18.

‡ Gal. vi. 16.

prohibited; whatever is faulty in the same kind, though in a lower degree, is by consequence prohibited. And where one instance of virtuous behaviour is commanded, every other, that hath the same nature, and same reason for it, is understood to be commanded too. What we are expected to abstain from, we are expected to avoid, as far as we can, all temptations to it, and occasions of it: and what we are expected to practise, we are expected to use all fit means, that may better enable us to practise it. All, that we are bound to do ourselves, we are bound, on fitting occasions, to exhort and assist others to do, when it belongs to them; and all, that we are bound not to do, we are to tempt nobody else to do, but keep them back from it, as much as we have opportunity. The ten commandments, excepting two that required enlargement, are delivered in few words: which brief manner of speaking hath great majesty in it. But explaining them according to these rules; which are natural and rational in themselves, favoured by ancient Jewish writers*, authorized by our blessed Saviour, and certainly designed by the makers of the Catechism to be used in expounding it; we shall find, that there is no part of the moral law, but may be fitly ranked under them: as will appear by what shall be said, in speaking separately on each commandment.

Before them all, is placed a general preface: expressing, first, the authority of him who gave them, *I am the Lord thy God*: secondly, his goodness to those whom he enjoined to observe them; *who brought*

* Χρη δε μηδ' εκεινο αγνοειν, οτι οι ι λογοι κεφαλαια νομων εισι, των εν ειδει παρ' ολην την νομοθεσιαν εν ταις ιεραις βιβλοις αναγραφεντων. Philo de Decal. The ten commandments are חַוְּשִׁי חֻרְחֻת אֱמֶרָה. See Cozri, p. 44. also there, p. 107.

thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Now the authority of God over us Christians, is as great as it could be over the Jews. And his goodness is much greater in freeing us from the bondage of sin, and opening to us the heavenly land of promise, than it was in leading them, from Egyptian slavery, to the earthly Canaan: though indeed this deliverance, having made so fresh and so strong an impression on them, was the fittest to be mentioned at that time.

The ten commandments being originally written, by the finger of God himself, on two tables of stone; and consisting of two parts, our duty to our Maker, and to our fellow-creatures; which we can never perform as we ought, if we neglect that we owe to ourselves; the first four are usually called duties of the first table; the six last, of the second. And our Saviour, in effect, divides them accordingly, when he reduces them to these: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, with all thy heart; and thy neighbour, as thyself**.

The first commandment is, *Thou shalt have none other Gods but me.*

The same reasons, which prove that God is, prove that there is but one God. The imagination of two or more beings, each perfect and each infinite, is at first sight groundless. For one such being is sufficient to produce and govern every thing else; and therefore more than one can never be proved by reason: and yet, if there were more, all men would surely have had some way of knowing it: and till we have, we are not to believe it. Indeed we have strong reasons to believe the contrary. For if there is no difference between these several supposed beings, they are

* Matt. xxii. 37, 39.

but one and the same. And if there is any difference, one must be less perfect than the other, and therefore imperfect, and therefore not God. Besides, as the whole course of nature appears to proceed uniformly under one direction; there is, without question, only one director; not several, thwarting each other.

And what reason teaches in this matter, Scripture every where confirms: forbidding us to worship, or believe in, any other deity, than the one Maker and Ruler of heaven and earth; who hath manifested himself to all men by the works of his hands; to the patriarchs and Jews, by the revelations recorded in Moses and the prophets; and finally to Christians, by his Son our Lord: who, in a way and manner to us inconceivable, is one with the Father; and the Holy Spirit with both: as I have already shewn you, in discoursing on the Creed.

There being then this one only God: the commandment before us enjoins,

I. That we have him for our God.

II. That we have no other.

I. That we have him: that is, think so of him, and behave so to him, as his infinite perfection, and our absolute dependence on him, require: which general duty towards God, our Catechism very justly branches out into the following particulars:

First, That we *believe in him*. *For he that cometh to God, must believe that he is**. The foundation on which this belief stands, I have shewn in its proper place. And the great thing, in which it consists, is, that we fix firmly in our minds, recall frequently to our memories, and imprint deeply upon our hearts, an awful persuasion of the being and presence, the

* Heb. xi. 6.

power and justice, the holiness and truth, of this great Lord of all. The consequence of this will be,

Secondly, That we *fear him*. For such attributes as these, duly considered, must fill the most innocent creatures with reverence and self-abasement. But sinful and guilty ones, as we know ourselves to have been, have cause to feel yet stronger emotions in their souls from such a meditation: apprehensions of his displeasure, and solicitude for his pardon; leading us naturally to that penitent care of our hearts, and lives, on which he hath graciously assured us that, through faith in Christ Jesus, we shall be forgiven. And then, gratitude for his mercy will prompt us to the

Third duty towards him, which our Catechism specifies, that we *love him*: *the fear of the Lord* being, as the son of Sirach declares, *the beginning of his love**. For whenever we come to reflect seriously on that goodness, which hath given us all the comforts that we enjoy; that pity which offers pardon, on most equitable terms, for all the faults that we have committed; that grace, which enables us to perform every duty acceptably; and that infinite bounty, which rewards our imperfect performances with eternal happiness: we cannot but feel ourselves bound to love such a benefactor, *with all our heart, and with all our mind, with all our soul, and all our strength*; to rejoice in being under his government; *make our boast of him all the day long*†; and choose him for *our portion for ever*‡. A mind, thus affected, would be uneasy without paying the regard set down in the

Fourth place, which is, *to worship him*: to acknowledge our dependence, and pay our homage to

* Eccclus. xxv. 12.

† Psal. xliv. 8.

‡ Psal. lxxiii. 26.

him; both in private, to preserve and improve a sense of religion in ourselves; and in public, to support and spread it in the world. The first part of worship, mentioned in the Catechism, and the first in a natural order of things, is *giving him thanks*. God originally made and fitted all his creatures for happiness: if any of them have made themselves miserable, this doth not lessen their obligation of thankfulness to him; but his continuing still good, and abounding in forgiveness and liberality, increases that obligation unspeakably. With a grateful sense of his past favours is closely connected, *putting our trust in him* for the time to come. And justly doth the Catechism require it to be our *whole trust*. For his power and goodness are infinite: those of every creature may fail us; and all that they can possibly do for us, proceeds ultimately from him. Now a principal expression of reliance on God is, petitioning for his help. For if we *pray in faith**, we shall live so too. And therefore trusting in him, which might have been made a separate head, is included in this of worship; and put between the first part of it, *giving thanks to him*; and the second, *calling upon him*: according to that of the Psalmist; *O Lord, in thee have I trusted: let me never be confounded†*. To call upon God, is to place ourselves in his presence; and there to beg of him, for ourselves and each other, with unfeigned humility and submission, such assistance in our duty, such provision for our wants, and such defence against our enemies, of every kind, as infinite wisdom sees fit for us all. After this evident obligation, follows a

Fifth not less so: *to honour his holy name and word*: not presuming even to speak of the great God in a

* James i. 6. v. 15.

† Psal. xxxi. 1.

negligent way; but preserving, in every expression and action, that reverence to him, which is due: paying, not a superstitious, but a decent and respectful regard, to whatever bears any peculiar relation to him; his day, his church, his ministers: but especially honouring his holy word, the law of our lives and the foundation of our hopes, by a diligent study and firm belief of what it teaches; and that universal obedience to what it commands, which our Catechism reserves for the

Sixth and last, as it is undoubtedly the greatest, thing: *to serve him truly all the days of our life.* Obedience is the end of faith and fear; the proof of love; the foundation of trust; the necessary qualification, to make worship, and honour of every kind, acceptable. This therefore must complete the whole, that we *walk in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless**, not thinking any one so difficult, as to despair of it; or so small, as to despise it; and never be *weary in well-doing: for we shall reap in due season, if we faint not†*; and *he alone shall be saved, that endureth to the end‡*. But we must now proceed to observe,

II. That, as this commandment requires us to acknowledge the one true God; so it forbids us to acknowledge any other.

Both before, and long after the law of Moses was given, the generality of the world entertained a belief, that there were many gods: a great number of beings, superior to men, that amongst them governed the world, and were fit objects of devotion. To these, as their own fancy, or the folly or fraud of others led them, they ascribed more or less both of power and goodness; attributed to several of them the vilest

* Luke i. 6.

† Gal. vi. 9.

‡ Matt. xxiv. 13.

actions, that could be; supposed them to preside, some over one nation or city, some over another; worshipped a few or a multitude of them, just as they pleased; and that with a strange variety of ceremonies, absurd and impious, immoral and barbarous. Amidst this crowd of imaginary deities, the real one was almost entirely forgot: false religion and irreligion divided the world between them: and wickedness of every kind was authorized by both. The cure for these dreadful evils must plainly be, restoring the old true notion of one only God, ruling the world himself: which therefore was the first great article of the Jewish faith, as it is of ours.

Christians can hardly in words profess a plurality of gods: but in reality they do, if they suppose the divine nature common to more than one being; or think our Saviour, or the Holy Spirit, mere creatures, and yet pay them divine honours. But besides these, we apprehend the church of Rome to sin against the present commandment, when they pray to angels, to the holy Virgin and the saints, as being able every where to hear them; and having not only temporal relief, but grace and salvation in their power to bestow. Nay, were the plea which they sometimes make, a true one; that they only pray to them to intercede with God; yet it would be an insufficient one. For there is no reason to believe, that they have any knowledge of such prayers: or if they had, as *there is one God*, so there is *one Mediator between God and man**. And we have neither precept, nor allowance, nor example, in the whole Bible, of applying to any other, amongst all the absent inhabitants of the invisible world.

But there are several ways more of transgressing

* 1 Tim. ii. 5.

this commandment. If we ascribe things which befall us, to fate, or to chance, or to nature; and mean any thing real by these words, different from that order, which our Maker's providence hath appointed; we set up in effect other gods besides him. If we imagine the influence of stars, the power of spirits, in short any power whatever, to be independent on him, and capable of doing the least matter, more than he judges proper to permit that it should: this also is having more gods than one. If we set up ourselves, or others, above him; and obey, or expect any one else to obey, man rather than God; here again is in practice, though not in speculation, the same crime. If we love, or *trust in uncertain riches*, more than *the living God**; this is that *covetousness, which is idolatry*†. If we pursue unlawful sensual pleasures, instead of delighting in his precepts; this is making a *god of our belly*‡. In a word, if we allow ourselves to practise any wickedness whatever, we serve, by so doing, the *false god of this world*§, instead of the true God of heaven, besides whom we ought not to have any other: and therefore to whom alone be, as is most due, all honour and obedience, now and for ever. Amen.

* 1 Tim. vi. 17.

† Col. iii. 5.

‡ Phil. iii. 19.

§ 2 Cor. iv. 4.

LECTURE XIX.

SECOND COMMANDMENT.

WE are now come to the second Commandment, which the church of Rome would persuade men is only part of the first. But they plainly relate to different things. The first appoints, that the object of our worship be only the true God; the next, that we worship not him under any visible resemblance or form. And besides, if we join these two into one, there will be no tenth left; though the Scripture itself hath called them ten*: to avoid which absurdity, the Romanists have committed another, by dividing the tenth into two. And they might as well have divided it into six or seven; as I shall shew you, in discoursing upon it. For these reasons, the oldest and most considerable, both of the Jewish and Christian writers, who distinguish the Commandments by their number, distinguish them in the same manner that we do. Perhaps it may seem of small consequence, how that before us is counted, provided it be not omitted. And we must own, that some persons before the rise of popery, and some protestants since the reformation, have, without any ill design, reckoned it as the papists do. But what both the

* Exod. xxxiv. 28. Deut. iv. 13. x. 4.

former have done, by mere mistake, these last endeavoured to defend out of policy: well knowing, that when once they have got the second to be considered as only a part of the first, they can much more easily pass it over, as a part of no great separate meaning or importance, than if it were thought a distinct precept. And accordingly, in some of their small books of devotion, they pass it over, and leave it out entirely*. But it deserves, as I shall now shew you, another sort of regard.

The prophet Isaiah very justly puts the question: *To whom will ye liken God? Or what likeness will ye compare unto him†?* He is an invisible Spirit: therefore representing him in a visible shape, is representing him to be such as he is not. He is every where present: therefore a figure, confined by its nature to a particular place, must incline persons to a wrong conception of him. He is the living, wise, and powerful governor of the world: therefore to express him by a dead lump of matter must be doing him dishonour. We are unable indeed, at best, to speak or think worthily of him: and we cannot well avoid using some of the same phrases, concerning him and his actions, which we do concerning the parts and motions of our own bodies. But we can very well avoid making visible images of him: and the plainest reason teaches, that we ought to avoid it; because they lower and debase men's notions of God; lead the weaker sort into superstitious and foolish apprehensions and practices; and provoke those of better abi-

* This they do in the Latin office of the Virgin, and in some of their English devotional books. Indeed there they omit likewise all but the first sentence of our fourth commandment, and the promise in our fifth; perhaps to palliate their preceding omission.

† Isa. xl. 18.

lities, from a contempt of such childish representations, to disregard and ridicule the religion, into which they are adopted.

Therefore, in the early ages of the world, many of the heathens themselves had no images of the Deity. Particularly, the ancient Persians had none*. Nor had the first Romans; Numa, their second king, having, as the philosopher Plutarch, himself a Roman magistrate, though a Greek by birth, tells us, *forbidden them to represent God in the form, either of a man or any other animal. And accordingly, he saith, they had neither any painted nor engraved figure of him for one hundred and seventy years; but temples, void of any image of any shape: thinking it impious to liken a superior nature to inferior ones; and impossible to attain the notion of God otherwise, than by the understanding†. And Varro, one of the most learned of their own authors, after acknowledging, that during more than one hundred and seventy years they worshipped the gods without any visible representation, added, that had they never had any, their religion had been the purer: for which opinion, amongst other evidences, he brought that of the Jewish people: and scrupled not to say in conclusion that they who first set up images of the gods in the several nations, lessened the reverence of their countrymen towards them, and introduced error concerning them‡. So much wiser were these heathen Romans in this point, than the Christian Romans are now.*

* Herodot. l. 1. § 131. † Plut. in Num. p. 65. Ed. Par. 1624.

‡ Aug. de Civ. Dei, l. 4. c. 31. Dionysius Halicarnassensis indeed saith, l. 2. c. 15. p. 87. that Romulus erected images. But as he mentions them no otherwise than incidentally, amongst the provisions made by that prince for divine worship, his assertion is not so much to be regarded, as the two contrary more formal ones. Or we may suppose that Numa took them down.

But when some of the eastern kingdoms had fallen into this corruption, particularly the Egyptians, who claimed the invention as an honour*, the great care of God was to preserve or free his own people from it. The words of this commandment express that purpose very strongly; and very clearly forbid not only making and worshipping representations of false gods, but any representation of God at all. And to shew yet more fully, that even those of the true God are prohibited by it, Moses, in Deuteronomy, immediately after mentioning the delivery of the ten commandments, adds with respect to the second: *Take therefore good heed unto yourselves: for ye saw no manner of similitude on the day that the Lord spake unto you in Horeb, out of the midst of the fire: lest ye corrupt yourselves, and make you the similitude of any figure†.* And when the Israelites made a golden calf in the wilderness, though evidently their design was to represent by it, not a false object of worship, but *the Lord* (in the original it is Jehovah) who brought them out of the land of Egypt; yet they were charged with it, and punished for it, as a breach of their covenant with God: and Moses accordingly broke, on that occasion, the two tables of the commandments, which were, on their part, the conditions of that covenant‡. Again, in after-times, when the kings of Israel set up the same representation of the same true God at Dan and Bethel; the Scripture constantly speaks of it, as the leading sin, from which all the rest of their idolatries, and at last their utter destruction, proceeded. For, from worshipping the true God by an image, they soon came to worship the images of false gods too; and from thence fell into all sorts of superstition, and all sorts of wickedness.

* Herodot. l. 2. § 4. † Deut. iv. 12—15, 16. ‡ Exod. xxxiii.

Yet the church of Rome will have it, that we may now very lawfully and commendably practise what the Jews were forbidden. But observe: not only the Jews but the heathens also, who never were subject to the law of Moses, are condemned in Scripture for this mode of worship. For St. Paul's accusation against them is, that *when they knew God, they glorified him not as God; but became vain in their imaginations; and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image, made like to corruptible man**. And in another place he argues with the Athenians thus: *Forasmuch as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at: but now he commandeth all men every where to repent†*.

Where then is, or can be, the allowance of that image-worship in the Bible, for which multitudes of the Romish communion are as earnest, as if it was commanded there? Nor is antiquity more favourable to it, than Scripture. For the primitive Christians abhorred the very mention of images: holding even the trade of making them to be utterly unlawful. And indeed pretending to frame a likeness of God the Father Almighty, *whom no man ever hath seen or can see‡*, as some of that church have done, without any censure from the rulers of it, liberal as they are of censures on other occasions, is both a palpable and heinous breach of this commandment. For, though we find in the Old Testament, that an angel hath sometimes appeared, representing his person, as an ambassador doth that of his prince; and though in a vision of the *Ancient of Days*, his garment was white as

* Rom. i. 21, 23.

† Acts xvii. 29, 30.

‡ 1 Tim. vi. 16.

*snow, and the hair of his head like pure wool**; yet these things gave the Jews no right then, and therefore can give us none now, to make other, or even the like, representations of him, contrary to his express order.

Our blessed Saviour indeed existed in a human form, but we have not the least knowledge of any one part, or feature, of his person. And therefore all attempts of exhibiting a likeness of him are utterly vain. Besides, he hath appointed a very different memorial of himself, the sacrament of his body and blood: and we ought to think that a sufficient one. These others can serve no good purpose, but what, by due meditation, may be attained as well without them. And there is great and evident danger of evil in them, from that unhappy proneness of mankind to fix their thoughts and affections on sensible objects, instead of raising them higher; which if any one doth not feel in himself, he must however see in others. But particularly in this case, long experience hath given sad proof, that from setting up images of our gracious Redeemer, the holy virgin, and other saints, to remind persons of them and their virtues, the world hath run on to pay such imprudent and extravagant honours to the figures themselves, as by degrees have arisen to the grossest idolatry.

Indeed some of the popish writers tell us, that they do not worship their images. Yet others of them, who have never been condemned for it, say quite the contrary, that they do worship them; and with the very same degree of worship, which they pay to the persons represented by them. Nay, their public authorized books of prayers and ceremonies not only

* Dan. vii. 9.

appoint the crucifix to be adored, but in form declare, that divine adoration is due to it. And accordingly they petition it, in so many words, expressly directed to the very *wood*, as *their only hope*, to *increase the joy and grace of the godly*, and *blot out the sins of the wicked**.

But let us suppose them to pay only an inferior honour to images, and to worship the Holy Trinity and the saints by them. Having no ground, or permission, to pray at all to saints departed, they certainly have none to use images for enlivening their prayers. If any words can forbid the worship of God, his Son, and Spirit, by images, this commandment forbids it. And if any excuses or distinctions will acquit the papists of transgressing it, the same will acquit the ancient Jews and Heathens also. For if many of the former mean only, that their adoration should pass through the image, as it were, to the person, for whom it was made; so did many of the Pagans plead, that the meaning was just the same†: and yet the Scripture accuses them all of idolatry. And if great numbers of the Pagans did absolutely pray to the image itself; so do great numbers of the papists too: and some of their own writers honestly confess and lament it.

But farther: had they little or no regard, as they sometimes pretend, to the image; but only to the person represented by it; why is an image, of the blessed virgin suppose, in one place, so much more frequented than another in a different place, and the

* See Dr. Hickes's Collection of Controversial Discourses, vol. i. p. 47.

† See a remarkable proof of this produced in an Epistle to Mr. Warburton, concerning the Conformity of Rome Pagan and Papal: printed for Roberts, 1748, 8vo. p. 21.

prayers made before it thought to have so much more efficacy?

Upon the whole, therefore, they plainly appear to be guilty of that image-worship, which reason and Scripture condemn. Nor do they so much as alledge either any command or express allowance for it. And yet they have pronounced a curse upon all who reject it.

But let us go on, from the prohibition, to the reasons given for it in the commandment. The first is a very general, but a very awful one. *For the Lord thy God is a jealous God*: not jealous for himself, lest he should suffer for the follies of his creatures: that cannot be: but jealous for us, for his spouse the church; lest our notions of his nature and attributes, and consequently of the duties which we owe to him, being depraved, and our minds darkened with superstitious persuasions, and fears, and hopes, we should depart from the fidelity which we have vowed to him, and fall into those grievous immoralities, which St. Paul, in the beginning of his Epistle to the Romans, describes as the consequences of idolatry*, and which have been its consequences in all times and places.

The second reason for this prohibition is more particular: that God will *visit the sins of the fathers upon the children, unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate him*. For, observe, worshipping him irrationally, or in a manner which he hath forbidden, he interprets to be hating him: as it must proceed, wholly or in part, from a dishonourable opinion of him, and tend to spread the like opinion amongst others. Now we are not to understand by this threatening, that God will ever, on account of the sins of

* Rom. i. 21—32.

parents, punish children, in the strict sense of the word *punish*, when they deserve it not*. But in the course of things, established by his providence, it comes to pass, that the sins of one person, or one generation, lead those, who come after, into the same, or other, perhaps greater sins; and so bring upon them double sufferings, partly the fruits of their predecessors' faults, partly of their own. And when successive ages follow one another in crimes, besides the natural bad effects of them, which punish them in some measure, God may justly threaten severer additional corrections, than he would else inflict for their personal transgressions †: both because it may deter men from propagating wickedness down to their posterity; and because, if it doth not, inveterate evils demand a rougher cure. Accordingly here the Israelites are forewarned, that if they fell into idolatry, they and their children would fall, by means of it, into all sorts of abominations: and not only these would of course produce many mischiefs to both, but God would chastise the following generations with heavier strokes, for not taking warning, as they ought to have done, by the misbehaviour and sufferings of the former. Denouncing this intention beforehand must influence them, if any thing could; because it must give them a concern, both for themselves, and their descendants too; for whom, next to themselves, if not equally, men are always interested. And therefore visiting sins upon them to the third and fourth generation seems to be mentioned; because either the life, or however the solicitude, of a

* Against this wrong imagination, Cotta in Cic. de Nat. Deor. l. 3. 6. § 38. inveighs vehemently.

† See Sherlock on Providence, p. 382—390.

person, may be supposed to extend thus far, and seldom further.

This threatening therefore was not only just, but wise and kind, on the supposition, which in general it was reasonable to make, that in such matters children would imitate their wicked progenitors. And whenever any did not; either their innocence would avert the impending evils; or they would be abundantly rewarded in a future life for what the sins of others had brought upon them in the present.

But if God hath threatened to punish the breach of this precept *to the third and fourth generation*, he hath promised to *shew mercy unto thousands*, that is, so long as the world shall endure, *to them that love him and keep his commandments*. To the Jews he fulfilled this engagement, as far as they gave him opportunity, by temporal blessings. And amongst Christians there is ordinarily a fair prospect, that a nation, or a family, pious and virtuous through successive ages, will be recompensed with increasing happiness in every age: which is a powerful motive, both for worshipping God in purity ourselves, and educating those, who are placed under our care, to do so too. Yet it must be acknowledged, that neither the rewards foretold, nor the punishments denounced, in this commandment, are so constantly distributed on earth under the gospel dispensation, as they were under that of the law. But still our Maker as certainly requires, as ever he did, since he *is a Spirit, to be worshipped in spirit and in truth**; and the inducement to it is abundantly sufficient, that the *idolaters*, amongst other sinners, *shall have their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone*†. Not that we are to be forward in apply-

* John iv. 24.

† Rev. xxi. 8.

ing so dreadful a sentence to the case of those, whether Christians or others, who, in this or any respect, offend through such ignorance or mistake, as, for aught we can tell, is excusable. May our heavenly *Father forgive them: for they know not what they do**. But we should be very thankful to him for the light, which he hath caused to shine upon us; and very careful to *walk in it as becomes the children of light, having no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness†*.

* Luke xxiii. 34.

† Ephes. v. 8, 11.

LECTURE XX.

THIRD COMMANDMENT.

THE first commandment having provided that we should worship only the one true God; and the second prohibited worshipping him in a manner so unworthy and dangerous, as by images; the third proceeds to direct, that we preserve a due reverence to him in our whole conversation and behaviour. *Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain.* Under these words are forbidden several things which differ in their degrees of guilt.

1. The first, and highest offence is, when we swear by the name of God falsely. For vanity in Scripture, frequently means, something which is not what it would appear. And hence using God's name *in vain*, or to vanity, principally signifies, applying it to confirm a falsehood. Doing this deliberately, is one of the most shocking crimes of which we can be guilty. For taking an oath is declaring solemnly, that we know ourselves to be in the presence of God, and him to be witness of what we speak: it is appealing to him, that our words express the very truth of our hearts; and renouncing all title to his mercy, if they do not. This it is to swear: and think then what it must be, to swear falsely. In other sins men

endeavour to forget God: but perjury is daring and braving the Almighty to his very face; bidding him take notice of the falsehood that we utter, and do his worst.

Now of this dreadful crime we are guilty, if ever we swear, that we do not know or believe what indeed we do; or that we do know or believe, what indeed we do not: if ever, being upon our oaths, we mislead those, whom we ought to inform; and give any other, than the exactest and fairest account that we can, of any matter, concerning which we are examined. Again, if we promise upon oath to do a thing, without firmly designing to do it; or if we promise not to do a thing, without firmly designing to abstain from it: this also is forswearing ourselves. Nay further: provided the thing which we promise, be lawful; if we do not ever after take all the care, that can be reasonably expected, to make our promise good, we are guilty of perjury; and of living in it, so long as we live in that neglect. If indeed a person hath sworn to do, what he thought he could have done; and it proves afterwards unexpectedly, that he cannot; such a one is chargeable only with mistake, or inconsiderateness at most. And if we either promise, or threaten any thing, which we cannot lawfully do: making such a promise is a sin; but keeping it would be another, perhaps a greater sin; and therefore it innocently may, and in conscience ought to be broken. But if we have promised what we may lawfully, but only cannot conveniently, perform; we are by no means on that account released from our engagement: unless either we were unqualified to promise, or were deceived into promising; or the person to whom we have engaged, voluntarily sets us at liberty; or the circumstances of the case

be plainly and confessedly such, that our promise was not originally designed to bind us in them.

You see then what is perjury. And you must see, it is not only the directest and grossest affront to God; for which reason it is forbidden in the first table of the ten commandments; but the most pernicious injury to our fellow-creatures; on which account you will find it again forbidden in the second table. If persons will assert falsely upon oath: no one knows what to believe; no one's property or life is safe. And if persons will promise falsely upon oath: no one can know whom to trust; all security of government and human society, all mutual confidence in trade and commerce, in every relation and condition, is utterly at an end. With the greatest reason therefore are perjured wretches abhorred of all the world. And no interest of our own, no kindness or compassion for other persons, no turn or purpose of whatsoever sort to be served by it, can ever justify our swerving at all from truth, either in giving evidence, or entering into engagements. Nor must we think in such cases to come off with equivocations, evasions, and quibbles; and imagine it innocent to deceive this way. On the contrary, the more artful and cunning our falsehoods are, the more deliberate and mischievous, and therefore the wicked, they are. *Be not deceived; God is not mocked**: and the following are the declarations of his sacred word to the upright man: *Lord, who shall dwell in thy tabernacle, and rest upon thy holy hill? He that speaketh the truth from his heart, and hath used no deceit with his tongue: he that sweareth unto his neighbour and disappointeth him not, though it were to his own hindrance†.* But to the perjured; *Seeing*

* Gal. vi. 7.

† Psal. xv. 1, 2, 3, 5.

he despised the oath, by breaking the covenant; thus saith the Lord God: As I live, surely mine oath that he hath despised, and my covenant that he hath broken, I will recompense it upon his head.*

[Let us all stand in awe of so dreadful a threatening, and avoid so horrible a guilt. Particularly at present, let all, who have sworn allegiance to the king, faithfully *keep it, and that in regard to the oath of God†*. And let those who have not sworn, remember however, that merely claiming the protection of a government implies some promise of being dutiful to it in return: and that a successful rebellion would not only tempt multitudes of our fellow-subjects to perjury, but lay our country, its laws and religion, at the absolute mercy of a faith-breaking church.‡]

One thing more should be added here; for it cannot well be mentioned too often, that next to false swearing, false speaking and lying, whether in what we assert or what we promise, is a grievous sin, and hateful to God and man. Though we do not call on our Maker to be witness, yet he is a witness of whatever we say. And it is presumptuous wickedness to utter an untruth in the presence of *the God of truth§*. It is also at the same time very hurtful to other persons: and very foolish with respect to ourselves. For they who will lie, to conceal their faults, or to carry their ends, are perpetually found out, disappointed and ashamed, for the most part, in a very little while: and then, and for ever after, they are distrusted and disbelieved, even when they speak truth: as indeed who can depend upon such, or who would venture to employ them? Many other faults

* Ezek. xvii. 18, 19.

† Eccl. viii. 2.

‡ This paragraph was added in the time of the rebellion, 1745.

§ Psalm xxxi. 5.

may be borne, so long as honesty and sincerity last: but a failure of these cannot be passed over: so just is Solomon's observation; *The lip of truth shall be established for ever: but a lying tongue is but for a moment**.

2. Another way of *taking God's name in vain* is when we swear by it needlessly, though it be not falsely. For this also the word *in vain* signifies.

One way of doing so, is by rash and inconsiderate vows: for a vow, being a promise made solemnly to God, partakes of the nature of an oath. And there may possibly be sometimes good reasons for entering into this kind of engagement. But vowing to do what there is no use of doing, is trifling with our Creator: making unlawful vows, is directly telling him, we will disobey him: making such without necessity, as are difficult to keep, is leading ourselves into temptation: and indeed making any, without much thought and prudent advice first, usually proves an unhappy snare. One vow we have all made, and were bound to make, that of our baptism, which includes every real good resolution. That therefore let us carefully keep and frequently ratify: and we shall scarce have occasion to make any more.

Another very needless, and always sinful, use of God's name, is by oaths, in common discourse. Too many there are, who fill up with them a great part of their most trifling conversation: especially if ever so little warmth rises in talk, then they abound in them. Now it is unavoidable, but persons, who are perpetually swearing, must frequently perjure themselves. But were that otherwise: it is great irrever-

* Prov. xii. 19.

ence, upon every slight thing we say, to invoke God for a witness: and mix *his holy and reverend name** with the idlest things, that come out of our mouths. And what makes this practice the more inexcusable is, that we cannot have either any advantage from it, or any natural pleasure in it. Sometimes it arises from a hastiness and impatience of temper; which is but increased by giving this vent to it: whereas it is every one's wisdom, not to let it break out in any way, much less in such a way. But generally it is nothing more than a silly and prophane custom, inconsiderately taken up: and there are the strongest reasons for laying it down immediately. It will make us disliked and abhorred by good persons, and scarce recommend us to the very worst. No person is the sooner believed for his frequent swearing: on the contrary, a modest serious affirmation is always much more regarded. And if any one's character is so low, that his word cannot be taken; he must think of other methods to retrieve it. For he will not at all mend matters, by adding his oath ever so often over. Then if swearing be affected, as becoming; it is certainly quite otherwise, in the highest degree. The very phrases used in it, as well as the occasions on which they are used, are almost constantly absurd and foolish: and surely prophaneness can never lessen the folly. Besides, they make the conversation of men shocking and hellish. They are acknowledged to be disrespectful to the company in which they are used: and if regard to their earthly superiors can restrain persons from swearing; why should not the reverence, owing to our heavenly Father, do it much more effectually? But indeed the

* Psal. cxi. 9.

indulgence of this sin wears off by degrees all sense of religion, and of every thing that is good.

Justly therefore doth our Saviour direct: *But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is God's throne; nor by the earth, for it is his footstool; neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great king: neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these, cometh of evil**. That is; avoid, not only the grosser oaths, but all the silly refinements and softenings of them, which men have contrived, in hope to make them seem innocent: for though the name of God be not expressed, yet if it be implied, by mentioning something related to God, instead of himself; indeed whatever form is used to disguise it, the intent is the same: and the effect will be, bringing a sacred obligation into familiarity and contempt. Keep yourselves therefore throughout the whole of your common conversation, within the bounds of a plain affirmation or denial: for whatever goes beyond these, proceeds from a bad turn of mind, and will produce bad consequences.

If indeed we be required to swear before a magistrate, or public officer, for the discovery of truth, and the doing of justice, this is notwithstanding lawful. For our Saviour forbids it only in *our communication*, our ordinary discourse: and he himself, our great pattern, answered upon oath to the high priest, who adjured him by the living God†. Or though we be not called upon by law, yet if some other weighty and extraordinary occasion should oblige us to call our Maker to witness; as St. Paul hath done, in more places than one of his Epistles; then also we may al-

* Matth. v. 34, 35, 36.

† Matth. xxvi. 63.

lowably do it, provided it be alway with sincerity and reverence. For by oaths, thus taken, men are benefited: and the name of God not prophaned, but honoured. But in our daily talk, and communication with each other, it is our Saviour's peremptory precept, *Swear not at all*: a rule so evidently right and important, that even heathens have strictly enjoined and followed it, to the shame of too many, who call themselves Christians.

Together with common swearing should be mentioned another sin, very near akin to it, and almost always joined with it, that monstrous custom of cursing; in direct contradiction to all humanity, and to the express words of Scripture, *Bless, and curse not**. To wish the heaviest judgements of God, and even eternal damnation, to a person, for the slightest cause, or none at all; to wish the same to ourselves, if some trifling thing, that we are saying, be not true, which frequently after all is not true; amounts to the most desperate impiety, if people at all consider what they say. And though they do not, it is even then thoughtlessly treating God, and his laws, and the awful sanctions of them, with contempt: and blotting out of their minds all serious regard to subjects, that will one day be found most serious things. *His delight was in cursing*, says the Psalmist. *and it shall happen unto him: he loved not blessing, therefore shall it be far from him*†.

3. Besides the offences already mentioned, all indecent and unfit use of God's name in our discourse, though it be not in swearing or cursing, comes within the prohibition of this commandment. All irreverent sayings, and even thoughts, concerning his nature, and attributes, his actions, and his commands, fall

* Rom. xii. 14.

† Psal. cix. 16.

under the same guilt; unless we are tormented with such thoughts, whether we will or not; for then they are only an affliction, not a sin. All sorts of talk, ridiculing, misrepresenting, or inveighing against religion, or whatever is connected with it, incur the like condemnation. Nay, even want of attention in God's worship, *drawing near to him with our mouths*, whilst *we remove our hearts far from him**, if it be wilfully or carelessly indulged, makes us chargeable, in its degree, with the sin of *taking his name in vain*.

4. Though we no way prophane his name ourselves, yet if we entice others to perjury and falsehood; or provoke them to rash oaths and curses; or give them any needless temptation to blaspheme God; to speak disrespectfully, or think slightly, of their Maker, or his laws, natural or revealed; by such behaviour also we become accessory to the breach of this commandment, and rank ourselves with those, whom it expressly declares, *God will not hold guiltless*: that is, will not acquit, but severely punish.

Let us therefore be watchful to preserve continually such an awe of the Supreme Being upon our own minds, and those of all who belong to us, as may on every occasion effectually influence us to give him the glory due unto his name, both in our more solemn addresses to him, and in our daily words and actions. For *God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of the saints; and to be had in reverence of all them that are round about him*†.

* Isa. xxix. 13.

† Psal. lxxxix. 7.

LECTURE XXI.

FOURTH COMMANDMENT.

IF the worship of God were left at large to be performed at any time, too many would be tempted to defer and postpone it, on one pretence or another, till at length it would be performed at no time. And therefore, though he were to be adored only by each person separately, and in private, it would be very expedient to fix on some stated returning seasons for that purpose. But reason shews it to be requisite, and the experience of all ages proves it to be natural, that as we are social creatures, we should be social in religion, as well as other things, and honour in common our common Maker: that we should unite in giving thanks to him for the blessings of life: a very great part of which we should be incapable of, without uniting: that we should join in praying forgiveness of the sins, which we too often join in committing: petition him together for the mercies, which we have need of receiving together; and by assembling to learn and acknowledge our several duties, keep alive in one another, as well as ourselves, that constant regard to piety and virtue, on which our happiness depends, here and hereafter.

Since therefore, on these accounts, there must be

public worship and instruction: it is not only expedient, but necessary, that there should be also fixed times appointed for it by sufficient authority. And how much and what time should be devoted to this purpose, every society must have determined for themselves, and would have found it hard enough to agree in determining, if God had given no intimation of his will in the case. But happily we are informed, in the history of the creation, that the Maker of the world, having finished his work in six days, (which he could as easily have finished in one moment, had it not been for some valuable reason, probably of instruction to us) *blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it**: that is, appointed every return of it to be religiously kept, as a solemn memorial, that *of him, and therefore to him, are all things†*. It is much the most natural to apprehend, that this appointment took place from the time, when it is mentioned; from the time when the reason of it took place. And it is no wonder at all, that, in so short a history, notice should not be taken of the actual observation of it before Moses: for notice is not taken of it in five hundred years after Moses. Yet we know of a certainty, that in his time, at least, it was ordered to be observed, both in this fourth commandment, and in other parts of the law, which direct more particularly the manner of keeping it.

The thing most expressly enjoined the Jews, in each of these passages, is resting from all manner of work; and not suffering their families, their cattle, nor even the strangers that lived amongst them, to labour on that day. And the reason of this rest, given in the commandment, as you have it in the book of Exodus, is, that *the Lord rested on the seventh*

* Gen. ii. 3.

† Rom. xi. 36.

day from his work of creation. Not that this, or any thing, could be a fatigue to him. For *the Creator of the ends of the earth fainteth not, neither is weary**. But the expression means, that having then finished the formation of the world, he ceased from it; and required men also to cease from their labours every seventh day; in memory of that fundamental article of all religion, that the heavens and earth were made, and therefore are governed, by one infinitely wise, powerful, and good Being. And thus was *the Sabbath*, which word means the day of rest, *a sign*, as the Scripture calls it, *between God, and the children of Israel†*; a mark to distinguish them from all worshippers of false deities.

But besides this principal reason for the repose of every seventh day, two others are mentioned in the law: that it might remind them of that deliverance from heavy bondage, which God had granted them; *Remember, that thou wast a servant in the land of Egypt, and that the Lord brought thee out thence; therefore he commanded thee to keep the sabbath-day‡*: and likewise that their servants and cattle might not be worn out with incessant toil; *that thine ox and thine ass may rest; and the son of thy handmaid, and the stranger, may be refreshed§*. Such mercy indeed is little more than common prudence: but there are in the world multitudes of hard-hearted wretches, who would pay small regard to that consideration, were they left to their own liberty.

Now merely abstaining from common work on this day, in obedience to God's command, for such religious and moral ends as these, was undoubtedly sanctifying, or keeping it holy. But then we are not to

* Isa. xl. 28.

† Exod. xxxi. 13, 17. Ezek. xx. 12, 20

‡ Deut. v. 15.

§ Exod. xxiii. 12.

suppose that the leisure, thus provided for men, was to be thrown away just as they pleased, instead of being usefully employed. God directed the Jews: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy soul, and with all thy might; and the words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thy heart; and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children; and shalt talk of them, when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up**. Now as he required them to attend so constantly to these duties: he could not but expect, they should attend more especially to them on that day, when the great foundation of all duty, his creating the world, was appointed to be commemorated; and when they had nothing to take off their thoughts from what they owed to God their Maker. There was a peculiar sacrifice appointed for that day: there is a peculiar psalm composed for it, the ninety-second: and these things are surely further intimations to us, that it must have been a time, peculiarly intended for the offering up of prayers and thanksgivings to heaven.

Few indeed, or none, of God's laws were well observed in the days of the Old Testament. But still, as the priests and Levites were dispersed through the Jewish nation, that they might teach the people religion; so we read, that in good times they did teach it accordingly: and when could this be, but on the sabbath-day? We see it was the custom of religious persons, on that day, to resort to the prophets, that were in Israel; doubtless to hear the word of God from their mouths†. We see public happiness promised on this condition, that men should *honour the sabbath of the Lord, not doing their own ways, nor*

* Deut. vi. 5, 6, 7.

† 2 Kings iv. 23.

*finding their own pleasure, nor speaking their own words**. We see absolute ruin threatened for the prophanation of it†. We see a time foretold, when *from one sabbath to another all flesh should come to worship before the Lord‡*. And in consequence of this, when their captivity had taught the Jews a stricter regard to their duty, *synagogues*, and houses of prayer, were erected *in every city*: where the Maker of all things was publicly adored, and his law *read and preached, every sabbath-day§*.

Such was the state of things, when our Saviour came into the world: whose religion being intended for all mankind equally, the deliverance from Egyptian bondage, in which the Jews alone were concerned, was mentioned no longer in the divine laws: but instead of the commemoration of this, was substituted that of the redemption of the world, from the dominion and punishment of sin; which our blessed Redeemer accomplished by his death, and proved himself to have accomplished, by his resurrection. Accordingly, the first day of the week, being the day of his resurrection, was appointed, in thankful remembrance of it, for the time of public worship amongst Christians, and therefore is called by St. John, *the Lord's day*||; though in common language it be more usually called Sunday; as it was even before our Saviour's time, and may be for a better reason since, because on it Christ, the sun of righteousness, arose. Accordingly some of the earliest fathers give it that name.

And that no one may doubt the lawfulness of this change of the day; it plainly appears, from several passages of St. Paul, that we are not bound to observe

* Isa. lviii. 13, 14.

† Jer. xvii. 27.

‡ Isa. lxvi. 23.

§ Acts xv. 21.

|| Rev. i. 10.

the Jewish sabbath: and it still more plainly appears, in the Scripture history of the Apostles, that they did observe, and direct the observation of, our Christian sabbath; as the whole church hath constantly done since, from their times to this, though it doth not appear, that they called it the Sabbath-day for many hundreds of years. One day in seven being still kept, the memory of the creation is as well preserved, and the intent of this commandment as fully answered, as before: and that one day in seven being chosen, on which our Saviour rose again, the memory of the redemption wrought by him, and called in Scripture *a new creation**, is, in the properest manner, as well as with the greatest reason, perpetuated, along with the former.

The day then being thus fixed, which we ought to keep holy; it remains to consider, how it ought to be kept. And,

I. It must be a day of rest, in order to commemorate God's *resting*, as the Scripture expresses it, *from all his work which he created and made*†; and to allow that ease and refreshment, which, with so great humanity, the commandment requires should be given, not only to servants, but to the very cattle. Besides, it cannot be a day of religion to mankind, without such vacation from the ordinary labours of life, as may give sufficient leisure to distinguish it by exercises of piety. But then, as Christians are not under a dispensation so rigorous in outward observances, as that of Moses; they are not bound to so strict and scrupulous a rest, as the Jews were. Though, indeed, the Jews themselves became, at last, much more scrupulous in this matter, than they needed; and are accordingly reprov'd by our blessed

* 2 Cor. v. 17. Gal. vi. 15.

† Gen. ii. 3.

Saviour: from whom we learn this general rule, that *the sabbath was made for man, not man for the sabbath**: and therefore all works of great necessity, or great goodness and mercy, if they cannot be deferred to another time, be they ever so laborious, may very allowably be done then. Only so far as the public wisdom of the laws of the land hath restrained us, we ought certainly to restrain ourselves, even from such things, as, in our private opinion, we might otherwise think innocent. As to matters of less labour, what propriety, and decency, and reasonable convenience require, we surely need not omit. And what the practice of the more religious and considerate part of those, amongst whom we live, allows, hath without question no small title to our favourable opinion. But the liberties, taken by thoughtless or prophane persons, are not of any authority in the least. And the safest general rule to go by, is to omit whatever may be sinful, and is needless; and neither to require, nor suffer, those who belong to us, to do, on this day, what we apprehend it unlawful to do ourselves.

2. A reasonable part of our day of holy rest must be employed in the public worship of God. This, you have seen, the Jews understood to be requisite on their sabbath: and the earliest account, which we have of ours, informs us, that *on the first day of the week, the disciples came together to break bread*†: which means to celebrate the Lord's Supper. That with this was joined *the Apostles' doctrine and prayer*, we learn from another place of the same book of Scripture‡. And that every Lord's day was dedicated to the public offices of piety, the history of the church fully shews from the beginning. To strengthen

* Mark ii. 27.

† Acts xx. 7.

‡ Acts ii. 42.

the obligation of attending on these offices, the laws of the land also enjoin it. And as all persons need instruction in their duty both to God and man, and the generality have scarce any other season for it, than the leisure of the Sunday: if this most valuable time be either taken from them, or thrown away by them; they must become ignorant and vicious; and of consequence miserable in this world and the next. How wicked then, and how unwise, is it, either to throw contempt on such an institution, or on frivolous pretences to neglect improving by it!

3. Besides assembling in the church on the Lord's day, every one should employ some reasonable part of it in the private exercises of piety; in thinking over their past behaviour, confessing their faults to God, and making prudent resolutions against them for the future: in praying for the mercies, which they more especially want, and returning thanks for the blessings, with which Providence hath favoured them; in cultivating a temper of humanity; in doing acts of forgiveness, and setting apart something, according to their ability, for acts of charity (for which last St. Paul hath particularly recommended this time*): and in seriously considering at home, whatever they have heard in God's house. For our public religion will soon degenerate into an useless form, unless we preserve and enliven the spirit of it, by such means as these, in private: to which they, above all persons, are bound on the Lord's day, who either have little leisure for them on others, or make little use of it.

When once persons have brought themselves to spend so much of the Sunday as is fitting in this manner; it will then, and not before, be time for them to ask, how the remainder of it may be spent. For it is

* 1 Cor. xvi. 2.

a very bad sign, to be careless of observing what is commanded ; and zealous for extending to the utmost what at best is only permitted. Over-great strictness however must be avoided. And therefore decent civility and friendly conversation, may both innocently and usefully have a place in the vacant part of our Lord's day : of which it is really one valuable benefit, that it gives even the lowest persons an opportunity of appearing to each other in the most agreeable light they can, and thus promotes mutual good-will. Nor is it necessary at all to banish cheerfulness from our conversation on this day ; which being a festival, though a religious one, we should partake of all God's blessings upon it with joyful hearts. But then such instances of freedom and levity, in talk and behaviour, as would scarce be proper at any time, are doubly improper at this : and tend very fatally to undo whatever good the preceding part of the day may have done.

And as to the taking further liberties, of diversions and amusements : though they are not in express words forbidden, for the desire of them is not supposed, in the word of God ; yet by the laws both of church and state they are. And what need is there for them, or what good use of them ? If persons are so vehemently set upon these things, that they are uneasy to be so much as one day in seven without them ; it is high time, that they should bring themselves to more moderation, by exercising some abstinence from them. And if they are at all indifferent about them, surely they should consider, what must be the effect of introducing and indulging them : what offence and uneasiness these things give the more serious and valuable part of the world ; what comfort and countenance to the unthinking and irre-

ligious part: what a dangerous example to the lower part: what encouragement they afford to extravagance and the mad love of pleasure: what a snare they place in the way of all, that think them unlawful; and yet will thus be tempted, to these liberties first, and then to others, against their consciences: and, to add no more, how unhappily they increase the appearance (which, without them, God knows, would be much too great) of religion being slighted and disregarded; especially by the upper part of the world, who should be the great patterns of it.

And if this be the case of merely unseasonable diversions; imprudent and unlawful ones are still more blameable on this day: but most of all, that crying sin of debauchery and intemperance, which perverts it from the service of God to the service of the devil; and leads persons more directly than almost any thing else, to utter destruction of body and soul. Therefore let us be careful, first to guard ourselves against these transgressions, then to keep our children, servants, and dependants from the like, if we make any conscience of doing well by them, or would have any prospect of comfort in them. Nor let us think it sufficient, to restrain them from spending the day ill; but to the best of our power and understanding, encourage and assist them to spend it well. And God grant, we may all employ in so right a manner, the few sabbaths, and few days, which we have to come on earth; that we may *enter*, at the conclusion of them, *into* that eternal sabbath, *that rest, which remaineth for the people of God**, in heaven!

* Heb. iv. 3, 9.

LECTURE XXII.

FIFTH COMMANDMENT.

Part I.

HAVING explained the precepts of the first Table, which set forth the duty of men to God; I now come to those of the second, which express our several obligations one to another.

Now the whole law, concerning these matters, is *briefly comprehended*, as St. Paul very justly observes, *in this one saying, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself**. Our neighbour is every one, with whom we have at any time any concern, or on whose welfare our actions can have any influence. For whoever is thus within our reach, is in the most important sense near to us, however distant in other respects. To *love our neighbour*, is to bear him good-will; which of course will dispose us to think favourably of him and behave properly to him. And to *love him as ourselves*, is to have not only a real, but a strong and active good-will towards him; with a tenderness for his interests, duly proportioned to that, which we naturally feel for our own. Such a temper would most powerfully restrain us from every thing wrong,

* Rom. xiii. 9.

and prompt us to every thing right; and therefore is *the fulfilling of the law**, so far as it relates to our mutual behaviour.

But because, on some occasions, we may either not see, or not confess we see, what is right, and what otherwise; our Saviour hath put the same duty in a light somewhat different, which gives the safest and fullest, and clearest direction for practice, that any one precept can give. *All things, whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, even so do ye unto them*†. Behaving properly depends on judging truly; and that, in cases of any doubt, depends on hearing with due attention both sides. To our own side we never fail attending. The rule therefore is, give the other side the same attention, by supposing it your own; and after considering carefully and fairly, what, if it were indeed your own, you should not only desire (for desires may be unreasonable) but think you had an equitable claim to, and well-grounded expectation of, from the other party, that do in regard to him. Would we but honestly take this method, our mistakes would be so exceeding few, and slight, and innocent, that well might our blessed Lord add, *For this is the law and the prophets*.

Yet, after all, there might be difficulty sometimes, especially to some persons, in the application of a rule so very general. And therefore we have, in the commandments, the reciprocal duties of man to man branched out into six particulars: the first of which, contained in the fifth commandment, relates to the mutual obligations of superiors and inferiors: the rest, to those points in which all men are considered as equals.

It is true, the precept, now to be explained men-

* Rom. xiii. 10.

† Matth. vii. 12.

tions only one kind of superiors. *Thou shalt honour thy father and thy mother.* But the case of other superiors is so like that of fathers, that most of them have occasionally the very name of father given them in most languages; and therefore the regard, due to them also, may be very properly comprehended, and laid before you, under the same head. It is likewise true, that the duty of the inferior alone is expressed in the commandment; but the corresponding duty of the superior is, at the same time, of necessity implied: for which reason I shall discourse of both; beginning with the mutual obligations of children and parents, properly so called, which will be a sufficient employment for the present time.

Now the duty of children to their parents is here expressed by the word *honour*, which in common language signifies a mixture of love and respect, producing due obedience; but in Scripture language it implies further, maintenance and support when wanted.

1. Love to those, of whose flesh and blood we are, is what nature dictates to us, in the very first place. Children have not only received from their parents, as instruments in the hand of God, the original of their being; but the preservation of it through all the years of helpless infancy; in which the needful care of them gave much trouble, took up much time, required much expence: all which, parents usually go through with so cheerful a diligence, and so self-denying a tenderness, that no return of affection on the children's part, can possibly repay it to the full: though children's affection is what, above all things, makes parents happy. Then, as life goes on, it is their parents that give or procure for them such instruction of all kinds, as qualifies them, both to do well in this

world, and be for ever blessed in another; that watch over them continually with never-ceasing attention, consulting their inclinations in a multitude of obliging instances, and bearing with their perverseness in a multitude of provoking ones; kindly restraining them from a thousand pernicious follies, into which they would otherwise fall; and directing their heedless footsteps into the right way, encouraging, rewarding, and, which indeed is no less a benefit, correcting them also, as the case requires; full of solicitude all the while for their happiness, and consuming themselves with labour and thoughtfulness for these dear objects, to improve, support, and advance them in their lives, and provide for them at their deaths. Even those parents, who perform these duties but imperfectly, who perhaps do some very wrong things, do notwithstanding, almost all of them, so many right and meritorious ones; that though, the more such they do, the better they should be loved; yet they that do least, do enough to be loved sincerely for it, as long as they live*.

2. And with love must ever be joined, secondly, due respect, inward and outward. For parents are not only the benefactors, but in rank the betters, and in right the governors of their children; whose dependence is upon them, in point of interest, generally: in point of duty, always. They ought therefore to think of them with great reverence, and treat them with every mark of submission, in gesture, in speech, in the whole of their behaviour, which the practice of wise and good persons hath established, as proper instances of filial regard. And though the parents be mean in station, or low in understanding; still the relation continues, and the duty that belongs to it.

* See Xenophon's Memoirs of Socrates, l. 2. c. 2.

Nay, suppose they be faulty in some part of their conduct or character, yet children should be very backward to see this; and it can very seldom be allowable for them to shew that they see it; from the world they should always conceal it, as far as they can; for it is shocking beyond measure in *them* to publish it. And if ever any thing of this nature must be mentioned to the parents themselves, which nothing but great necessity can warrant or excuse; it should be with all possible gentleness and modesty, and the most real concern at being obliged to so unnatural an office.

3. Love and respect to parents will always produce obedience to them: a third duty of the highest importance. Children, for a considerable time, are utterly unqualified to govern themselves; and so long as this continues to be the case, must be absolutely and implicitly governed by those, who alone can claim a title to it. As they grow up to the use of understanding indeed, reason should be gradually mixed with authority, in every thing that is required of them. But at the same time, children should observe, what they may easily find to be true in daily instances, that they are apt to think they know how to direct themselves, much sooner than they really do; and should therefore submit to be directed by their friends in more points, and for longer time, than perhaps they would naturally be tempted to wish. Suppose, in that part of your lives which is already past, you had had your own way in every thing, what would have been the consequences? You yourselves must see, very bad ones. Why, other persons see, what you will see also in time, that it would be full as bad, were you to have your way now. And what all who are likely to know, agree in, you should be-

lieve, and submit to. Your parents and governors have at least more knowledge and experience, if they have not more capacity, than you. And the trouble which they take, and the concern which they feel about you, plainly shew that your good is the thing which they have at heart. The only reason why they do not indulge you in the particulars that you wish, is, that they see it would hurt you. And it is a dreadful venture for you, to think, as yet, of trusting yourselves. Trust therefore to those, whom you have all manner of reason to trust; and obey them willingly, who by the laws of God and man have a right to rule you: and, generally speaking, a power to make you obey at last, be you ever so unwilling.

Not that children are bound to obedience in all things without exception. Should a parent command them to lie, to steal, to commit any wickedness; God commands the contrary: and he is to be obeyed, not man. Or should a parent command any thing of consequence, directly opposite to the laws of the land, and the injunctions of public authority: here the magistrate being the superior power, in all things that confessedly belong to his jurisdiction, is to be obeyed, rather than the parent, who ought himself to be subject to the magistrate*. Or if, in other points, a parent should require what was both very evidently, and very greatly, unsuitable to a child's condition and station; or had a clear tendency to make him miserable; or would be certainly and considerably prejudicial to him through the remainder of his life; where the one goes so far beyond his just bounds, the other may allowably excuse himself from complying. Only the case must be both so plain, and withal of such moment, as may justify him, not only in his

* See Taylor's Elements of Civil Law, p. 387, 388, 389.

own judgement, which may easily be prejudiced, but in that of every considerate person, whom he hath opportunity of consulting, and in the general opinion of mankind. And even then, the refusal must be accompanied with the greatest decency and humility : and the strictest care to make amends, by all instances of real duty, for this one seeming want of duty.

In proportion as young persons approach to that age, when the law allows them to be capable of governing themselves, they become by degrees less and less subject to the government of their parents ; especially in smaller matters : for, in the more important concerns of life, and above all, in the very important one of marriage, not only daughters, (concerning whom, the very phrase of *giving them in marriage*, shews, that they are not to give themselves as they please) but sons too, should have all possible regard, to the authority, the judgement, the blessing, the comfort of those, to whom they owe every thing. And even after they are sent out into the world, to stand on their own bottom, still they remain for ever bound not to slight, or willingly to grieve them ; but in all proper affairs, to consult with them, and hearken to them ; as far as it can be at all expected, in reason or gratitude, that they should.

4. The last thing, which in Scripture, the phrase of honouring parents comprehends, is affording them decent relief and support, if they are reduced to want it. For thus our Saviour explains the word, in his reproof of the Pharisees, for *making this commandment of no effect by their tradition*. God commanded, *Honour thy father and thy mother : but ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me : that is, What should have relieved you, I have devoted to religious*

uses; whosoever should say this, *and honoureth not his father or his mother; he shall be free**. In St. Mark it is, *Ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother†*. And in other places of Scripture, besides this, honouring a person signifies contributing to his maintenance: as 1 Tim. v. 17, 18. *Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour: especially they who labour in the word and doctrine; for the Scripture saith, The labourer is worthy of his reward.*

How worthy parents are of this, as well as the other sorts of honour, when they need it, sufficiently appears from all that hath been said. If they deserve to be loved and respected; surely they are not to be left exposed to distress and want, by those whom they have brought into life; and for whom they have done so much: but children, even if they are poor, should both be diligent in working, and provident in saving, to keep their helpless parents from extremities: and if they are in competently good circumstances, should allow them a liberal share of the plenty, which they enjoy themselves. Accordingly St. Paul directs, that both *children and nephews*, that is grandchildren, for so the word *nephew* always means in Scripture, should *learn first to show piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God‡*. Indeed nature, as well as Christianity, enjoins it so strongly, that the whole world cries out shame, where it is neglected. And the same reason, which requires parents to be assisted in their necessities, requires children also to attend upon them, and minister to them, with vigilant assiduity and tender affection, in their infirmities; and to consult on every occasion, their desires, their peace, their ease. And they should

* Matth. xv. 4, 5, 6.

† Mark vii. 12.

‡ 1 Tim. v. 4.

consider both what they contribute to their support, and every other instance of regard, which they shew them, not as an alms, given to an inferior: but as a tribute of duty paid to a superior. For which reason perhaps it may be, that relieving them is mentioned in Scripture under the notion of honouring them.

One thing more to be observed, is, that all these duties of children belong equally to both parents: the mother being as expressly named, as the father, in the commandment: and having the same right in point of reason. Only, if contrary orders are given by the two parents to the child; he is bound to obey that parent rather, whom the other is bound to obey also: but still preserving to each all due reverence: from which nothing, not even the command of either, can discharge him*.

And now I proceed to the duties of parents to their children: on which there is much less need to enlarge, than on the other. For not only parents have more understanding to know their duty, and stronger affections to prompt them to do it; but indeed, a great part of it hath been already intimated, in setting forth that of children to them. It is the duty of parents, to take all that kind care, which is the main foundation of love; to keep up such authority, as may secure respect; to give such reasonable commands, as may engage a willing obedience; and thus to make their children so good, and themselves so esteemed by them, that they may depend, in case of need, on assistance and succour from them.

More particularly, they are bound to think them, from the first, worthy of their own inspection and pains; and not abandon them to the negligence, or

* *Pietas parentibus, etsi inæqualis est eorum potestas, æqua, debetur.* D. 27. 10. 4.

bad management of others: so to be tender of them and indulge them, as not to encourage their faults; so to reprove and correct them, as not to break their spirits, or provoke their hatred: to instil into them the knowledge, and require of them the practice, of their duty to God and man; and recommend to them every precept, both of religion and morality, by what is the strongest recommendation, a good and amiable example: to breed them up as suitably to their condition, as may be; but to be sure not above it: watching over them with all the care, that conduces to health; but allowing them in none of the softness, that produces luxury or indolence; or of the needless distinctions, that pamper pride; to begin preparing them early, according to their future station in life, for being useful in it, to others, and themselves: to provide conscientiously for their spiritual and eternal, as well as temporal good, in disposing of them; and bestow on them willingly, as soon as it is fit, whatever may be requisite to settle them properly in the world: to lay up for them, not by injustice, penuriousness, or immoderate solicitude, all that they can; but by honest and prudent diligence and attention, as much as is sufficient; and to distribute this amongst them, not as fondness, or resentment, or caprice, or vanity, may dictate; but in a reasonable and equitable manner, such as will be likeliest to make those who receive it, love one another, and esteem the memory of the giver.

These are, in brief, the mutual duties of parents and children; and you will easily perceive that they are the duties in proportion of all who, by any occasional or accidental means, come to stand in the stead of parents or of children. The main thing which wants to be observed, is, from the neglect of

these duties on one side, or on both, proceeds a very great part of the wickedness and misery, that is in the world. May God incline the hearts of all that are concerned either way in this most important relation, so to practise the several obligations of it, as may procure to them, in this world, reciprocal satisfaction and joy, and eternal felicity in that which is to come, through Jesus Christ our Lord!

LECTURE XXIII.

FIFTH COMMANDMENT.

Part II.

IN my last discourse, I began to explain the fifth Commandment; and having already gone through the duties of children and parents, properly so called, I come now to the other sorts of inferiors and superiors; all which have sometimes the same names given them, and are comprehended under the reason and equity of this precept.

And here, the first relation to be mentioned, is, that between private subjects and those in authority over them: a relation so very like that of children and fathers, that the duties on both sides are much the same in each.

But more particularly, the duty of subjects, is, to obey the laws of whatever government Providence hath placed us under, in every thing which is not contrary to the laws of God; and to contribute willingly to its support, every thing that is legally required, or may be reasonably expected of us: to be faithful and true to the interests of that society, of which we are members; and to the persons of those, who govern it; paying, both to the supreme power,

and all subordinate magistrates, every part of that submission and respect, both in speech and behaviour, which is their due: and making all those allowances in their favour, which the difficulty of their office, and the frailty of our common nature demand: to love and wish well to all our fellow-subjects, without exception: think of them charitably, and treat them kindly: to be peaceable and quiet, each minding diligently the duties of his own station; not factious and turbulent, intruding into the concerns of others: to be modest and humble, *not exercising ourselves in matters too high for us**; but leaving such things to the care of our superiors, and the providence of God: to be thankful for the blessings and advantages of government, in proportion as we enjoy them; and reasonable and patient under the burdens and inconveniencies of it, which at any time we may suffer.

The duty of princes and magistrates, it would be of little use to enlarge on at present. In general it is, to confine the exercise of their power within the limits of those law to which they are bound; and direct it to the attainment of those ends, for which they were appointed; to execute their proper function with care and integrity; as *men fearing God, men of truth, hating covetousness†*; to do all persons impartial justice, and consult, in all cases, the public benefit; encouraging religion and virtue with zeal, especially by a good example; punishing crimes with steadiness, yet with moderation; and *studying to preserve the people committed to their charge, in wealth, peace, and godliness‡*.

Another relation, to be brought under this Com-

* Psal. cxxxi. 1. † Exod. xviii. 21. ‡ Communion Office.

mandment, is, that between spiritual fathers, the teachers of religion, and such as are to be taught.

The duty of us who have undertaken the important work of spiritual guides and teachers, is, to deliver the doctrines and precepts of our holy religion, in the plainest and strongest terms that we can ; insisting on such things chiefly, as will be most conducive to the real and inward benefit of our hearers ; and recommending them in the most prudent and persuasive manner ; *seeking to please all men for their good, to edification* * ; but fearing no man in the discharge of our consciences ; and neither saying nor omitting any thing, for the sake of applause from the many, or the few ; or of promoting either our own wealth and power, or that of our order ; to instruct, exhort, and comfort, all that are placed under our care, with sincerity, discretion, and tenderness, privately as well as publicly, so far as they give us opportunity, or we discern hope of doing service ; *watching for their souls, as they that must give account* † ; to rule in the church of God with vigilance, humility, and meekness, *shewing ourselves, in all things, patterns of good works* ‡.

The duty of you, the Christian laity, whom we are to teach, is, to attend constantly and seriously on religious worship and instruction, as a sacred ordinance appointed by heaven for your spiritual improvement ; to consider impartially and carefully what you hear, and believe and practise what you are convinced you ought ; to observe with due regard the rules established for decent order and edification in the church ; and pay such respect, in word and deed, to those who minister to you in holy things, as the interest and honour of religion require ; accepting

* Rom. xv. 2. 1 Cor. x. 33. † Heb. xiii. 17. ‡ Tit. ii. 7.

and encouraging our well-meant services, and bearing charitably with our many imperfections and failings.

A third relation, is, that between masters or mistresses of schools and their scholars. The duty of the former is, diligently to instruct the children committed to them, in all the things which they are put to learn, suiting their manner of teaching, as well as they can, to the temper and capacity of each; and to take effectual care that they apply themselves to what is taught them; and do their best: to watch over their behaviour, especially in the great points of religion and truth, modesty and good-humour: shew countenance to such as are well-behaved and promising; correct the faulty, with needful, yet not with excessive severity; and get the incorrigible removed out of the way, before they corrupt others. And the duty of the scholars is, to reverence and obey their master or mistress, as if they were their parents; to live friendly and lovingly with one another, as brethren or sisters; to be heartily thankful to all, that give or procure them so valuable a blessing as useful knowledge; and industrious to improve in it; considering, how greatly their happiness, here and hereafter, depends upon it.

I come now to a fourth relation, of great extent and importance, that between heads of families and their servants.

When the New Testament was written, the generality of servants were, as in many places they are still, mere slaves; and the persons to whom they belonged, had a right to their labour, and that of their posterity, for ever, without giving them any other wages than their maintenance; and with a power to inflict on them what punishments they pleased; for

the most part, even death itself, if they would. God be thanked, service amongst us, is a much happier thing; the conditions of it being usually no other, than the servants themselves voluntarily enter into, for their own benefit. But then, for that reason, they ought to perform whatever is due from them, both more conscientiously, and more cheerfully.

Now from servants is due, in the first place, obedience. Indeed if they are commanded what is plainly unlawful, they *ought to obey God rather than man**; but still must excuse themselves decently, though resolutely. And even lawful things, which they have not bargained to do, they are not obliged to do; nor any thing indeed, which is clearly and greatly unsuitable to their place and station, and improper to be required of them. But whatever they engaged, or knew they were expected, to do; or what, though they did not know of it beforehand, is usual and reasonable, or even not very unreasonable, they must submit to. For if they may, on every small pretence, refuse to do *this*, and question, whether *that* belongs to their place, it is most evident, that all authority and order in families must be at an end; and they themselves will have much more trouble in disputing about their business, than they would have in performing it.

Servants therefore should obey; and they should do it respectfully and readily: not murmuring, behaving gloomily and sullenly, as if their work was not due for their wages; but, as the Apostle exhorts, *with good-will doing service*†; *not answering again*‡, and contradicting, as if those, whom they serve, were their equals; but paying all fit honour to their master or mistress, and to every one in the family.

* Acts v. 29.

† Eph. vi. 7.

‡ Tit. ii. 9.

They are also to obey with diligence: to spend as much time in work, and follow it as closely all that time, as can be fairly expected from them; *not with eye-service, as men-pleasers*, (these are the words of Scripture, twice repeated there) *but in singleness of heart, fearing God**. Whatever industry therefore a reasonable master would require, when his eye is upon them; the same, in the main, honest servants will use, when his eye is not upon them: for his presence or absence can make no difference in their duty. He hath agreed with them for their time and pains; and he must not be defrauded of them.

With diligence must always be joined care, that no business be neglected, or delayed beyond its proper season: nothing mismanaged for want of thinking about it: nothing heedlessly, much less designedly, wasted and squandered; but all reasonable frugality and good contrivance shewn; and all fair advantages taken, yet no other, for the benefit of those who employ them. Every servant would think this but common justice in his own case; and therefore should do it as common justice in his master's case. Some perhaps may imagine, that their master's estate or income is well able to afford them to be careless or extravagant. But the truth is, few or no incomes can afford this. For if it be practised in one thing, why not in another? And what must follow, if it be practised in all? That certainly which we daily see, that persons of the greatest estates are distressed and ruined by it. Or though it would not distress them at all, yet a master's wealth is no more a justification of servants wasting what belongs to him, than of their stealing it: and if one be dishonest, the other must.

Now dishonesty every body owns to be a crime;

* Eph. vi. 6. Col. iii. 22.

but every body doth not consider sufficiently how many sorts of it there are. Observe then, that, besides the instances already mentioned, and the gross ones that are punishable by law, it is dishonest in a servant, either to take to himself, or give to another, or consent to the taking or giving, whatever he knows he is not allowed, and durst not do with his master's knowledge. There are, to be sure, various degrees of this fault; some not near so bad as others: but it is the same kind of fault in all of them: besides that the smaller degrees lead to the greater. And all dishonesty, bad as it is in other persons, is yet worse in those who are intrusted, as servants are; and things put in their power upon that trust, which if they break, they are unfaithful, as well as unjust.

Another sort of dishonesty is speaking falsehoods: against which I have already, in the course of these Lectures, given some cautions, and shall give more: therefore at present I shall only say, that whether servants are guilty of it amongst themselves, or to their masters or mistresses, whether against or in favour of one another, or even in their own favour, there are few things, by which they may both do and suffer more harm than a lying tongue.

Truth therefore is a necessary quality in servants. And a further one is proper secrecy. For there is great unfairness in betraying the secrets, either of their master's business, or his family; or turning to his disadvantage any thing that comes to their knowledge by being employed under him; unless it be where conscience obliges them to a discovery; which is a case that seldom happens. And, excepting that case, what they have promised to conceal, it is palpable wickedness to disclose: and where they have not promised, yet they are taken into their master's

house to be assistants and friends, not spies and tale-bearers; to do service, not harm, to him, and to every one that is under his roof.

Two other duties, of all persons indeed, but in some measure peculiarly of servants, are; sobriety, without which they can neither be careful nor diligent, nor will be likely to continue just; and chastity, the want of which will produce all manner of disorders and mischiefs in the family to which they belong, and utter ruin to themselves.

The last requisite which I shall mention, is peaceableness and good temper; agreeing with and helping one another, and making the work which they have to do, easy, and the lives which they are to lead together, comfortable. For it is very unfit, that either their masters or any other part of the family should suffer through their ill-humour; and indeed they suffer enough by it themselves, to make restraining it well worth their while.

These are the duties of servants; and as the faithful performance of them is the surest way of serving themselves, and being happy in this world: so, if it proceed from a true principle of conscience, God will accept it, as service done to himself, and make them eternally happy for it in the next: whereas wilfully transgressing, or negligently slighting, the things which they ought to do, whatever pleasure, or whatever advantage it may promise or produce to them for a while, will seldom fail of bringing them at last to shame and ruin even here, and will certainly bring them, unless they repent and amend, to misery hereafter.

But think not, I intreat you, that we will lay burthens on those below us, and take none upon ourselves. There are duties also, and very necessary

ones, which masters and mistresses owe to their servants.

To behave towards them with meekness and gentleness, not imperiously and with contempt; and to restrain them, as far as may be, from giving bad usage one to another; never to accuse, threaten, or suspect them, without or beyond reason; to hear patiently their defences and complaints; and bear, with due moderation, their mistakes and faults: neither to make them, when in health, work or fare harder than is fitting; nor suffer them, when in sickness, to want any thing requisite for their comfort and relief: if they be hired servants, to pay their wages fully and punctually at the time agreed; if they are put to learn any business or profession, to instruct them in it carefully and thoroughly: not only to give them time for the exercises of religion; but assistance to understand, and encouragement to practise, every part of their duty: to keep them, as much as possible, both from sin and temptation, and particularly from corrupting each other; to shew displeasure when they do amiss, as far, and no farther, than the case requires; and to countenance and reward them when they serve well, in proportion to the merit and length of such service. For all these things are natural dictates of reason and humanity; and clearly implied in that comprehensive rule of Scripture: *Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equal; knowing, that ye also have a Master in heaven**.

There are still two sorts more, of inferiors and superiors, that may properly be mentioned under this commandment: young persons and elder; those of low and high degree.

* Col. iv. 1.

The duty of the younger is, to moderate their own rashness and love of pleasure; to reverence the persons and advice of the aged; and neither to use them ill, nor despise them, on account of the infirmities that may accompany advanced years; considering in what manner they will expect hereafter that others should treat them. And the duty of elder persons is, to make all fit allowances, but no hurtful ones, to the natural dispositions of young people; to instruct them with patience, and reprove them with mildness; not to require either too much or too long submission from them: but be willing that they, in their turn, should come forward into the world; gradually withdrawing themselves from the heavier cares, and the lighter pleasures, of this life; and waiting with pious resignation to be called into another.

The duty of the lower part of the world to those above them, in rank, fortune, or office, is, not to envy them; or murmur at the superiority, which a wise, though mysterious Providence, hath given them; but *in whatever state they are, therewith to be content**; and pay willingly to others all the respect, which decency or custom have made their due. At the same time, the duty of those in higher life is to relieve the poor, protect the injured, countenance the good, discourage the bad, as they have opportunity; not to scorn, much less to oppress, the meanest of their brethren; but to remember, that *we shall all stand before the judgement-seat of Christ†*; where *he that hath done wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done; and there is no respect of persons‡*.

And now were but all these duties conscientiously observed by all the world, how happy a place would it be! And whoever will faithfully do their own part

* Phil. iv. 11.

† Rom. xiv. 10.

‡ Col. iii. 25.

of **them**, they shall be happy, whether others will do **theirs** or not; and this commandment assures them of **it**; *that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.* In all probability, if we obey his laws, and that now before us in particular, both longer and more prosperous will our days prove in this land of our pilgrimage, in which God hath placed us to sojourn: but, without all question, eternal and infinite shall our felicity be, in that land of promise, the heavenly Canaan, which he hath appointed for our inheritance; and which that we may all inherit accordingly, He of his mercy grant, &c.

LECTURE XXIV.

SIXTH COMMANDMENT.

HAVING set before you, under the fifth commandment, the particular duties, which inferiors and superiors owe each to the other; I proceed now to those remaining precepts, which express the general duties of all men to all men.

Amongst these, as life is the foundation of every thing valuable to us, the preservation of it is justly entitled to the first place. And accordingly the sixth commandment is, *Thou shalt do no murder*. Murder is taking away a person's life, with design, and without authority. Unless both concur, it doth not deserve that name.

I. It is not murder, unless it be with design. He who is duly careful to avoid doing harm, and unhappily, notwithstanding that, kills another, though he hath cause to be extremely sorry for it, yet is intirely void of guilt on account of it. For his will having no share in the action, it is not, in a moral sense, his. But if he doth the mischief through heedlessness, or levity of mind, or inconsiderate vehemence, here is a fault. If the likelihood of mischief could be foreseen, the fault is greater; and the highest degree of such negligence, or impetuous rashness, comes near to bad intention.

2. It is not murder, unless it be without authority. Now a person hath authority, from the law both of God and man, to defend his own life, if he cannot do it otherwise, by the death of whoever attacks it unjustly: whose destruction, in that case, is of his own seeking, and *his blood on his own head**. But nothing, short of the most imminent danger, ought ever to carry us to such an extremity: and a good person will spare ever so bad a one, as far as he can with any prospect of safety. Again, proper magistrates have authority to sentence offenders to death, on sufficient proof of such crimes as the welfare of the community requires to be thus punished; and to employ others in the execution of that sentence. And private persons have authority, and in proper circumstances are obliged, to seize and prosecute such offenders: for all this is only another sort of self-defence: defending the public from what else would be pernicious to it. And the Scripture hath said, that the sovereign power *beareth not the sword in vain*†. But in whatever cases gentler punishments would sufficiently answer the ends of government, surely capital ones are forbidden by this commandment. Self-defence, in the last place, authorizes whole nations to make war upon other nations, when it is the only way to obtain redress of injuries, which cannot be supported; or security against impending ruin. To determine whether the state is indeed in these unhappy circumstances, belongs to the supreme jurisdiction: and the question ought to be considered very conscientiously. For wars, begun or continued without necessity, are unchristian and inhuman; as many murders are committed, as lives are lost in them; besides the innumer-

* 2 Sam. i. 16. 1 Kings ii. 37. Ezek. xxxiii. 4.

† Rom. xiii. 4.

able sins and miseries of other sorts, with which they are always attended. But subjects, in their private capacity, are incompetent judges of what is requisite for the public weal: nor can the guardians of it permit them to act upon their judgement, were they to make one. Therefore they may lawfully serve in wars, which their superiors have unlawfully undertaken, excepting perhaps such offensive wars as are notoriously unjust. In others, it is no more the business of the soldiery to consider the grounds of their sovereign's taking up arms, than it is the business of the executioner to examine whether the magistrate hath passed a right sentence.

You see then in what cases killing is not murder; in all, but these, it is. And you cannot fail of seeing the guilt of this crime to be singularly great and heinous. It brings designedly upon one of our brethren, without cause, what human nature abhors and dreads most. It cuts him off from all the enjoyments of this life at once, and sends him into another for which possibly he was not yet prepared. It defaces the image, and defeats the design, of God. It overturns the great purpose of government and laws, mutual safety. It robs the society of a member, and consequently of a part of its strength. It robs the relations, friends, and dependants, of the person destroyed, of every benefit and pleasure, which else they might have had from him. And the injury done, in all these respects, hath the terrible aggravation, that it cannot be recalled. Most wisely therefore hath our Creator surrounded murder with a peculiar horror; that nature, as well as reason, may deter from it every one, who is not utterly abandoned to the worst of wickedness; and most justly hath he appointed the sons of Noah, that is, all mankind, to

punish death with death. *Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed; for in the image of God made he man**. And that nothing may protect so daring an offender, he enjoined the Jews, in the chapter which follows the ten commandments: *If a man come presumptuously upon his neighbour to slay him with guile, thou shalt take him from mine altar, that he may die†*. But supposing, what seldom happens, that the murderer may escape judicial vengeance; yet what piercing reflections, what continual terrors and alarms must he carry about with him! And could he be hardened against these, it would only subject him the more inevitably to that future condemnation, from which nothing but the deepest repentance can possibly exempt him. For *no murderer hath eternal life‡*; but they shall have their part in the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death§.

But shocking, and deserving of punishment here and hereafter, as this crime always is; yet there are circumstances, which may augment it greatly. If the person, whom any one deprives of life, be placed in lawful authority over him; or united in relation or friendship to him; or have done him kindnesses; or only never have done him harm; or be, in a peculiar degree, good, useful, or pitiable; each of these things considerably increases the sin, though some indeed more than others. Again, if the horrid fact be formally contrived, and perhaps the design carried on through a length of time; this argues a much more steady and inflexible depravity of heart, than the commission of it in a sudden rage. But still, even the last, though it hath, in the law of this country, a

* Gen. ix. 6.

† Exod. xxi. 14.

‡ 1 John iii. 15.

§ Rev. xxi. 8.

different name, of man-slaughter, given it, and a different punishment prescribed for the first offence ; yet in the sight of God it is as truly murder as the former, though freer from aggravations. The mischief done is done purposely ; and neither passion, nor provocation, gives authority for doing it, or even any great excuse. For as God hath required us, he hath certainly enabled us, to restrain the hastiest sallies of our anger, especially from such enormities as this.

Nor doth it materially alter the nature, or lessen at all the degree of the sin, if, whilst we attack another, we give him an opportunity to defend himself, and attack us : as in duelling. Still taking away his life is murder : exposing our own is so likewise ; as I shall quickly shew you. And an appointment of two persons to meet for this purpose, under pretence of being bound to it by their honour, is an agreement in form to commit, for the sake of an absurd notion, or rather an unmeaning word, the most capital offence against each other, and their Maker ; of which, if their intention succeed, they cannot have time to repent.

As to the manner, in which murder is committed ; whether a person do it directly himself, or employ another ; whether he do it by force, or fraud, or colour of justice ; accusing falsely, or taking any unfair advantage : these things make little further difference in the guilt, than that the most artful and studied way is generally the worst.

And though a design of murder should not take effect ; yet whoever hath done all that he could towards it, is plainly as much a sinner, as if it had. Nay, doing any thing towards it, or so much as once intending it, or assisting or encouraging any other who intends it, is the same sort of wickedness. And if a person doth not directly design the death of an-

other; yet if he designedly doth what he knows or suspects may probably occasion it; he is, in proportion to his knowledge, or suspicion, guilty. Nay, if he is only negligent in matters, which may affect human life; or meddles with them, when he hath cause to think he understands them not, he is far from innocent. And there are several professions and employments, in which these truths ought to be considered with a peculiar degree of seriousness.

Further yet: if it be criminal to contribute in any manner towards taking a person's life immediately; it must be criminal also to contribute any thing towards shortening it, which is taking it away after a time: whether by bringing any bodily disease upon him, or causing him any grief or anxiety of mind, or by what indeed will produce both, distressing him in his circumstances: concerning which the son of Sirach saith: *He that taketh away his neighbour's living, slayeth him; and he that defraudeth the labourer of his hire, is a blood-shedder**.

Indeed, if we cause or procure any sort of hurt to another, though it hath no tendency to deprive him of life, yet if it makes any part of his life, more or less, uneasy or uncomfortable, we deprive him so far of what makes it valuable to him: which is equivalent to taking so much of it away from him, or possibly worse.

Nay, if we do a person no harm: yet if we wish him harm, St. John hath determined the case: *Who-soever hateth his brother is a murderer†*. For indeed, hatred not only leads to murder; and too often, when indulged, produces it unexpectedly; but it is always, though perhaps for the most part in a lower degree, the very spirit of murder in the heart; and it

* Eccles xxxiv. 22.

† 1 John iii. 15.

is by our hearts that God will judge us. Nay, should our dislike of another not rise to fixed hatred and malice; yet if it rise to unjust anger, we know our Saviour's declaration, *It was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgement. But I say unto you, Whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgement**. That is, whosoever is angry, either with persons that he ought not, or on occasions that he ought not, or more vehemently, or sooner, or longer than he ought, is guilty in some measure of that uncharitableness of which murder is the highest act; and liable to the punishment of it in the same proportion.

Nor even yet have I carried the explanation of this commandment to the extent of our duty. Whoever doth not, as far as can be reasonably expected from him, endeavour to guard his neighbour from harm, to make peace, to relieve distress and want, fails of what love to human kind certainly requires. Now *love is the fulfilling of the law†*: and *he that loveth not his brother, abideth in death‡*.

We are also carefully to observe, that however heinous it is, to sin against the temporal life of any one; injuring him in respect of his eternal interests, is yet unspeakably worse. If it be unlawful to kill or hurt the body, or overlook men's worldly necessities; much more is it to *destroy* the soul of *our brother, for whom Christ died§*: or any way endanger it; or even suffer it to continue in danger, if we have in our power the proper and likely means of delivering it. And, on the other hand, all that mercy and humanity, which, in the civil concerns of our neigh-

* Matth. v. 21, 22.

† Rom. xiii. 10.

‡ 1 John iii. 14.

§ Rom. xiv. 15.

bours is so excellent a duty, must proportionably be still more excellent in their religious ones, and of higher value in the sight of God.

Hitherto I have considered the prohibition, *Thou shalt do no murder*, as respecting others: but it forbids also self-murder. As we are not to commit violence against the image of God in the person of any of our brethren: so neither in our own. As we are not to rob the society to which we belong, or any part of it, of the service, which any other of its members might do it; we are not to rob either of what we might do. As we are not to send any one else out of the world prematurely; we are not to send ourselves; but *wait with patience all the days of our appointed time, till our change come**. If the sins, which persons have committed, prompt them to despair; they of all others, instead of rushing into the presence of God by adding this dreadful one to them, should earnestly desire *space to repent†*, which, by his grace, the worst of sinners may do, and be forgiven. If their misfortunes or sufferings make them weary of life; he hath sent them these with design, that they should not by unlawful means evade them, but go through them well; whether they be inflicted for the punishment of their faults, or the trial of their virtues. In either case, we are to submit quietly to the discipline of our heavenly Father: which he will not suffer to be heavier than we can bear, whatever we may imagine; but will support us under it, improve us by it, and in due time release us from it. But in any case for persons to make away with themselves, is to arraign the constitution of things which he hath appointed; and to refuse living where he hath put them to live: a very provoking instance of undutifulness, and made peculiarly fatal

* Job xiv. 14.

† Rev. ii. 21.

by this circumstance, that leaving usually no room for repentance, it leaves none for pardon: always excepting, where it proceeds from a mind so disordered by a bodily disease, as to be incapable of judging or acting reasonably. For God knows with certainty when this is the cause, and when not: and will accordingly either make due allowances, or make none.

And if destroying ourselves be a sin, doing any thing wilfully or heedlessly, that tends to our destruction, must in proportion be a sin. Where indeed necessity requires great hazards to be run by some persons for the good of others; as in war, in extinguishing dangerous fires, in several cases which might be named; or where employments and professions which somebody or other must undertake, or such diligence in any employment as men are by accidents really called to use, impair health and shorten life; there, far from being thrown away, it is laudably spent in the service of God and man. But for any person to bring on himself an untimely end, by adventurous rashness, by ungoverned passion, by an immoderate anxiety, or by an obstinate or careless neglect of his own preservation, is unquestionably sinful. And above all, doing it by debauchery or immoral excess, is a most effectual way of ruining the soul and body at once.

Let us therefore be conscientiously watchful against every thing which may provoke, or entice us, to be injurious, either to others or ourselves. And God grant, that we may so regard the lives of our fellow-creatures, and so employ our own, that we may ever please the Giver and Lord of life; and having faithfully lived to him here, may eternally live with him hereafter, through Jesus Christ our only Saviour. Amen.

LECTURE XXV.

SEVENTH COMMANDMENT.

IN speaking to this commandment it is proper to begin with observing, that as in the sixth, where murder is forbidden, every thing which tends to it, or proceeds from the same bad principle with it, is forbidden too : so here, in the seventh, where adultery is prohibited, the prohibition must be extended to whatever else is criminal in the same kind. And therefore, in explaining it, I shall treat, first of the fidelity which it requires from married persons, and then of the chastity and modesty which it requires from all persons.

First of the fidelity owing to each other from married persons.

Not only the Scripture account of the creation of mankind is a proof to as many as believe in Scripture, that the union of one man with one woman was the original design and will of Heaven ; but the remarkable equality of males and females born into the world is an evidence of it to all men. Yet notwithstanding it must be owned, the cohabitation of one man with several wives at the same time was prac-

tised very anciently in the darker ages, even by some of the patriarchs, who were otherwise good persons ; but, having no explicit revealed rule concerning this matter, failed of discerning the above-mentioned purpose of God, and both this error and that of divorce on slight occasions, were tolerated by the law of Moses. But that was only as the laws of other countries often connive at what the lawgiver is far from approving. Accordingly God expressed, particularly by the prophet Malachi*, his dislike of these things. And our Saviour both tells the Jews, that Moses permitted divorces at pleasure, merely *because of the hardness of their hearts*, and peremptorily declares, that *whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery*†. Now certainly it cannot be less adulterous to marry a second without putting away the first.

Nor is polygamy (that is, the having more wives than one at once) prohibited in holy writ alone, but condemned by many of the heathens themselves, who allege against it very plain and forcible reasons. It is inconsistent with a due degree of mutual affection in the parties, and due care in the education of their children. It introduces into families perpetual subjects of the bitterest enmity and jealousy ; keeps a multitude of females in most unnatural bondage, frequently under guardians fitted for the office by unnatural cruelty ; and tempts a multitude of males, thus left unprovided for, to unnatural lusts. In civilized and well-regulated countries therefore, single marriages have either been established at first, or prevailed afterwards on experience of their preferableness ; and a mutual promise of inviolable faithfulness to the marriage-bed hath been understood to be an

* Mal. ii. 14, 15, 16.

† Mat. xix. 8, 9.

essential part of the contract: which promise is with us most solemnly expressed in the office of matrimony, by as clear and comprehensive words as can be devised. And unless persons are at liberty in all cases to slight the most awful vows to God, and the most deliberate engagements of each to the other; how can they be at liberty in this, where public good and private happiness are so deeply interested?

Breaches of plighted faith, as they must be preceded by a want of sufficient conjugal affection in the offending party, so they tend to extinguish all the remains of it: and this change will be perceived, and will give uneasiness to the innocent one, though the cause be hid. But if it be known, or merely suspected by the person wronged, (which it seldom fails to be in a little time) it produces, from the make of the human mind, in warmer tempers, a resentment so strong, in milder, an affliction so heavy, that few things in the world equal either. *For love is strong as death, jealousy is cruel as the grave, the coals thereof are coals of fire**. And with whatever vehemence they burn inwardly or outwardly, it can be no wonder; when perfidious unkindness is found in that nearest relation, where truth and love were deliberately pledged, and studiously paid on one side in expectation of a suitable return; and when the tenderest part of the enjoyment of life is given up beyond recall into the hands of a traitor, who turns it into the acutest misery. To what a height grief and anger on one side, and neglect ripened into scorn and hatred on the other, may carry such calamities, cannot be foreseen: but at least they utterly destroy that union of hearts, that reciprocal confidence, that openness of communication, that sameness of interests, of joys

* Cant. viii. 6.

and of sorrows, which constitute the principal felicity of the married state. And besides, how very frequently do the consequences of these transgressions affect, and even ruin, the health or the fortune, it may be both, of the blameless person in common with the other; and perhaps derive down diseases and poverty to successive generations!

These are fruits which unfaithfulness in either party may produce. In one it may produce yet more. A woman, guilty of this crime, who, to use the words of Scripture, *forsaketh the guide of her youth, and forgetteth the covenant of her God**, brings peculiar disgrace on her husband, her children, and friends: and may bring an illegitimate offspring to inherit what is the right of others: nor is the infamy and punishment, to which she exposes herself, a less dreadful evil for being a deserved one. And if falsehood on the men's part hath not all the same aggravations, it hath very great ones in their stead. They are almost constantly the tempters: they often carry on their wicked designs for a long time together: they too commonly use the vilest means to accomplish them. And as they claim the strictest fidelity, it is ungenerous, as well as unjust, to fail of paying it. All men must feel how bitter it would be to them to be injured in this respect; let them think then what it is to be injurious in it: and since the crime is the same when committed by them, as when committed against them, let them own that it deserves the same condemnation from the Judge of the world. *The Lord hath been witness, saith the prophet, between thee and the wife of thy youth, against whom thou dealest treacherously; yet is she thy companion, and the wife of thy covenant. Therefore take heed to your*

* Prov. ii. 17.

*spirit, and let none deal treacherously with the wife of his youth**.

It will be safest, but I hope it is not necessary, to add, that an unmarried man or woman, offending with the wife or husband of any one, being no less guilty of adultery than the person with whom the offence is committed, is consequently an accomplice in all the wickedness and all the mischief above-mentioned; and this frequently with aggravating circumstances of the greatest baseness and treachery, and ingratitude and cruelty, that can be imagined. Whatever some may plead, surely none can think such behaviour defensible; and most surely they will not find it so; for *marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled; but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge*†.

The crime of adultery being so great, it follows, that all improper familiarities, which, though undesignedly, may lead to adultery, and all imprudent behaviour, which may give suspicion of it, is to be avoided as matter of conscience; that all groundless jealousy is to be checked by those who are inclined to it, and discouraged by others, as most heinous injustice; and that every thing should be carefully observed by both parties, which may endear them to each other. No persons therefore should ever enter into the marriage bond with such as they cannot esteem and love: and all persons, who have entered into it, should use all means, not only to preserve esteem and love, but to increase it: affectionate condescension on the husband's part, chearful submission on the wife's; mildness and tenderness, prudence and attention to their common interest, and that of their joint posterity, on both parts. It is usually, in a

* Mal. ii. 14, 15.

† Heb. xiii. 4.

great measure at least, from the want of these engaging qualities in one or the other, that falsehood arises. And if that doth not, some other evil will; too likely to produce effects equally grievous, and therefore to be considered as equally forbidden.

But now, from the mutual fidelity required of married persons, I proceed, secondly, to the chastity and modesty required of all persons.

Supposing that only such as live single were to be guilty with each other; yet by means even of this licentiousness, in proportion as it prevails, the regularity and good order of society is overturned, the credit and peace of families destroyed, the proper disposal of young people in marriage prevented, the due education of children and provision for them neglected, the keenest animosities perpetually excited, and the most shocking murders frequently committed, of the parties themselves, their rivals, their innocent babes: in short, every enormity follows from hence, that lawless passion can introduce. For all sins indeed, but especially this, lead persons on to more and greater: to all manner of falsehood to secure their success, all manner of dishonesty to provide for the expensiveness of these courses, all manner of barbarity to hide the shame or lighten the inconveniencies of them: till thus they become abandoned to every crime, by indulging this one.

But let us consider the fatal effects of it on the two sexes separately. Women, that lose their innocence, which seldom fails of being soon discovered, lose their good name intirely along with it; are marked out and given up at once to almost irrecoverable infamy: and even mere suspicion hath in some measure the same bad consequences with certain proof. It is, doubtless, extremely unjust to work up mere impru-

dencies into gross transgressions: and even the greatest transgressors ought to be treated with all possible compassion, when they appear truly penitent. But, unless they appear so, a wide distinction between them and others ought to be made. And they who contribute, whether designedly or thoughtlessly, to place good, bad, and doubtful characters all on a level, do most preposterously obscure and debase their own virtue, if they have any; keep guilt in countenance, and defraud right conduct of the peculiar esteem which belongs to it: thus injuring at once the cause of religion and morals, and the interests of society. But besides the general disregard, of which vicious women will experience not a little, even in places and times of the most relaxed ways of thinking, they have a sorer evil to expect; of being, sooner or later, for the most part very soon, cast off and abandoned, with contempt and scorn, by their seducers. Or even should they have reparation made them by marriage; this doth not take away the sin at all, and the disgrace but very imperfectly: not to say, that it still leaves them peculiarly exposed to the reproaches and the jealousy of their husbands ever after.

And if men, that seduce women, are not looked on by the world with so much abhorrence, as women that are seduced, at least they deserve to be looked on with greater. For there cannot easily be more exquisite wickedness, than, merely for gratifying of a brutal appetite or idle fancy, to change all the prospect, which a young person hath of being happy and respected through life, into guilt, and dishonour, and distress, out of which too probably she will never be disentangled, under the false and treacherous pretence of tender regard. If we have any feeling of

conscience within us, we must feel this to be most unworthy behaviour. And if the ruler of the world hath any attention to the moral character of his rational creatures, which is the noblest object of his attention that can be conceived, he must shew it on such occasions : and therefore may be believed, when he saith he will.

But supposing men not to corrupt the innocent, but to sin with such alone as make a profession of sin ; yet even this manner of breaking the law of God hath most dreadful consequences. It hinders the increase of a nation in general. It leaves the few children, that proceed from these mixtures, abandoned to misery, uselessness, and wickedness. It turns aside the minds of persons from beneficial and laudable employments to mean sensual pursuits. It encourages and increases the most dissolute, and in every sense abandoned set of wretches in the world, common prostitutes, to their own miserable and early destruction ; and that of multitudes of unwary youths, who would else have escaped. It debases the heart, by the influence of such vile and profligate company, to vile and profligate ways of thinking and acting. It sometimes produces quarrels that are immediately fatal : sometimes friendships that are equally so, to every valuable purpose of life. It leads men to extravagance and profusion, grieves all that wish them well, distresses those who are to support them, and drives them to the most criminal methods of supporting themselves. It tempts men to excesses and irregularities of every kind, wastes their health and strength, brings on them painful and opprobrious diseases, too often communicated to those whom they afterwards marry ; and to their miserable posterity, if they have any. By all these mischiefs, which for the

most part come upon them in the beginning of their days, the remainder of them is usually made either *short or tedious*, perhaps both*. With great wisdom therefore doth Solomon exhort: *Remove thy way from the strange woman, and come not nigh the door of her house: lest thou give thine honour unto others, and thy years unto the cruel: lest strangers be filled with thy wealth, and thou mourn at the last, when thy flesh and thy body are consumed, and say, How have I hated instruction, and my heart despised reproof; and I have not obeyed the voice of my teachers. For the ways of man are before the eyes of the Lord, and he pondereth all his goings. His own iniquities shall take the wicked, and he shall be holden with the cords of his sins†.*

It is very true, the sins of the flesh do not always produce all the bitter fruits which I have mentioned. But then such instances of them, as at first are imagined the safest, frequently prove extremely hurtful; or however entice persons on to worse, till they come at length to the most flagrant and pernicious. Very few, who transgress the Scripture bounds, ever stop at those lengths, which themselves, when they set out, thought the greatest that were defensible. Liberties, taken by men before marriage, incline them to repeat the same liberties after marriage; and also to entertain the most injurious jealousies of good women, grounded on the knowledge which they have formerly had of bad ones. Their past successes embolden and incite them to new and more flagitious attempts: and by appetites thus indulged, and habits contracted, they are carried on perpetually further and further, till they come to be guilty, and sometimes merely for the sake and the name of being guilty, of

* Wisd. ii. 1.

† Prov. v. 8—13, 21, 22.

what they would once have trembled to hear proposed.

But supposing they keep within the limits of what they at first imagined to be allowable; is imagination (and reason, when biassed by passions, is nothing better) the test of truth? Supposing their behaviour could be harmless otherwise, is not the example dangerous? Will or can the world around them take notice of all the pretended peculiarities that distinguish their case, and preserve it from being a sin, while other crimes to which at first sight it is very like, are confessedly great ones? or will not all, who have bad inclinations or unsettled principles, take shelter under their practice, and either despise their refinements, or easily invent similar ones for their own use?

But further yet: if it be argued, that offences of this nature may by circumstances be rendered excusable, why not others also? why may not robbery, why may not murder be defended, by saying, that though undoubtedly in general they are very wrong, yet in such and such particular occurrences, there is on the whole very little hurt, or none at all, done by them, but perhaps good? And what would become of the human race, were such pleas admitted? The ends of government can be attained by no other than by plain, determinate, comprehensive laws, to be steadily observed: and no one's inclinations, or fanciful theories, are to decide, when they bind, and when not: but deviations from them are criminal, if on no other account, yet because they are deviations: though differently criminal indeed according to their different degrees. Thus in the matter before us, what approaches nearer to marriage is, ordinarily speaking, so far less blameable, than what is more distant

from it; but nothing can be void of blame, and of great blame, that breaks the ordinances of God or man. For even the latter, if they oblige the conscience in any case, must oblige it in this, where public and private welfare is so essentially concerned. And as to the former, though sensual irregularities may suit very well with some sorts of superstition, yet their inconsistency with any thing that deserves the name of religion, is confessed in effect by the persons guilty of them. For if some few such do hypocritically, in vain hope of concealment, keep on the appearance of it, yet who amongst them can preserve the reality of it? Offences of this kind, how plausibly soever palliated, yet, being committed against known prohibitions, wear out of the mind all reverence to God's commandments, all expectation of his future favour, nay, the very desire of spiritual happiness hereafter. And though many, who indulge in licentiousness, have notwithstanding very good qualities; yet, would they review their hearts and lives, they would find that they have much the fewer for it; and that those which remain are often made useless, often endangered, often perverted by it.

But the sins already mentioned, are by no means the only ones to be avoided in consequence of this commandment: whatever invites to them, whatever approaches towards them, whatever is contrary to decency and honour, whatever taints the purity of the mind, inflames the passions, and wears off the impressions of virtuous shame; all immodesty of appearance or behaviour; all entertainments, books, pictures, conversations, tending to excite or excuse the indulgence of irregular desires, are in their proportion prohibited and criminal. And unless we prudently guard against the smaller offences of this

kind, the more heinous will be too likely to force their way: as our Lord very strongly warns us. *Ye have heard, it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: but I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart**. And although vicious inclinations were never to go further than the heart: yet if, instead of merely intruding against our will, they are designedly encouraged to dwell there, they corrupt the very fountain of spiritual life: and none but *the pure in heart shall see God†*.

All persons therefore should be very careful to turn their minds from forbidden objects, to fix their attention so constantly and steadily on useful and commendable employments as to have no leisure for vices, and to govern themselves by such rules of temperance and prudence, that every sensual appetite may be kept in subjection to the dictates of reason and the laws of religion; always remembering that Christianity both delivers to us the strictest precepts of holiness, and sets before us the strongest motives to it; our peculiar relation to a holy God and Saviour; our being *the temples of the Holy Ghost‡*, which temple if any man defile, him will God destroy§; our being pilgrims and strangers on earth||, not intended to have our portion here, but to inherit a spiritual happiness hereafter; and every one that hath this hope, must purify himself even as God is pure¶. I shall conclude therefore with St. Paul's exhortation: *Fornication, and all uncleanness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: for this*

* Matth. v. 27, 28.

† Matth. v. 8.

‡ 1 Cor. vi. 19.

§ 1 Cor. iii. 17.

|| 1 Pet. ii. 11.

¶ 1 John iii. 3.

ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. Be not ye therefore partakers with them: walk as children of light, and have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness.*

* Eph. v. 3—11.

LECTURE XXVI.

EIGHTH COMMANDMENT.

UNDER the eighth commandment is comprehended our duty to our neighbour, in respect of his worldly substance. And, to explain it distinctly, I shall endeavour to shew,

I. What it forbids: and

II. What, by consequence, it requires.

I. As to the former. The wickedness of mankind hath invented ways to commit such an astonishing variety of sins against this commandment, that it is impossible to reckon them up, and dreadful to think of them. But most, if not all of them, are so manifestly sins, that the least reflection is enough to make any one sensible, how much he is bound conscientiously to avoid them. And he, who desires to preserve himself innocent, easily may.

The most open and shameless crime of this sort, is robbery; taking from another what is his, by force: which, adding violence against his person to invasion of his property, and making every part of human life unsafe, is a complicated transgression, of very deep guilt.

The next degree is secret theft: privately convert-

ing to our own use what is not our own. To do this in matters of great value, is confessedly pernicious wickedness. And though it were only in what may seem a trifle: yet every man's right to the smallest part of what belongs to him is the same, as to the largest: and he ought no more to be wronged of one, than of the other. Besides, little instances of dishonesty cause great disquiet: make the sufferers distrustful of all about them: sometimes of those, who are the farthest from deserving it: make them apprehensive continually, that some heavier injury will follow. And indeed almost all offenders begin with slight offences. More heinous ones would shock them at first: but if they once allow themselves in lesser faults; they go on without reluctance, by degrees, to worse and worse, till at last they scruple nothing. Always therefore beware of small sins. And always remember, what I have before observed to you, that when any thing is committed to your care and trust, to be dishonest in that is peculiarly base.

But, besides what every body calls theft, there are many practices, which amount indirectly to much the same thing, however disguised in the world under gentler names. Thus, in the way of trade and business: if the seller puts off any thing for better than it is, by false assertions, or deceitful arts: if he takes advantage of the buyer's ignorance, or particular necessities, or good opinion of him, to insist on a larger price for it than the current value; or if he gives less in quantity than he professes, or is understood to give: the frequency of some of these things cannot alter the nature of any of them: no one can be ignorant, that they are wrong, but such as are wilfully or very carelessly ignorant: and the declaration of

Scripture against the last of them is extended, in the same place, to every one of the rest. *Thou shalt not have in thy bag divers weights, a great and a small: thou shalt not have in thine house divers measures, a great and a small. For all that do such things, and all that do unrighteously, are an abomination unto the Lord thy God**.

On the other hand: if the buyer takes advantage of his own wealth, and the poverty or present distress of the seller, to beat down the price of his merchandise beyond reason; or if he buys up the whole of a commodity, especially if it be a necessary one, to make immoderate gain of it; or if he refuses or neglects to pay for what he hath bought: or delays his payments beyond the time, within which, by agreement or the known course of traffic, they ought to be made: all such behaviour is downright injustice and breach of God's law. For the rule is, *If thou sellest ought unto thy neighbour, or buyest ought of thy neighbour's hand, ye shall not oppress one another†*.

Again: borrowing on fraudulent securities, or false representations of our circumstances; or without intention, or without proper care afterwards to repay; preferring the gratification of our covetousness, our vanity, our voluptuousness, our indolence, before the satisfying of our just debts: all this is palpable wickedness. And just as bad as the contrary wickedness, of demanding exorbitant interest for lending to ignorant or thoughtless persons; or to extravagant ones, for carrying on their extravagance; or to necessitous ones, whose necessities it must continually increase, and make their ruin, after a while, more certain, more difficult to retrieve, and more hurtful to all with whom they are concerned. The Scripture hath par-

* Deut. xxv. 13—16.

† Lev. xxv. 14.

ticularly forbidden it in the last case, and enjoined a very different sort of behaviour. *If thy brother be waxen poor, and fallen in decay with thee; then shalt thou relieve him: yea, though he be a stranger, or a sojourner. Thou shalt not give him thy money upon usury, nor lend him thy victuals for increase; but fear thy God, that thy brother may dwell with thee**. And the Psalmist hath expressed the two opposite characters, on these occasions, very briefly and clearly. *The wicked borroweth, and payeth not again: but the righteous sheweth mercy, and giveth†*.

Another crying iniquity is, when hired servants, labourers, or workmen of any sort, are ill used in their wages: whether by giving them too little: or, which is often full as bad, deferring it too long. The word of God forbids this last in very strong terms. *Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbour, neither rob him: the wages of him that is hired, shall not abide with thee, meaning, if demanded, or wanted, all night until the morning‡. At his day shalt thou give him his hire; neither shall the sun go down upon it; for§ he is poor, and setteth his heart upon it: lest he cry against thee unto the Lord, and it be sin unto thee||. Nay, the son of Sirach carries it, with reason, (as I observed to you on the sixth commandment) further still. *The bread of the needy is their life: he that defraudeth the labourer of his hire, is a blood-shedder¶*.—*

But, besides all these instances of unrighteousness, there are many more that are frequent, in all kinds of contracts. Driving bargains, that we know are too hard; or insisting rigidly on the performance of them, after they appear to be so: making no abate-

* Lev. xxv. 35, &c.

† Lev. xix. 13.

|| Deut. xxiv. 15.

‡ Psalm xxxvii. 21.

§ For—or when.

¶ Eccles xxxiv. 21, 22.

ments, when bad times, or unexpected losses, or other alterations of circumstances call for them: not inquiring into the grounds of complaints, when there is a likelihood of their being just: throwing unreasonable burthens upon others, merely because they dare not refuse them: keeping them to the very words and letter of an agreement, contrary to the equitable intention of it: or, on the other hand, alleging some flaw and defect in form, to get loose from an agreement, which ought to have been strictly observed: all these things are grievous oppression. And though some of them may not be in the least contrary to law, yet they are utterly irreconcilable with good conscience. Human laws cannot provide for all cases: and sometimes the vilest iniquities may be committed under their authority, and by their means.

It is therefore a further lamentable breach of this commandment, when one person puts another to the charge and hazard of law unjustly or needlessly; or, in ever so necessary a law-suit, occasions unnecessary expences, and contrives unfair delays: in short, when any thing is done by either party; by the counsel, that plead or advise in the cause, or by the judge, who determines it, contrary to real justice and equity.

Indeed, when persons, by any means whatever, withhold from another his right; either keeping him ignorant of it, or forcing him to unreasonable cost or trouble to obtain it; this, in its proportion, is the same kind of injury with stealing from him. To see the rich and great, in these or any ways, bear hard upon the poor, is very dreadful: and truly it is little, if at all, less so, when the lower sort of people are unmerciful, as they are but too often, one to another. For, as Solomon observes, *A poor man, that oppresseth*

the poor, is like a sweeping rain, which leaveth no food.*

But if it be a person ever so wealthy, that is wronged; still his wealth is his own: and no one can have more right to take the least part of it from him, without his consent, than to rob the meanest wretch in the world. Suppose it be a body or number of men; suppose it to be the government, the public, that is cheated; be it of more or less, be it of so little as not to be sensibly missed; let the guilt be divided amongst ever so many; let the practice be ever so common; still it is the same crime, however it may vary in degrees: and the rule is without exception, that *no man go beyond, or defraud his brother in any matter†.*

It surely scarce needs to be added, that whatever things it is unlawful to do, it is also unlawful to advise, encourage, help, or protect others in doing: that buying, receiving, or concealing stolen goods, knowing them to be such, is becoming a partner in the stealth: and that being any way a patron, assistant, or tool of injustice, is no less evidently wrong, than being the immediate and principal agent in it.

And as the wrongness of all these things is very plain, so is the folly of them. Common robbers and thieves are the most miserable set of wretches upon earth: in perpetual danger, perpetual frights and alarms; obliged to support their spirits by continual excesses, which, after the gay madness of a few hours, depress them to the most painful lowness; confined to the most hateful and hellish society; very soon, generally speaking, betrayed by their dearest companions, or hunted out by vigilant officers; then shut up in horror, condemned to open shame, if not to an untimely death; and the more surely undone for ever

* Prov. xxviii. 3.

† 1 Thess. iv. 6.

in the next life, the more insensible they are of their sufferings and their sins in this.

Nor do they, of whose guilt the law can take little or no cognizance, escape a heavy and bitter self-condemnation from time to time; nor usually the bad opinion of the world; which last alone will frequently do them more harm, than any unfair practices will do them good. But especially this holds in the middle and lower, which is vastly the larger, part of mankind. Their livelihood depends chiefly on their character; and their character depends on their honesty. This will make amends for many other defects; but nothing will make amends for the want of this. Deceitful craft may seem perhaps a shorter method of gain, than uprightness and diligence. But they, who get wickedly, spend, for the most part, foolishly, perhaps wickedly too: and so all that stays by them is their guilt. Or let them be ever so cunning, and appear for a while to thrive ever so fast; yet remember the sayings of the wise king: *An inheritance may be gotten hastily at the beginning; but the end thereof shall not be blessed**. *Treasures of wickedness profit nothing: but righteousness delivereth from death†*. *Wealth, gotten by vanity, shall be diminished: but he that gathereth by labour, shall increase‡*. Or, should the prosperity of persons who raise themselves by ill means, last as long as their lives; yet their lives may be cut short. For what the prophet threatens, often comes to pass, and is always to be feared: *He that getteth riches, and not by right, shall leave them in the midst of his days, and at his end shall be a fool§*. But should his days on earth be extended to the utmost;

* Prov. xx. 21.

† Prov. x. 2.

‡ Prov. xiii. 11.

§ Jer. xvii. 11.

yet the sinner, an hundred years old, shall be accursed*. For the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God†: but the Lord is the avenger of all such‡.

Let every one therefore consider seriously, in the first place, what this commandment forbids; and abstain from it. Though he fare more hardly; though he lay up less; though he be despised for his conscientiousness, provided it be a reasonable one; surely it is well worth while to bear these things, rather than injure our fellow-creatures, and offend our Maker.

But let us now proceed to consider,

II. What the commandment before us, by consequence, requires. And,

1. It requires restitution of whatever we have, at any time, unjustly taken or detained. For, that being in right not our own, but another's; keeping it is continuing and carrying on the injustice. Therefore the prophet Ezekiel makes it an express condition of forgiveness: *If the wicked restore the pledge, and give again that he hath robbed; then he shall surely live, he shall not die§.* Nor was it till Zaccheus had engaged to restore amply what he had extorted from any one, that our Saviour declared, *this day is salvation come to this house||.* So that to think of raising wealth by fraud, and then growing honest, is the silliest scheme in the world: for till we have returned, or offered to return, as far as we can, all that we have got by our fraud, we are not honest. Nay, suppose we have spent and squandered it, still we remain debtors for it. Nay, suppose we got nothing, suppose we meant to get nothing, by any wicked contrivances, in which

* Isa. lxxv. 20.

† 1 Cor. vi. 9.

‡ 1 Thess. iv. 6.

§ Ezek. xxxiii. 15.

|| Luke xix. 8, 9.

we have been concerned; yet if we have caused another's loss, any loss for which money is a proper compensation; what we ought never to have done, we ought to undo as soon and as completely as we are able, however we straiten ourselves by it; otherwise we come short of making the amends, which may justly be expected from us: and while so important a part of repentance is wanting, to demonstrate the sincerity of the rest, we cannot hope to be accepted with God.

2. This commandment also requires industry: without which, the generality of persons cannot maintain themselves honestly. Therefore St. Paul directs: *Let him that stole, steal no more: but rather let him (and certainly, by consequence, every one else that needs) labour, working with his hands the thing which is good**. And each of them is to labour, not only for himself, but his family also, if he hath one: both for their present, and if possible, their future maintenance, in case of sickness, accidents, or old age. For as they, who belong to him, have, both by nature and by law, a claim to support from him, if they need it, and he can give it; neglecting to make due provision for them is wronging them; and throwing either them or himself upon others, when he may avoid it, or however might have avoided it, by proper diligence, is wronging others. For which reason the same Apostle commanded likewise, *that if any one would not work, neither should he eat†*.

In order to be just therefore, be industrious: and doubt not but you will find it, after a while at least, by much the most comfortable, as well as Christian, way of getting a livelihood. It is a way, that no one ought to think beneath him. For *better is he that*

* Eph. iv. 28.

† 2 Thess. iii. 10.

*laboureth, and aboundeth in all things; than he that boasteth himself, and wanteth bread**. It is the best preservative, that can be, from bad company, and bad courses. It procures the good will and good word of mankind. It exempts persons from the contempt and reproach of which those have bitter experience, who make a dependent state their choice. *Begging is sweet in the mouth of the shameless: but in his belly there shall burn a fire†*. Very different from this, is the case of the industrious. Their minds are at ease: their bodies are usually healthy: their time is employed as they know it should: what they get they enjoy with a good conscience, and it wears well. Nor do only the fruits of their labour delight them: but even labour itself becomes pleasant to them.

And though persons of higher condition are not bound to *work with their hands*; yet they also must be diligent in other ways: in the business of their offices and professions; or, if they have none, yet in the care of their families and affairs. Else the former will be ill-governed, wicked, and miserable: and the latter soon run into such disorder, as will almost force them, either to be unjust to their creditors, and those for whom nature binds them to provide; or to be guilty of mean and dishonourable actions of more kinds than one, to avoid these and other disagreeable consequences of their supineness. Besides, as the upper part of the world are peculiarly destined by Providence to be in one way or another extensively useful in society: such of them as are not, defraud it of the service they owe it, and therefore break this commandment. But,

3. To observe it well, frugality must be joined with

* Ecclus. x. 27.

† Ecclus. xl. 30.

industry: else it will be labour in vain. For unwise expensiveness will dissipate whatever the utmost diligence can acquire. But if idleness be added to extravagance, that brings on quick ruin. And if intemperance and debauchery go along with them, the case is then come to its extremity. Every one therefore, who desires to approve himself honest, should be careful to live within the bounds of his income, so as to have something in readiness against the time of inability and unforeseen events. But they who have, or design to have families, should endeavour to live a good deal within those bounds. And whoever spends upon himself, or throws away upon any other person or thing, more than he can prudently afford, (whatever false names of praise, as elegance, generosity, good-nature, may be given to this indiscretion) will be led, before he is aware, to distress himself, perhaps many more; and be too probably driven at last to repair, as well as he can, by wickedness, the breaches, which he hath made by folly.

4. This commandment requires, in the last place, that we neither deny ourselves, nor those who belong to us, what is fit for our and their station, which is one kind of robbery; nor omit to relieve the poor according to our ability, which is another kind. For whatever we enjoy of worldly plenty is given us in trust, that we should take our own share with moderation, and distribute out the remainder with liberality. And as they, who have but little, will, most or all of them, at one time or another, find those who have less; very few, if any, are exempted from giving some alms. And whoever either penuriously or thoughtlessly neglects his proper share of this duty, is unjust to his Maker and his fellow-creatures too. For the *good*, which God hath placed in our hands

for the poor, is undoubtedly, as the Scripture declares it, *their due*. He hath given them no right to seize it: but he hath bound us not to *withhold** it from them.

And now, having finished the two heads proposed, I shall only add, that by observing these directions from a principle of Christian faith; and teaching all under our care to observe them from the same; the poor in this world may be *rich towards God†*: and the rich may *treasure up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come*, which will enable them to *lay hold on eternal life‡*.

* Prov. iii. 27.

† Luke xii. 21.

‡ 1 Tim. vi. 19.

THE ninth commandment is connected with every one of the four which precede it. For neither the duties of superiors and inferiors, nor those amongst equals, could be tolerably practised; neither the lives of men, nor their happiness in the nearest relation of life, nor their possessions and properties, could ever be secure; if they were left exposed to those injuries of a licentious tongue, which are here prohibited. This commandment therefore was intended, partly to strengthen the foregoing ones; and partly also, to make provision for every person's just character on its own account, as well as for the sake of consequences. For, independently on these, we have by nature (and with reason) a great concern about our reputations. And therefore the precept, *Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour*, is, in all views, of much importance. The crime, at which these words principally and most expressly point, is giving false evidence in any case or trial. And as, in such cases, evidence hath always been given upon oath; this commandment, so far, is the same with the third: only there, per-

LECTURE XXVII.

NINTH COMMANDMENT.

THE ninth commandment is connected with every one of the four which precede it. For neither the duties of superiors and inferiors, nor those amongst equals, could be tolerably practised; neither the lives of men, nor their happiness in the nearest relation of life, nor their possessions and properties, could ever be secure; if they were left exposed to those injuries of a licentious tongue, which are here prohibited. This commandment therefore was intended, partly to strengthen the foregoing ones; and partly also, to make provision for every person's just character on its own account, as well as for the sake of consequences. For, independently on these, we have by nature (and with reason) a great concern about our reputations. And therefore the precept, *Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour*, is, in all views, of much importance.

The crime, at which these words principally and most expressly point, is giving false evidence in any cause or trial. And as, in such cases, evidence hath always been given upon oath; this commandment, so far, is the same with the third: only there, per-

jury is forbidden, as impiety against God; here, as injurious to men. Now we are guilty of this sin, if, in bearing witness, we affirm that we know or believe any thing, which we do not; or deny that we know or believe any thing which we do; or either affirm or deny more positively, than we have good grounds. Nay, if we only stifle, by our silence, any fact, which is material, though we are not examined particularly about it; still when we have sworn in general to speak the whole truth, we bear false witness, if we designedly avoid it; especially after being asked, if we are able to say any thing besides, relative to the point in question. For hiding the truth may as totally mislead those who are to judge, as telling an untruth. Indeed, if by any means whatever we disguise the real state of the case, instead of relating it in the fairest and plainest manner that we can: we evidently transgress the intent of this commandment. And by doing it, the good name, the property, the livelihood, the life of an innocent person, may be taken away; the advantages of society defeated, nay, perverted into mischiefs, and the very bonds of it dissolved. Therefore the rule of the Mosaic law is: *If a false witness rise up against any man, and testify against his brother that which is wrong; then shall ye do unto him, as he had thought to have done unto his brother, and thine eye shall not pity**. With us, indeed, the punishment extends not so far. But however mild such persons may find the penalties of human laws to be, or how artfully soever they may evade them; God hath declared: *A false witness shall not be unpunished: and he that speaketh lies shall not escape†*.

The commandment saith only, that we shall not

* Deut. xix. 16—21.

† Prov. xix. 5.

bear false witness *against* our neighbour : but in effect it binds us equally not to bear false witness *for* him. For in all trials of property, bearing witness for one party is bearing witness against the other. And in all trials for crimes, false evidence, to the advantage of the person accused, is to the disadvantage and ruin of right and truth, of public safety and peace ; by concealing and encouraging what ought to be detected and punished.

It being thus criminal to bear false witness ; it must be criminal also to draw persons into the commission of so great a sin, by gifts, or promises, or threatenings, or any other method. And, in its degree, it must be criminal to bring a false accusation, or false action, against any one ; or to make any sort of demand, for which there is no reasonable ground.

Nay further, however favourably persons are apt to think of the defendant's side ; yet to defend ourselves against justice, or even to delay it by unfair methods, is very wicked. For it ought to take place ; and the sooner the better. Still, both the professors of the law, and others, may unquestionably say and do, for a doubtful or a bad cause, whatever can be said with truth, or done with equity : for otherwise it might be thought still worse than it is ; and treated worse than it deserves. But if they do, in any cause, what in reason ought not to be done ; if they use or suggest indirect methods of defeating the intent of the law ; if by false colours and glosses, by terrifying or confounding witnesses, by calumniating or ridiculing the adverse party, they endeavour to make justice itself an instrument for patronizing injustice ; this is *turning judgement into gall*, as the Scripture expresses it, *and the fruit of righteousness into hemlock**,

* Amos vi. 12.

But in a still higher degree is it so, if judges or jurymen are influenced, in giving their sentence or verdict, by interest, relation, friendship, hatred, compassion, party; by any thing, but the nature of the case, as it fairly appears to them. For designedly making a false determination, is completing all the mischief, which bearing false witness only attempts. And, in a word, whoever any way promotes what is wrong, or obstructs what is right, partakes in the same sin: be it either of the parties, their evidences or agents; be it the highest magistrate, or the lowest officer.

But persons may break this commandment, not only in judicial proceedings; but often full as grievously, in common discourse: by raising, spreading, or countenancing false reports against others; or such, as they have no sufficient cause to think true; which is the case, in part at least, of most reports: by misrepresenting their circumstances in the world to their prejudice; or speaking without foundation, to the disadvantage of their persons, understandings, accomplishments, temper, or conduct; whether charging them with faults and imperfections, which do not belong to them; or taking from them good qualities and recommendations, which do; or aggravating the former, or diminishing the latter: determining their characters from a single bad action or two; fixing ill names on things, which are really virtuous or innocent in them; imputing their laudable behaviour to blameable or worthless motives; making no allowance for the depravity or weakness of human nature, strength of temptation, want of instruction, wicked insinuations, vicious examples. And in all these ways, persons may be injured, either by open public assertions; or more dangerously perhaps, by

secret whispers, which they have no opportunity of contradicting. The scandal may be accompanied with strong expressions of hoping it is not true, or being very sorry for it; and warm declarations of great good will to the party, whom it concerns: all which may serve only to give it a more unsuspected credit. Nay, it may be conveyed very effectually in dark hints, expressive gestures, or even affected silence. And these, as they may be equally mischievous, are not less wicked, for being more cowardly and more artful, methods of defamation.

Further yet: speaking or intimating things to any person's disadvantage, though they be true, is seldom innocent. For it usually proceeds from bad principles: revenge, envy, malice, pride, censoriousness; unfair zeal for some private or party interest; or at best, from a desire of appearing to know more than others, or mere impertinent fondness of talking. Now these are wretched motives for publishing what will be hurtful to one of our brethren. Sometimes indeed bad characters and bad actions ought to be known: but much oftener not, or not to all the world, or not by our means. And we have need to be very careful from what inducements we act in such a case. Sometimes again things are known already; or soon will be known, let us be ever so silent about them: and then, to be sure, we are at more liberty. But even then, to take a pleasure in relating the faults of others is by no means right. And to reveal them, when they can be hid, unless a very considerable reason require it, is extremely wrong.

Indeed we should be cautious, not only what harm, but what good we say of others. For speaking too highly of their characters or circumstances, or praising them in any respect beyond truth, is

bearing false witness about them, which may sometimes turn against them: and may often mislead those, to whom we exalt them thus; and produce grievously bad consequences of many kinds. But the other is much the more common, and usually the more hurtful, extreme.

We all think it an injury, in the tenderest part, when bad impressions are made on others concerning us; and therefore should conscientiously avoid doing the same injury to others. Making them designedly, without cause, is inexcusable wickedness. And even where we intend no harm, we may do a great deal. Whatever hurts, in any respect, the reputation of persons, always gives them great pain, and often doth them great prejudice, even in their most important concerns. For indeed almost every thing in this world depends on character. And when once that hath suffered an imputation; for the most part, neither the persons calumniated, be they ever so innocent, can recover it completely by their own endeavours, nor the persons who have wronged them, be they ever so desirous, restore it fully to its former state: though certainly they, who rob others of their good name, or even without design asperse it, are full as much bound to make restitution for that, as for any other damage, which they cause. But were they not to hurt at all the person against whom they speak, still they hurt themselves, and lessen the power of doing good in the world; they often hurt their innocent families by the provocations which they give; they grieve their friends; they set a mischievous example in society; and, if they profess any religion, bring a dreadful reproach upon it, by a temper and behaviour so justly hateful to mankind.

It will easily be understood, that, next to the raisers

and spreaders of ill reports, they who encourage persons of that kind, by hearkening to them with pleasure, and by readiness of belief in what they say, contradict the intention of this commandment. Indeed we ought, far from countenancing scandal and detraction, to express, in all proper ways, our dislike of it: show the uncertainty, the improbability, the falsehood, if we can, of injurious rumours; oppose the divulging even of truths that are uncharitable; and set a pattern of giving every one his just praise.

It must now be observed further, that though undoubtedly those falsehoods are the worst, which hurt others the most directly, yet falsehoods in general are hurtful and wrong. And therefore lying; all use either of words or actions of known settled import, with purpose to deceive; is unlawful. And those offences of this kind, which may seem the most harmless, have yet commonly great evil in them. Lying destroys the very end of speech, and leads us into perpetual mistakes, by the very means which God intended should lead us into truth. It puts an end to all the pleasure, all the benefit, all the safety of conversation. Nobody can know, on what or whom to depend. For if one person may lie, why not another? and at this rate, no justice can be done, no wickedness be prevented or punished, no business go forward. All these mischiefs will equally follow, whether untruths be told in a gross barefaced manner, or disguised under equivocations, quibbles, and evasions. The sin therefore is as great in one case as the other. And it is so great in both, that no sufficient excuses can ever be made for it in either, though several are often pleaded.

Many persons imagine, that when they have com-

mitted a fault, it is very pardonable to conceal it under a lie. But some faults ought not to be concealed at all; and none by this method: which is committing two, instead of one; and the second not uncommonly worse than the first. An ingenuous confession will be likely, in most cases, to procure an easy pardon: but a lie is a monstrous aggravation of an offence; and persisting in a lie can very hardly be forgiven. But above all, if any persons, to hide what they have done amiss themselves, are so vile as to throw the blame or the suspicion of it upon another; this is the height of wickedness. And therefore particularly all children and servants, who are chiefly tempted to excuse themselves by telling falsehoods, ought to undergo any thing, rather than be guilty of such a sin. And on the other hand, all parents, masters, and mistresses, ought to beware of punishing them too severely for their other offences; lest they drive them into a habit of this terrible one.

Some again plead for making free with truth, that they do it only in jest. But these jests of theirs often occasion great uneasiness and disquiet; and sometimes other very serious bad consequences. The Scripture therefore hath passed a severe censure upon them. *As a madman who casteth firebrands, arrows, and death; so is the man that deceiveth his neighbour, and saith, Am I not in sport**? To give another person vexation, or make him appear contemptible, though in a slight instance, is by no means innocent sport. And besides, to speak falsehood on any occasion is a dangerous introduction to speaking it on more, if not all, occasions. For if so trifling a motive as a jest will prevail on us to violate truth, how can we be expected to withstand more weighty temptations?

* Prov. xxvi. 18, 19.

However, it may perhaps at least be thought, that lying to prevent mischief and do good, must be permitted. But the Scripture expressly forbids us to *do evil, that good may come**. And they, who allow themselves in it, will usually be discovered and lose their end: or, if not, will never know where to stop. They will be enticed by degrees to think every thing good, that serves their turn, let others think it ever so bad: those others again will think themselves authorized by such examples to take the same liberties; and thus all trust and probity will be lost among men: a much greater evil, than any good, which falsehood may do now and then, will ever compensate.

And if telling lies, even from these plausible inducements, be so bad; what must it be, when they proceed from less excusable ones, as desire of promoting our own interest, or that of our party: and how completely detestable, when we are prompted to them by malice, or undue resentment, or any other totally wicked principle!

Nor is the practice less imprudent, than it is unlawful. Some indeed lie to raise their characters, as others do to gain their points. But both act very absurdly. For they miss of their purpose intirely, as soon as they are found out: and all liars are found out: immediately, for the most part; but in a while without fail. And after that, every body despises and hates them: even when they speak truth, nobody knows how to credit them; and so, by aiming wickedly at some little advantage for the present, they put themselves foolishly under the greatest disadvantage in the world ever after. *The lip of truth shall be established for ever: but a lying tongue is but for a moment†*. Beware then of the

* Rom. iii. 8. † Prov. xii. 19.

least beginning of a practice that will be sure to end ill. For if you venture upon falsehood at all, it will grow upon you, and entangle you; and bring you to shame, to punishment, to ruin. And, besides what you will suffer by it here, your portion, unless you repent very deeply, and amend very thoroughly, will be with the father of lies hereafter. For *into the heavenly Jerusalem shall in no wise enter whosoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie**. *Lying lips are abomination to the Lord: but they that deal truly, are his delight†*.

There is yet another sort of falsehood, often full as bad as affirming what we do not think: I mean, promising what we do not intend; or what we neglect afterwards to perform, so soon, or so fully as we ought. Whoever hath promised, hath made himself a debtor; and, unless he be punctual in his payment, commits an injustice; which in many cases may be of very pernicious consequence.

Now in order to secure this great point of speaking truth: besides considering carefully and frequently the before-mentioned evils of departing from it, we should be attentive also to moderate the quantity of our discourse, lest we fall into falsehood unawares. For *in the multitude of words there wanteth not sin: but he that refraineth his lips is wise‡*. Persons, who suffer themselves to run on heedlessly in talk, just as their present humour disposes them, or the present company will be best pleased; or who will say almost any thing, rather than say nothing; must be perpetually transgressing some of the duties comprehended under this commandment; which yet it is of the utmost importance not to transgress. For, with respect to the concerns of this world, *He that loveth*

* Rev. xxi. 27.

† Prov. xii. 22.

‡ Prov. x. 19.

life, and would see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil; and his lips that they speak no guile*. And as to our eternal state in the next, *If any man seem to be religious, and bridled not his tongue, that man's religion is vain†.*

* Psal. xxxiv. 12, 13.

† James i. 26.

There is yet another sort of falsehood, often full as bad as affirming what we do not think; I mean, promising what we do not intend; or what we neglect afterwards to perform, so soon, or so fully as we ought. Whoever hath promised, hath made himself a debtor; and, unless he be punctual in his payment, commits an injustice; which in many cases may be of very pernicious consequence.

Now in order to secure this great point of speaking truth: besides considering carefully and frequently the before-mentioned evils of departing from it, we should be attentive also to moderate the quantity of our discourse, lest we fall into falsehood unawares. For in the multitude of words there cometh not sin; but he that refraineth his lips is wise†. Persons, who suffer themselves to run on needlessly in talk, just as their present humour disposes them, or the present company will be best pleased; or who will say almost any thing, rather than say nothing; must be perpetually transgressing some of the duties comprehended under this commandment; which yet it is of the utmost importance not to transgress. For with respect to the concerns of this world, the least

† Prov. xii. 17. ‡ Rev. xxi. 27.

LECTURE XXVIII.

TENTH COMMANDMENT.

WE are now come to the tenth and last commandment; which is by the church of Rome absurdly divided into two, to keep up the number, after joining the first and second into one, contrary to ancient authority, Jewish and Christian. How the mistake was originally made, is hard to say: but undoubtedly they retain and defend it the more earnestly, in order to pass over the second commandment, as only part of the first, without any distinct meaning of its own. And accordingly many of their devotional books omit it intirely. But that these two ought not to be thus joined and confounded, I have shewn you already. And that this, now before us, ought not to be divided, is extremely evident: for it is one single prohibition of all unjust desires. And if reckoning up the several prohibited objects of desire makes it more than one commandment; for the same reason it will be more than two. For there are six things forbidden in it particularly, besides all the rest, that are forbidden in general. And moreover, if this be two commandments, which is the first of them? For in Exodus it begins, *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house*: but in Deuteronomy, *Thou*

shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife. And accordingly some of their books of devotion make the former, some the latter of these, the ninth*. Surely the order of the words would never have been changed thus in Scripture, had there been two commandments in them†: but being one, it is no way material, which part is named first. I say no more therefore on so clear a point: but proceed to explain this precept, of *not coveting what is our neighbour's.*

The good things of this life being the gifts of God, for which all are to be thankful to him; desiring, with due moderation and submission, a comfortable share of them, is very natural and right. Wishing, that our share were better, is, in the case of many persons, so far from a sin, that endeavouring diligently to make it better is part of their duty. Wishing it were equal to that of such another is not wishing ill to him, but only well to ourselves. And seeking to obtain what belongs to another may, in proper circumstances, be perfectly innocent. We may really have occasion for it; he may be well able to bestow it; or he may have occasion for something of

* Their manual of prayers in English, 1725, puts, *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife*, for the ninth. But in the office of the Virgin, both Latin and English, called the Primer, 1717, *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house*, is the ninth.

† Indeed the Vatican copy of the Septuagint in Exodus places, *Thou shalt not commit adultery*, before *Thou shalt do no murder*. And so do Mark x. 19. Luke xviii. 20. Rom. xiii. 9. and Philo, and part of the Fathers. But the Hebrew and Samaritan, and all translations except the Septuagint, and even that in Deuteronomy, and I believe most copies of it in Exodus, and Matth. xix. 18. And Josephus, and another part of the Fathers, keep the now common order. And the Evangelists did not intend to observe the original order; for they put, *Honour thy father*, &c. last. And St. Paul doth not say, that he intended to observe it. This therefore is not a parallel case to that of the tenth commandment.

ours in return. And on these mutual wants of men all commerce and trade is founded: which God, without question, designed should be carried on; because he hath made all countries abound in some things, and left them deficient in others.

Not every sort of desires therefore, but unfit and immoderate desires only, are forbidden by the words, *Thou shalt not covet*. And these are such as follow. First, if our neighbour cannot lawfully part with his property, nor we lawfully receive it, and yet we want to have it. One instance of this kind is expressed, *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife*. Another is, if we want a person who possesses any thing in trust, or under certain limitations, to give or sell it in breach of that trust or those limitations. Or if he can part with it, but is not willing; and we entertain thoughts of acquiring it by force or fraud, or of being revenged on him for his refusal; this is also highly blameable: for why should he not be left quietly free master of his own? Indeed barely pressing and importuning persons, contrary to their interest, or even their inclinations only, is in some degree wrong: for it is one way of extorting things from them; or however, of giving them trouble, where we have no right to give it.

But though we keep our desires ever so much to ourselves, they may notwithstanding be very sinful. And such they are particularly, if they induce us to envy others; that is, to be uneasy at their imagined superior happiness, to wish them ill, or take pleasure in any harm which befalls them. For this turn of mind will prompt us to do them ill, if we can; as indeed a great part of the mischief that is done in the world, and some of the worst of it, arises from hence. *Wrath is cruel, and anger is outrageous; but who is*

able to stand against envy*? Accordingly we find it joined in the New Testament with *strife, railing, variance, sedition, murder, confusion, and every evil work*†. But were it to produce no mischief to our neighbour, yet it is the directly opposite disposition to that love of him, which is the second great precept of Christ's religion. Nay, indeed it deserves in some respects, to be reckoned the worst of ill-natured sins. The revengeful man pleads for himself some injury attempted against him: but the envious person bears unprovoked malice to those, who have done him neither wrong nor harm, solely because he fancies them to be, in this or that instance, very happy. And why should they not, if they can; as he certainly would, if he could? For the prosperity of bad people, it must be confessed, we have reason to be so far sorry, as they are likely to do hurt by it. But to desire their fall, rather than their amendment; to desire what may be grievous to any persons, not from good-will to mankind, but from ill-will to them; to wish any misfortune even to our competitors and rivals, merely because they are such; or because they have succeeded, and enjoy what we aimed at; is extremely uncharitable and inhuman. It is a temper that will give us perpetual disquiet in this world (for there will always be somebody to envy), and bring a heavy sentence upon us in the next, unless we repent of it, and subdue it first.

But though our selfish desires were to raise in us no malignity against our fellow-creatures; yet if they tempt us to murmur against our Creator; and either to speak or think ill of that distribution of things, which his providence hath made; this is great im-

* Prov. xxvii. 4.

† Rom. i. 29. xiii. 13. 1 Cor. iii. 7.

2 Cor. xii. 20. Gal. v. 20, 21. 1 Tim. vi. 4. James iii. 14, 16.

piety, and rebellion of the heart against God : who hath an absolute right to dispose of the works of his hands as he pleases ; and uses it always both with justice and with goodness to us. Were we innocent, we could none of us demand more advantages of any sort, than he thought fit to give us : but as we are guilty wretches ; far from having a claim to this or that degree of happiness, we are every one liable to severe punishment. And therefore, with the many comforts and blessings which we have now, and the eternal felicity which, through the mercy of our heavenly Father, the merits of our blessed Redeemer, and the grace of the Holy Spirit, we may, if we will, have hereafter, surely we have no ground to complain of our condition. For what if things be unequally divided here ? we may be certain the Disposer of them hath wise reasons for it, whether we can see them or not : and we may be as certain, that unless it be our own fault, we shall be no losers by it : for *all things work together for good to them that love God**. Therefore, how little soever we enjoy, we have cause to be thankful for it : and how much soever we suffer, we have cause to be resigned ; nay, thankful too even for that ; as we may be the happier in this world for many of our sufferings ; and shall, if we bear them as we ought, be improved in goodness by them all, and made happier to eternity.

But further yet : though we may not be conscious of what we shall study to hide from ourselves, that our desires carry us either to behave or wish ill to our neighbours ; or to repine against God ; still, if they disturb and agitate our minds ; if we are eager and vehement about the objects of them ; we are not arrived at the state, in which we should be found. Some

* Rom. viii. 28.

feeling of this inward tumult, especially on trying occasions, may be unavoidable by fallen man ; and more of it natural to one person than another : but, after all, it is voluntary indulgence, that gives our appetites, and passions, and fancies, the far greatest share of their dominion. We inflame them, when else they would be moderate : we affect things, for which we have really no liking, merely because they are fashionable : we create imaginary wants to ourselves ; and then grow as earnest for what we might do perfectly well without, as if the whole of our felicity consisted in it. This is a very immoral state of mind : and hurries persons, almost irresistibly, into as immoral a course of life. In proportion as worldly inclinations of any kind engage the heart, they exclude from it social affection, compassion, generosity, integrity ; and yet more effectually love to God, and attention to the concerns of our future state. Nor do they almost ever fail to make us at present miserable, as well as wicked. They prey upon our spirits, torment us with perpetual self-dislike, waste our health, sink our character, drive us into a thousand foolish actions to gratify them ; and when all is done, can never be gratified, so as to give us any lasting satisfaction. First, we shall be full of anxieties and fears : when we have got over these and obtained our wish, we shall quickly find it comes very short of our expectation ; then we shall be cloyed, and tired, and wretchedly languid, till some new craving sets us on work to as little purpose as the former did ; or till we are wise enough to see, that such pursuits are not the way to happiness.

But supposing persons are not violent in pursuing the imagined good things of this world ; yet if they be dejected and grieved, that no more of them have fallen to their lot ; if they mourn over the inferiority

of their condition, and live in a perpetual feeling of affliction (be it ever so calm) on that account; or indeed on account of any cross or disadvantage whatever, belonging to the present life: this also is a degree, though the lowest and least, yet still a degree of inordinate desire. For we are not grateful, if, instead of taking our portion of happiness here with cheerfulness, and due acknowledgements for it, we only lament, that it is not, in this or that respect, more considerable; and we are not wise, if we embitter it, be it ever so small, by a fruitless sorrow, instead of making the best of it.

These then being the excesses, which this commandment forbids; the duty which of course it requires, is, that we learn, like St. Paul, *in whatsoever state we are, therewith to be content**. This virtue every body practises in some cases: for who is there that could not mention several things which he should be glad to have, yet is perfectly well satisfied to go without them? And would we but strive to be of the same disposition in all cases; the self-enjoyment, that we should reap from it, is inexpressible. The worldly condition of multitudes is really quite as good as it needs to be; and of many others (who do not think so) as good as it well can be. Now for such to be anxious about mending it, is only being miserable for nothing. And in whatever we may have cause to wish our circumstances were better, moderate wishes will be sufficient to excite a reasonable industry to improve them, as far as we can: and immoderate eagerness will give us no assistance, but only disquiet. More than a few consume themselves with longing for what indolence and despondency will not suffer them to try if they can obtain. *The desire of the*

* Phil. iv. 11.

slothful killeth him : for his hands refuse to labour *. And sometimes, on the contrary, the precipitance, with which we aim at a favourite point, is the very reason that we overshoot the mark, and miss it.

But supposing the most solicitous were always the most likely to gain their ends : yet this likelihood will be often crossed, both by delays and disappointments ; which to impatient tempers will be extremely grievous : and the saddest disappointment of all will be, that they will find the most perfect accomplishment of their wishes, after a very small time, to be little or no increase of their happiness. Persons uneasy in their present situation, or intent on some darling object, imagine that could they but succeed in such a pursuit, or had they but such a person's good fortune or accomplishments, then they should be perfectly at ease, and lastingly delighted. But they utterly mistake. Every enjoyment palls and deadens quickly : every condition hath its unseen inconveniences and sufferings, as well as its visible advantages. And happiness depends scarce at all on the pre-eminence commonly admired. For the noble, the powerful, the rich, the learned, the ingenious, the beautiful, the gay, the voluptuous, are usually to the full as far from it, and by turns own they are, as any of the wretches, whom they severally despise. Indeed, when every thing is tried round, we shall experience at last what we had much better see at first, as we easily may, that the cheerful composure of a reasonable and religious, and therefore contented, mind, is the only solid felicity that this world affords ; the great blessing of Heaven here below ; that will enable us to relish the rest, if we have them ; and to be satisfied, if we have them not. What Solomon

* Prov. xxi. 25.

hath said of wealth, he found to be equally true of every thing else beneath the sun. *God giveth to a man, that is good in his sight, wisdom, and knowledge, and joy: but to the sinner he giveth travel, to gather and heap up.—This also is vanity, and vexation of spirit**.

Contentment therefore being the gift of God, we should earnestly pray to him for it. And in order to become objects of his favour, we should frequently and thankfully recollect the many undeserved comforts of our condition, that we may bear the afflictions of it more patiently; reasoning with Job, *Shall we receive good at the hand of God, and shall we not receive evil †?* Nor should we fail to join with our meditations on his past and present mercies, the firm assurance, which both his attributes and his promises furnish, that the same *loving kindness should follow us all the days of our life ‡*; and be exerted, though sometimes for our correction or trial, yet always for our benefit; and so as to make our lot supportable, in every variety of outward circumstances. *Let your conversation therefore be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for He hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee §.* Another very important consideration, and necessary to be often brought to mind, is, that the season both of enjoying the advantages, and bearing the inconveniencies, of life is short: but the reward of enjoying and bearing each, as we ought, is eternal and inconceivably great.

Together with these reflections, let us exercise a steady care to check every faulty inclination in its

* Eccl. ii. 26.

† Job ii. 10.

‡ Psalm xxiii. 6.

§ Heb. xiii. 5.

earliest rise. For it is chiefly indulging them at first, that makes them so hard to conquer afterwards. And yet we shall always find the bad consequences of yielding, to outweigh vastly the trouble of resisting: and that to bring our desires, when they are the strongest, down to our condition, is a much easier work than to raise our condition up to our desires, which will only grow the more ungovernable, the more they are pampered. Further: whatever share we possess of worldly plenty, let us bestow it on ourselves with decent moderation, and impart of it to others with prudent liberality: for thus *knowing how to abound*, we shall *know* the better *how to suffer need**, if Providence calls us to it. And lastly, instead of *setting our affections on any things on earth*†, which would be a fatal neglect of the great end, that we are made for, let us exalt our views to that blessed place, where *godliness with contentment will be unspeakable gain* ‡: and they who have restrained the inferior principles of their nature by the rules of religion, shall have the highest faculties of their souls *abundantly satisfied with the fatness of God's house, and be made to drink of the river of his pleasures*§.

Thus then you see, both the meaning, and the importance, of this last commandment: which is indeed the guard and security of all the preceding ones. For our actions will never be right habitually, till our desires are so. Or if they could: our Maker demands the whole man, as he surely well may; nor, till that is devoted to him, are we *meet for the inheritance of the saints in light*||.

And now, both the first and the second table of

* Phil. iv. 12.

† Col. iii. 2.

‡ 1 Tim. vi. 6.

§ Psal. xxxvi. 8.

|| Col. i. 12.

the ten commandments having been explained to you, it only remains, that we beg of God *sufficient grace** to keep them; earnestly intreating him in the words of his church: *Lord, have mercy upon us, and write all these thy laws in our hearts, we beseech thee.*

* 2 Cor. xii. 9.

LECTURE XXIX.

Of Man's Inability, God's Grace, and Prayer to Him for it.

I HAVE now proceeded, in the course of these Lectures, to the end of the commandments; and explained the nature of that repentance, faith and obedience, which were promised for us in our baptism, and which we are bound to exercise, in proportion as we come to understand the obligations incumbent on us. You cannot but see by this time, that the duties, which God enjoins us, are not only very important, but very extensive. And therefore a consideration will almost unavoidably present itself to your minds in the next place, what abilities we have to perform them. Now this question our Catechism decides, without asking it, by a declaration, extremely discouraging in appearance; that *we are not able, of ourselves, to walk in the commandments of God, and to serve him.*

Indeed, had we ever so great abilities, we must have them, not of ourselves, but of our Maker: from whom all the powers of all creatures are derived. But something further than this, is plainly meant here: that there are no powers, belonging to human nature in its present state, sufficient for so great a

purpose. *The law of God is spiritual: but we are carnal, sold under sin* *. And that such is our condition, will appear by reflecting, first what it was at our birth; secondly, what we have made it since.

1. As to the first: we all give proofs, greater or less, of an inbred disorder and wrongness in our understandings, will and affections. Possibly one proof, that some may give of it, may be a backwardness to own it. But they little consider, how severe a sentence they would pass, by denying it, on themselves, and all mankind. Even with our natural bad inclinations for some excuse, we are blameable enough for the ill things that we do. But how much more should we be so, if we did them all, without the solicitation of any inward depravity to plead afterwards in our favour? In point of interest therefore, as well as truth, we are concerned to admit an original proneness to evil in our frame: while yet reason plainly teaches, at the same time, that whatever God created was originally, in its kind, perfect and good.

To reconcile these two things would have been a great difficulty, had not revelation pointed out the way, by informing us, that *man* was indeed *made upright* †, but that the very first of human race lost their innocence and their happiness together; and tainting, by wilful transgression, their own nature, tainted, by consequence, that of their whole posterity. Thus *by one man, sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned* ‡. We find in fact, however difficult it may be to account for it in speculation, that the dispositions of parents, both in body and mind, very commonly descend, in some degree, to

* Rom. vii. 14.

† Eccl. vii. 29.

‡ Rom. v. 12.

their children. And therefore it is intirely credible, that so great a change in the minds of our first parents from absolute rightness of temper to presumptuous wickedness; accompanied with an equal change of body, from an immortal condition to a mortal one, produced perhaps, in part, by the physical effects of the forbidden fruit; that these things, I say, should derive their fatal influences to every succeeding generation. For though God will never impute any thing to us, as our personal fault, which is not our own doing: yet he may very justly withhold from us those privileges, which he granted to our first parents only on condition of their faultless obedience, and leave us subject to those inconveniencies, which followed of course from their disobedience: as, in multitudes of other cases, we see children in far worse circumstances by the faults of their distant forefathers, than they otherwise would have been. And most evidently it is no more a hardship upon us, to become such as we are by means of Adam's transgression, than to suffer what we often do for the transgressions of our other ancestors; or to have been created such as we are, without any one's transgression: which last, all who disbelieve original sin, must affirm to be our case.

But unhappy for us as the failure of the first man was, we should be happy in comparison, if this were all that we had to lament. Great as the native disorder of our frame is; yet either the fall of Adam left in it, or God restored to it, some degree of disposition to obedience, and of strength against sin: so that though *in us, that is in our flesh, dwelleth no good thing* *, yet *after the inward man (the mind) we delight in the law of God* †; and there are occa-

* Rom. vii. 18.

† Ver. 22, 23.

sions, on which even *the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law**, though neither all, nor any, without fault. And on us Christians our heavenly Father confers, in our baptism, the assurance of much greater strength, to obey his commands, than they have. But then, if we consider,

2. What we have made our condition since, we shall find, that instead of using well the abilities which we had, and taking the methods, which our Maker hath appointed for the increase of them, we have often carelessly, and too often wilfully, misemployed the former, and neglected the latter. Now by every instance of such behaviour, we displease God, weaken our right affections, and add new strength to wrong passions: and by habits of such behaviour, corrupting our hearts, and blinding our understandings, we bring ourselves into a much worse condition, than that, in which we were born; and thus become doubly incapable of doing our duty. This, experience proves but too plainly; though Scripture did not teach, as it doth, that *the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth†*: that *we were shapen in iniquity, and in sin did our mother conceive us‡*: that *the carnal mind is enmity against God§*: that *without Christ we can do nothing||*; and that *we are not sufficient to think any thing, as of ourselves¶*.

Yet, notwithstanding this, we feel within us an obligation of conscience to do every thing that is right and good. For that obligation is in its nature unchangeable: and we cannot be made happy otherwise, than by endeavouring to fulfil it; though God,

* Rom. ii. 14.

† Gen. viii. 21.

‡ Psal. li. 5.

§ Rom. viii. 7.

|| John xv. 5.

¶ 2 Cor. iii. 5.

for the sake of our blessed Redeemer, will make fit allowances for our coming short of it. But then we must not hope for such allowances as would really be unfit. Our original weakness indeed is not our fault; but our neglect of being relieved from it, and the additions that we have made to it, are. And whatever we might have had the power of doing, if we would; it is no injustice to punish us for not doing; especially when the means of enabling ourselves continue to be offered to us through our lives. Now, in fact, the whole race of mankind, I charitably hope and believe, have, by the general grace, or favour of God, the means of doing so much, at least, as may exempt them from future sufferings. But Christians, by the *special grace* mentioned in this part of the Catechism, are qualified to do so much more, as will entitle them, not for their own worthiness, but that of the holy Jesus, to a distinguishing share of future reward.

Now the special grace of the Gospel consists, partly in the outward revelation, which it makes to us, of divine truths; partly in the inward assistance, which it bestows on us for obeying the divine will. The latter is the point here to be considered.

That God is able, by secret influences on our minds, to dispose us powerfully in favour of what is right, there can be no doubt: for we are able, in some degree, to influence one another thus. That there is need of his doing it, we have all but too much experience; and that therefore we may reasonably hope for it, evidently follows. He interposes continually by his providence, to carry on the course of nature in the material world; is it not then very likely, that he should interpose in a case, which, as far as we can judge, is yet more worthy of his interposition; and incline and strengthen his poor creatures to become

good and happy, by gracious impressions on their souls, as occasions require? But still, hope and likelihood are not certainty: and God, *whose ways are past finding out**, might have left all men to their own strength, or rather indeed their own weakness. But whatever he doth in relation to others, which is not our concern, he hath clearly promised to us Christians, that *his grace shall be sufficient for us*†; his holy Spirit shall enable us effectually to do every thing which his word requires.

We may *resist*‡ his motions: or we may receive them into our souls, and act in consequence of them. Every one hath power enough to do right: Scripture, as well as reason, shews it; only we have it not resident in us by nature; but bestowed on us continually by our Maker, as we want it. In all good actions that we perform, *the preparation of the heart is from the Lord*§. And that *faith*, which is the fountain of all actions truly good, *is not of ourselves, it is the gift of God*||. But *he giveth liberally to all*¶ who ask him: and therefore no one hath cause of complaint.

It is true, we are seldom able to distinguish this heavenly influence from the natural workings of our own minds; as indeed we are often influenced one by another without perceiving it. But the assurance, given in Scripture, of its being vouchsafed to us, is abundantly sufficient: to which, experience also would add strong confirmation, did we but attend with due seriousness to what passes within our breasts.

Our natural freedom of will is no more impaired by these secret admonitions of our Maker than by the open persuasions of our fellow-creatures. And the advantage of having God's help, far from making it

* Rom. xi. 33.

§ Prov. xvi. 1.

† 2 Cor. xii. 9.

|| Eph. ii. 8.

‡ Acts vii. 51.

¶ James i. 5.

unnecessary to help ourselves, obliges us to it peculiarly. We are therefore to *work out our own salvation*, because *he worketh in us both to will and to do**. For it is a great aggravation of every sin, that, in committing it, we *quench* the pious motions excited by *the spirit*† of God in our hearts: and a great incitement to our endeavours of performing every duty, that with such aid we may be sure of success. Our own natural strength cannot increase, as temptations and difficulties do: but that which we receive from heaven, can. And thus it is, that we learn courage and humility at once; by knowing, that *we can do all things*, but only *through Christ which strengtheneth us*‡; and therefore *not we, but the grace of God, which is with us*§.

This grace therefore being of such importance to us, our catechism, with great reason, directs us *at all times to call for it by diligent prayer*. For our heavenly Father hath not promised, nor can we hope, that *he will give the holy Spirit to them who proudly disdain or negligently omit to ask him*||. And hence it becomes peculiarly necessary, that we should understand how to pray to him: a duty mentioned in the former part of the catechism, but reserved to be explained more fully in this.

God having bestowed on us the knowledge in some measure, of what he is in himself, and more especially of what he is to us; we are doubtless bound to be suitably affected by it; and to keep alive in our minds, with the utmost care, due sentiments of our continual dependence on him, of reverence and submission to his will, of love and gratitude for his goodness, of humility and sorrow for all our sins against

* Phil. ii. 12, 13.

† 1 Thess. v. 19.

‡ Phil. iv. 13.

§ 1 Cor. xv. 10.

|| Luke xi. 13.

him; and earnest desire, that his mercy and favour may be shewn in such manner as he shall think fit, to us and to all our fellow-creatures.

Now, if these sentiments ought to be felt, they ought also to be some way expressed: not only that others may see we have them, and be excited to them by our example; but that we ourselves may receive both the comfort and the improvement, which must naturally flow from exercising such valuable affections. And unquestionably the most lively and most respectful manner of exercising them is, that we direct them to him who is the object of them; and pour out our hearts before him in suitable acts of homage, thanksgiving, and confession; in humble petitions for ourselves, and intercessions for all mankind. Not that God is ignorant, till we inform him, either of our outward circumstances, or the inward temper of our hearts. If he were, our prayers would give him but very imperfect knowledge of either: for we are greatly ignorant of both ourselves. But the design of prayer is, to bring our own minds into a right frame; and so make ourselves fit for those blessings, for which we are very unfit, while we are too vain or too careless to ask them of God.

The very act of prayer therefore will do us good, if we pray with attention, else it is nothing; and with sincerity, else it is worse than nothing; and the consequences of praying, God hath promised, shall be further good. *All things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive**. Not absolutely all things whatsoever we desire: for some of our desires may be on several accounts unfit, and some would prove extremely hurtful to us. Therefore we ought to consider well what we pray for: and espe-

* Matth. xxi. 22.

cially in all temporal matters refer ourselves wholly to God's good pleasure. Nor doth he always grant immediately what he designs to grant, and hath given us the fullest right to ask: but delays it perhaps a while to exercise our patience and trust in him: for which reason our Saviour directs us *always to pray and not to faint**. But whatever is really good, he will undoubtedly, as soon as it is really necessary, give us upon our request: provided further, that with our earnest petitions we join our honest endeavours; for prayer was never designed to serve instead of diligence, but to assist it. And therefore, if in our temporal affairs we are idle or inconsiderate, we must not expect that our prayers will bring us good success; and if, in our spiritual ones, we wilfully or thoughtlessly neglect ourselves; we must not imagine, that God will amend us against our wills, or whilst we continue supinely indifferent. But let us do our duty to the best of our power, at the same time that we pray for his blessing; and we may be assured that nothing but an injurious disbelief can prevent our obtaining it: on which account St. James requires, that we *ask in faith, nothing wavering*†.

Indeed, without the encouragement given us in Scripture, it might well be with some diffidence, and it should still be with the utmost reverence, that we take upon us to speak unto the Lord, who are but dust and ashes‡. The heathens therefore addressed their prayers to imaginary deities of an inferior rank, as judging themselves unworthy to approach the supreme one. But our rule is, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve*§. The affected humility of worshipping even angels, and therefore much more saints (who, if really such, are yet lower

* Luke xviii. 1. † Jam. i. 6. ‡ Gen. xviii. 27. § Matth. iv. 10.

than angels*), may, as we are taught, *beguile us of our reward†*: whereas we may come boldly to the throne of our Maker's grace‡, though not in our own right, yet through the Mediator whom he hath appointed; and who hath both procured us the privilege, and instructed us how to use it, by delivering to us a prayer of his own composition; which might be at once a form for us frequently to repeat, and a pattern for us always to imitate.

That the Lord's Prayer was designed as a form, appears from his own words: *After this manner pray ye*; or, translating more literally, *Thus pray ye§*; and, which is yet more express, *When ye pray, say, Our Father||*, &c. Besides, it was given by him to his disciples on their request, that he would *teach them to pray, as John also taught his disciples¶*: which undoubtedly was, as the great rabbies among the Jews commonly taught theirs, by a form. And accordingly this prayer hath been considered and used as such, from the earliest ages of Christianity down to the present.

Yet our Saviour's design was not, that this should be the only prayer of Christians: as appears both from the precepts and the practice of the Apostles, as well as from the nature and reason of the thing. But when it is not used as a form, it is however of unspeakable advantage as a model. He proposes it indeed more particularly as an example of shortness. Not that we are never to make longer prayers: for he himself *continued all night in prayer to God***: and we have a much longer, made by the Apostles, in the fourth chapter of the Acts. But his intention was, to teach by this instance, that we are not to affect unmeaning repetitions, or any needless multiplicity of

* Ps. viii. 5.

† Col. ii. 18.

‡ Heb. iv. 16.

§ Matth. vi. 9.

|| Luke xi. 2.

¶ Ver. 1.

** Luke vi. 12.

words, as if we *thought that we should be heard for our much speaking**. And not only in this respect, but every other, is our Lord's prayer an admirable institution and direction for praying aright: as will abundantly appear, when the several parts of it come to be distinctly explained. But though such explanation will shew, both the purport and the excellency of it, more fully; yet they are to every eye visible in the main, without any explanation at all. And therefore let us conclude at present with devoutly offering it up to God.

Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever and ever. Amen.

* Matth. vi. 7.

Yet our Saviour's design was not, that this should be the only prayer of Christians: as appears both from the precepts and the practice of the Apostles, as well as from the nature and reason of the thing. But when it is not used as a form, it is however of unspeakable advantage as a model. He proposes it indeed more particularly as an example of shortness. Not that we are never to make longer prayers: for he himself continued all night in prayer to God*: and we have a much longer, made by the Apostles, in the fourth chapter of the Acts. But his intention was, to teach by this instance, that we are not to affect unmeaning repetitions, or any needless multiplicity of

* Ps. viii. 2. + Col. ii. 12. 1 Heb. iv. 10. 2 Matth. vi. 9. 3 Luke xii. 2. 4 Ver. 12. 5 Luke vi. 12.

LECTURE XXX.

THE LORD'S PRAYER.

Our Father, which art in Heaven, hallowed be thy Name.

THE prayer, which our blessed Saviour taught his disciples, doth not need to be explained, as being, in itself, and originally, obscure. For no words could be more intelligible to his Apostles, than all those, which he hath used throughout it. And even to us now, there is nothing that deserves the name of difficult; notwithstanding the distance of time, the change of circumstances, and the different nature and turn of the Jewish tongue from our own. But still, in order to apprehend it sufficiently, there is requisite some knowledge of religion, and the language of religion. Besides, as we all learnt it when we were young, whilst we had but little understanding, and less attention; it is not impossible, but some of us may have gone on repeating it to an advanced age, without considering it near so carefully as we ought. And this very thing, that the words are so familiar to us, may have been the main occasion, that we have scarce ever thought of their import.

Now, we are sensible, it would be a great unhappiness to have our devotions as the church of Rome have the principal part of theirs, in a language that we could not understand. But surely it is as great a fault, if, when we may so easily understand them, we do not; or if, though we do understand them, when we think of the matter, we think about it so little, that, as to all good purposes, it is much the same with praying in an unknown tongue. The Lord's prayer, in itself, is very clear, very expressive, very comprehensive. But all this is nothing to us, if we say it without knowing, or without minding, what we say. For how excellent words soever we use; if we add no meaning to them, this can be no praying. And therefore, to make it really beneficial to us, we must fix deeply in our thoughts, what it was intended by its Author to contain.

Now it consists, you may observe, of three parts. I. An invocation, or calling upon God. II. Petitions offered. III. Praises ascribed to him.

The invocation is in these words, *Our Father, which art in heaven*. And, few as they are, they express very fully the grounds on which divine worship stands.

As the whole world derives its being from God, he is on that account styled, *the Father of all**. But as rational creatures are produced, not only by him, but in his image and likeness, he is in a stricter sense the father of these. And therefore angels and men are called in Scripture, what the animals beneath them never are, *the sons*†, and the *offspring of God*‡: in which sense the prophet saith, *O Lord, thou art our Father, and we are all the work of thy hand*§. Now,

* Eph. iv. 6.

† Job i. 6. ii. 1. xxviii. 7.

‡ Acts xvii. 29.

§ Isa. lxiv. 8.

as our Creator, he is evidently not only our Father, but also our sovereign Lord.

A second title God hath to this name, from that fatherly providence and goodness, which he exercises every where continually: and of which mankind hath large experience; not only in the many enjoyments, comforts, and deliverances, that he grants us, but even in the afflictions which he sends us, always for our benefit; then more especially *dealing with us as with children, whom he loveth**.

But there is yet a third reason, why we call him *our Father*, peculiar to us as Christians; and founded on our being united by faith to his Son *our head†*, and *begotten again, through his Gospel, to a lively hope, to an inheritance reserved in heaven for us‡*: privileges so invaluable, that though he is doubtless, a father, and a tender one, to our whole species, yet his word speaks of us, as the only persons, in comparison, that have a right to consider him in this view. *As many as received him*, that is, our blessed Saviour, *to them gave he power to become the sons of God; even to them that believe on his name§*. *The Lord is good to all||*: but singularly good to those, who become, by the influences of the Christian covenant, singularly fit objects of his goodness. They have promises of the greatest blessings, to which nothing, but promise, can entitle: pardon of sin, assistance of the Holy Spirit, and life eternal; by which last they are made, in the happiest sense, the *children of God, being the children of the resurrection¶*. Let us learn then as often as we say, *Our Father*, to magnify in our souls, that gracious Redeemer, who hath made him

* Heb. xii. 5, &c.

† 1 Cor. xi. 3. Eph. i. 22.

‡ 1 Cor. iv. 15. 1 Pet. i. 3, 4.

§ John i. 12.

|| Psalm cxlv. 9.

¶ Luke xx. 36.

so to us, more than he is to others. Let us often repeat the thankful reflection of St. John, *Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed on us, that we should be called the sons of God**; and joyfully argue, as St. Paul doth, *If children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ.*

Thus then the words, *Our Father*, express not only the absolute authority, but the unspeakable goodness of God: and the next, *which art in heaven*, acknowledge his glory and power.

I have already observed to you, in explaining the sixth article of the Creed, that as God cannot but be, so he cannot but be every where: for there is nothing in any one part of space to confine his presence to that, rather than to any other. Besides, his providence is continually acting every where; and wherever he acts, he is. Therefore Solomon justly declares, *The heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain thee*†. But still the Scriptures represent him as manifesting the most visible tokens of his inexpressible majesty in one peculiar place: where he receives the homage of his holy angels, and issues forth his commands for the government of the world. This they call his *throne*§, and *tabernacle in heaven*||: of which the earthly tabernacle of Moses was designed to be a figure; being directed to be *made according to the pattern shewed him in the mount*¶. That earthly tabernacle was honoured for a long time with splendid marks of the divine residence: on which account, even after they were withdrawn, the Jews would be apt to consider God, as dwelling at Jerusalem in his temple, *and sitting between the cherubim***.

* 1 John iii. 1.

† Rom. vii. 17.

‡ 1 Kings viii. 27. 2 Chron. ii. 6.

vi. 18.

§ Psal. xi. 4.

|| Heb. viii. 1, 2.

¶ Heb. viii. 5.

** Psal. xcix. 1.

Lord, being about to abolish the Mosaic ordinances, enlarges the views of his disciples, and raises them to that higher habitation of inconceivable glory, to which they should hereafter be admitted: and on which they were in the mean while to set their hearts, as the seat of all blessedness.

But further, being *in heaven* denotes likewise the almighty power of God; agreeably to that of the Psalmist, *Our God is in the heavens: he hath done whatsoever he pleased**. For as a higher situation gives a superior strength and command; and accordingly in all languages, being exalted or brought low, signifies an increase or lessening of dominion or influence: so representing God, as placed above all, is designed to express, in the strongest manner, that *his kingdom ruleth over all*†.

When therefore we call upon *our Father which is in heaven*, we profess to God our belief, that he is the author and preserver of the universe, who governs all things with paternal care; but extends his favours especially to those, who by imitating and obeying him shew themselves his true children; and therefore most especially to such, as having acquired, by the merits and grace of his Son, the nearest relation and resemblance to him, have thereby a covenant-right to an eternal inheritance in that blessed place, where he exhibits his glory, and reigns, possessed of sovereign authority, and boundless glory.

Now applying thus to God, under the notion of *our Father*, is excellently fitted to remind us, both of the dutiful regard, which we ought to have for him, as he himself pleads, *If I be a father, where is mine honour*‡? and also, of the kindness, which we may expect from him, according to our Saviour's reason-

* Psal. cxv. 3.

† Psal. ciii. 19.

‡ Mal. i. 6.

ing, *If ye, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children; how much more shall your heavenly Father give his Holy Spirit to them that ask him**? Nor is this expression less fitted to admonish us of copying the goodness, which we adore; and exercising mercy and bounty towards all our fellow-creatures, as far as we can, *that we may be, in this excellent sense, the children of our Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and the good; and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust*†. And this admonition is greatly strengthened, as each of us is directed to address himself to God, not as to his own father merely, but as to *our Father*, the common parent of mankind. For there is inexpressible force in that argument, *Have we not all one Father, hath not one God created us? Why do we deal treacherously, or in any respect unjustly or unkindly, every man against his brother*‡? And yet with greater force still doth it hold, to prevent mutual injuries or unkindness among Christians: who being, in a much closer and more endearing sense, children of God, and brethren one to another, than the rest of the world; surely ought never to be, what they are too often remarkably, deficient in that reciprocal affection, which was intended as the token, whereby *all men should see them*§.

Then, at the same time, the consideration, that this *our Father is in heaven*, possessed of infinite power and glory, tends greatly to inspire us with reverence towards him, at all times, and in all places, but in our devotions peculiarly. And to this end it is pleaded by the wise king, *Keep thy foot when thou goest to the house of God; be not rash with thy mouth,*

* Luke xi. 13.

† Matth. v. 45.

‡ Mal. ii. 10.

§ John xiii. 35.

*and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God; for God is in heaven, and thou upon earth**. It also tends no less to remind us, what the great end of our prayers and our lives should be: to obtain admittance into that blessed place *where God is, and Christ sits on his right hand*†. *For in his presence is the fulness of joy; and at his right hand, there is pleasure for evermore*‡.

You see then, how many important truths, and admonitions, these few words, which begin the Lord's Prayer, include: every thing indeed, which can encourage us to pray, or dispose us to pray as we ought.

The petition, which immediately follows, *Hallowed be thy name*, is perhaps more liable to be repeated without being understood, than any of the rest: but when understood, as it easily may be, appears highly proper to stand in the very first part of a Christian's prayer. The name of God means here God himself, his person and attributes: as it doth in many other places of Scripture, where *fearing*, or *blessing*, or *calling upon the name of the Lord* is mentioned. And to *hallow his name* signifies, to think of him as a holy being, and behave towards him accordingly. Now the word, *holy*, hath been already more than once, in the course of these Lectures, explained to mean whatever is worthy of being distinguished with serious respect. And therefore all such persons, places, things, and times, as are set apart from vulgar uses, and devoted to religious ones, are said in Scripture to be *holy*, and commanded to be *hallowed*. Now these being generally preserved with great care, as they always ought, from whatever may defile and pollute them; hence the term, *holy*, came to signify

* Eccl. v. 1, 2.

† Col. iii. 1.

‡ Psal. xvi. 12.

what is clean and pure. And the most valuable purity, beyond comparison, being that of a mind untainted by sin, and secure from tendencies towards it: holiness more especially denotes this; and may in various degrees be ascribed to men and angels; but in absolute perfection to none, but God. For he, and he alone, is infinitely removed from all possibility of doing, or thinking, or approving evil.

This then is the sense, in which we are to acknowledge, that *holy and reverend is his name**: this conception of him is the manner in which we are to *hallow* it, and *sanctify the Lord God in our hearts*†: a matter of unspeakable importance, and the very foundation of all true religion. For if we are not fully persuaded, that he is *of purer eyes, than to behold evil*‡ with indifference; if we imagine, that he can ever act unrighteously himself, or allow others to do so; that he is in any case the author of sin: or esteems and loves any thing in his creatures, but uprightness and goodness; or shews himself to be other, than a perfectly great, and wise, and just, and gracious Being; so far as we do this, we mistake his nature, and dishonour him; and set up an idol of our own fancy, instead of the true God. The consequence of which will be, that in proportion as our notions of him are false, our worship, imitation, and obedience will be erroneous also: our piety and our morals will both be corrupted: we shall neglect what alone can recommend us to him: we shall hope to please him by performances of no value, perhaps by wicked deeds; and *the light, that is in us, will become darkness*§.

No wonder then, if we are directed to make it our

* Psal. cxi. 9.

† 1 Pet. iii. 15.

‡ Hab. i. 13.

§ Matth. vi. 23.

first petition, that we and all men may *hallow God's holy name*, as we ought: that so right a sense of his nature and attributes, especially his wisdom, justice, and goodness, may prevail through the world, as may banish at once both prophaneness and superstition, and engage us all to fear and love him equally: that we may entertain such notions of Christianity, as will promote its honour; and allow ourselves in nothing, that may bring disgrace upon it, or tempt any to *blaspheme*, instead of sanctifying, *that worthy name by which they are called**: but that each of us, in our stations, may, with all diligence, and all prudence, propagate the belief of *pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father*†. This is the way, and the only way possible, for us truly to honour him, and be truly good and happy; happy in ourselves, and in each other; in the present world, and that which is to come. With this petition therefore our blessed Lord most rationally directs us to begin. And let us all remember, that what he bids us pray for in the first place, he will expect that we should endeavour after in the first place, and as we acknowledge *him, who hath called us, to be holy*, that we should *be holy also, in all manner of conversation*‡.

* James ii. 7.

† James i. 27.

‡ 1 Pet. i. 15.

LECTURE XXXI.

Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done.

THE second petition of the Lord's Prayer, *Thy kingdom come*, follows very naturally after the first, *Hallowed be thy name*. For hallowing the name of God, that is, entertaining just notions, and being possessed with a deep sense, of the holiness of his nature, his abhorrence of sin, his justice and goodness; is the necessary preparative for submitting to, and being faithful subjects of that kingdom, for the coming of which we are directed to pray.

God indeed is, ever was, and cannot but be, Lord and King of the whole world, possessed of all right and all dominion over all things: as the plainest reason shews, and the conclusion of this very prayer, in conformity to the rest of Scripture, acknowledges. In this sense therefore we cannot pray for his kingdom, as something future, but only rejoice in its being actually present: for what can be greater joy, than to live under the government of infinite mercy, wisdom, and power? *The Lord reigneth: let the earth rejoice, let the multitude of isles be glad thereof* *.

But besides this natural kingdom of God, there is a moral and spiritual one, founded on the willing

* Psalm xcvi. 1.

obedience of reasonable creatures to those laws of righteousness, which he hath given them. Now this, we have too plain evidence, is not yet come amongst men, so fully as it ought. The very first of human race revolted from their Maker; and their descendants, as both Scripture and other history shews, grew, age after age, yet more and more disobedient: till at length the inhabitants of the whole earth, instead of being the happy subjects of God's rightful empire, became, by immoral lives, and idolatrous worship, most wretched slaves to the usurped dominion of the wicked one. The wisdom and goodness of God made immediate provision, through his only Son our Lord, to oppose this kingdom of darkness, as soon as it appeared in the world: not by his absolute power; for obedience loses its value, unless it proceeds from choice; but by the rational method of instructions, promises, and warnings from heaven, superadded to what nature taught, and suited to the circumstances of every age.

These he gave at first by the patriarchs to all men promiscuously; and whoever acknowledged his authority, and obeyed his law, was a good subject and true member of his kingdom. But when afterwards, notwithstanding this care, the corruption of mankind was become general, he chose the posterity of his servant Abraham, and distinguished them by his especial favour: not as casting off the rest of the world; for *in every nation, at all times, they that fear God, and work righteousness, are accepted with him**: but that, in this people at least, the profession of faith in him, and subjection to him, might be kept alive; not merely for their own benefit, but the information of others also. With them therefore was

* Acts x. 35.

the kingdom of God, in a peculiar degree, for 1500 years. While they flourished in their own land, they held forth the light of truth to all the nations round them. And when they were led captive, or dispersed into other lands, they spread it yet farther: and thus were great instruments in preparing the rest of mankind for that general re-establishment of obedience to the true God, as King and Lord of all, which our blessed Saviour came to effect.

The Gospel dispensation therefore having this for its end, and being much more perfectly fitted to attain it, than any preceding manifestation of religion had been; the Scripture, in a distinguished manner, calls it *the kingdom of God, or of heaven*: both which words denote, in exactly the same view, that dominion, which in Daniel it is foretold *the God of heaven should set up, and which should never be destroyed**. Our Saviour was then, after John the Baptist, only giving notice of its approach, and opening the way for setting it up, when he first directed his disciples to pray, that it might come. By his death he raised it on the ruins of the devil's usurpation, *over whom he triumphed on his cross*†: and now it hath been many ages in the world. But still it is by no means come, in that extent, and to that good effect, which we have reason to beg that it may, and to believe that it will. The largest part of mankind hath not, so much as in profession, entered into this kingdom: but lies overwhelmed in Pagan idolatry, Jewish unbelief, or Mahometan delusion. The largest part of Christians have corrupted the doctrines of Christ with grievous errors: and those who preserve the

* Dan. ii. 44.

† Col. ii. 15.

purest faith, too generally live such impure and wicked lives; that, though the kingdom of God hath indeed taken place amongst them in outward appearance, yet in that sense, which will prove at last the only important one, they are still far from it. *For the kingdom of God, saith our Saviour, is within you**; and consists, as the Apostle further explains it, in *righteousness, and peace, and joy in the graces of the Holy Ghost†*.

Here then is great room, and great need, for praying; that the *heathen* may become *the inheritance* of Christ, and the *uttermost parts of the Mahometan world his possession‡*: that the Jews, from whom, for their unbelief, *the kingdom of God hath been so long taken§* away, may be restored to a share in it; as the prophets, both of the Old and New Testament, have foretold they shall: and lastly, that *all who profess and call themselves Christians, may not only be led into the way of truth, but hold the faith in unity of spirit, in the bond of peace, and in righteousness of life||*. How little prospect soever there may be at present of such happiness as this, yet *we have a sure word of prophecy¶*, for the ground of our prayers, that the time shall come, when *the kingdoms of this world shall be the kingdoms of our God and of his Christ***, in a degree that they have never been yet; when *all the people shall be righteous††*, and *know the Lord, from the greatest unto the least‡‡*.

But the kingdom of God upon earth, even in its best estate, is comparatively but short-lived and imperfect, indeed a mere introduction to that glorious

* Luke xvii. 21.

† Rom. xiv. 17.

‡ Psalm ii. 8.

§ Matth. xxi. 43.

|| Prayer for all conditions of men.

¶ 2 Pet. i. 19.

** Rev. xi. 15.

†† Isa. lx. 21.

‡‡ Jer. xxxi. 34.

and eternal manifestation of it in heaven, which ought ever to be the object of our most ardent desires and requests. For as the governor, and the governed, and the great fundamental laws of government, are still to be the same, in the present state of trial, and the future one of recompence, they both make up together but one kingdom of God. And therefore, when we pray for the coming of it, we pray, in the last place, for the arrival of that time, when the King and Judge of all *shall sit upon the throne of his glory**, and reward every man according to his works†; when the righteous shall shine forth, as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father‡; even that kingdom, which was prepared for them from the foundation of the world§, and shall reign with him in it for ever and ever||.

But then, as we pray for this time, we must prepare for it also: else we do nothing but ask our own condemnation; as the prophet Amos hath most awfully warned us: *Wo unto you that desire the day of the Lord. To what end is it for you? The day of the Lord is darkness, and not light¶*.

To instruct us therefore, on what it is, that our share in the kingdom of God depends, our Saviour immediately subjoins another petition, expressing it very clearly: *Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven*. For not every one that saith unto him, *Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven***: but they only who do the will of God, shall receive his promise††.

Indeed what God wills to do himself, that he doth accordingly, both in the army of heaven, and amongst

* Matth. xxv. 31.

† Matth. xvi. 27.

‡ Matth. xiii. 43.

§ Matth. xxv. 34.

|| Rev. xx. 6. xxii. 5.

¶ Amos v. 18.

** Matth. vii. 21.

†† Heb. x. 36.

*the inhabitants of the earth; and none can stay his hand**. But what he wills us to do, that he only requires of us, as we value his favour, or fear his displeasure; leaving us designedly that power of not doing what he bids us, without which, doing it were no virtue. But though disobedience to his will is in our power; yet obedience is not so, without the assistance of his grace: which therefore, in these words, we desire for ourselves, and for all men. And since, by the means of prayer, we may have strength to obey his will granted us; we are certainly, with as much justice, expected to obey it, as if we had the power already of our own.

Now the will of God consists in these two things: that we suffer patiently what he lays upon us, and perform faithfully what he commands us. The former of these; to bear with resignation whatever, in any kind, God sees proper to inflict; and, though we may wish and pray for the prevention or removal of sufferings, yet to be content, nay desirous, that *his will should be done, not ours*†; may often prove a difficult, but is always an evident and necessary, duty. For to indulge a contrary disposition, is to set up ourselves above our Maker; to rebel against his authority, deny his wisdom, and distrust his goodness. The ability therefore of submitting meekly to his pleasure, is undoubtedly one great thing that we are to request, and endeavour to obtain.

But still, as the blessed inhabitants of heaven surely have little or no occasion for this kind of obedience, we have reason to think that the other, the active sort, is the point which our Saviour designed we should principally have in view, when

* Dan. iv. 25.

† Luke xxii. 42.

we beg, that God's will may be done by us, as it is by them: by his *angels that fulfil his commandments, hearkening unto the voice of his words; those ministers of his, that do his pleasure**. Not that we can hope to equal the services of beings placed so much above us: but only aspire to such resemblance of them, that our obedience may bear the same proportion to our abilities, which that of the heavenly spirits doth to theirs. Their knowledge of God's will is clear and distinct: on which account the highest character given of human wisdom is, to be *as an angel of God, to discern good and bad†*. It should therefore, when we make use of this petition, be our desire, that we also, in our degree, may *be not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is‡*; and may *abound more and more, in knowledge and all judgement§*. They do every thing, without exception, which they know to be God's pleasure: whereas we are very apt to omit part, and perform the rest but imperfectly. They do it with alacrity and cheerfulness: whereas we too often shew great backwardness and reluctance. They do it also from a real principle of duty: whereas, were the truth but known, as to God it is known, a great share of the good actions, upon which we value ourselves, are perhaps only good appearances; proceeding, some from constitution, some from worldly prudence, some from vanity; few, it may be doubted, principally, and fewer yet, intirely, from the love or fear of God, from esteem of virtue, or hatred of sin. In these respects then we must earnestly pray, and diligently endeavour, to be like the holy angels; and

* Psal. ciii. 20, 21.

† 2 Sam. xiv. 17.

‡ Eph. v. 17.

§ Phil. i. 9.

were we but like them in one thing more, that they all, without exception, do the will of God, and have none amongst them disobedient to it; then would our earth resemble heaven indeed. How far this is from being the case, we know too well. But notwithstanding let us comfort ourselves with considering, that as the time was, when even these blessed spirits had a mixture of evil ones amongst them; so the time will be, when we shall have no such mixture amongst us, but shall become, in this and all respects, *as the angels of God in heaven**.

* Matth. xxii. 30.

LECTURE XXXII.

Give us this Day our Daily Bread : And forgive us our Trespases, as we forgive them that trespass against us.

THE three former of the six petitions of the Lord's Prayer express our earnest desires, that we, and all our fellow-creatures, may attain the great end of our creation ; that is, may understand, receive, and practise, true religion, to God's honour and our own eternal happiness : after which we proceed, in the three last, to ask of him the means to this end ; such supplies of our wants, as will be needful for the performance of our duties. And they are comprehended under three heads more : the relief of our temporal necessities, the forgiveness of our past sins, and the assistance of his grace against future temptations.

The first of these blessings we request, by saying, *Give us this day our daily bread.* All the good things of life, and all our capacity of receiving support and comfort from them, proceed, as every thing doth, from God's free gift ; and therefore depend, as every thing doth, on his free pleasure : for what he hath bestowed, he can, with just the same ease, at any

time, take away. He hath placed things indeed in a regular, and what we call a natural, course and order. But this order is not only of his own appointing, but his own preserving too. *He it is, that maketh his sun to rise**; that *giveth us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness†*. Were he only thus kind to us all in general, it would certainly be our duty to acknowledge his kindness, and pray for the continuance of it. But we learn from Scripture further, that his providence extends, even in the minutest instances, to each of us in particular; and that not the smallest thing comes to pass, but by his appointment, or wise permission‡; that his continual superintendency may be ever exercised towards us for our good. We know not indeed with certainty, in these matters, what will be good for us. But still, since he hath given us desires, inseparable from our frame, of enjoying life to its ordinary term; with a competent share of the several accommodations which contribute to make it agreeable; it must be lawful to express those desires to him in a proper manner. And this our Saviour directs us how to do, when he bids us petition for *our daily bread*.

The word *bread*, as it frequently signifies in Scripture all sorts of food, so it may very naturally signify, what it doth in this prayer, all sorts of things requisite in human life. This Agur meant, when he prayed, that God would *feed him with food* (in the original it is *bread*) *convenient for him§*. And this we mean in common discourse, as often as we speak of persons getting their *bread*. But then it must by no means be extended beyond things requisite; those,

* Matth. v. 45.

† Acts xiv. 17.

‡ Matth. x. 29, 30. Luke xii. 6, 7.

§ Prov. xxx. 8.

without which we are unable either to subsist at all, or however conveniently and comfortably. Not that desires of further advantages in the world are universally unlawful. But they are so apt to enlarge, and swell into extravagant and sinful passions; into schemes of luxury, or vanity, or covetousness; that we have usually much more need to restrain and check, than authorize them, by asking the accomplishment of them from God; lest we be guilty of what St. James condemns, *asking amiss, that we may consume it upon our lusts**.

It is therefore only for such a share of worldly good, as to a reasonable and moderate mind will appear sufficient, that our Saviour allows us here to pray; in the spirit which Agur, in the prayer just mentioned, expresses, *Give me neither poverty nor riches: feed me with food convenient for me. Lest I be full, and deny thee, and say, Who is the Lord? or lest I be poor, and steal, and take the name of my God in vain†*. For indeed, though the temptations of extreme poverty are very great; yet the tendency of wealth and ease and power, to sensuality and pride and forgetfulness of God, is so exceeding strong, that a well-instructed and considerate mind would rather submit, than choose to be placed in a condition of abundance and eminence. For preserving the order, and conducting the affairs of the world, some must be in such stations: but let who are, look well to their ways; and let none of their inferiors envy them.

It ought to be further observed here, that our blessed Lord hath not only confined us to pray for *our bread*, but *our daily bread*; to be given us, as we ask for it, day by day: intending, doubtless,

* James iv. 3.

† Prov. xxx. 8, 9.

to make us remember and acknowledge, that our dependence on God is continual, from one moment to another: that they, who have the most of this world, have it only during his pleasure: and are bound, both to ask, and receive, every day's enjoyment of it, as a new gift from him: while, at the same time, they who have least may be assured, that what he hath commanded them to pray for, he will ordinarily not fail to bestow upon them; by blessing their endeavours, if they are able to use endeavours; or by stirring up the charity of others towards them, if they are not.

But as to those who can labour, industry is the method by which God hath thought fit to give them their bread; and, therefore, by which they ought to seek it. They have no title to it any other way; St. Paul having directed, *that if any one will not work, neither should he eat**. Nor must they work only to supply their present necessities: but by diligence and frugality, lay up something, if possible, for future exigencies also: learning of *the ant, which provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth her food in the harvest*†.

So that applying for our daily bread to God, is far from excluding a proper care to use the appointed means of procuring it for ourselves. But if our care be a presumptuous one, and void of regard to the Disposer of all things; we provoke him to blast our fairest hopes. And if it be an anxious and distrustful one, we think injuriously of him to whom we pray; who can as easily give us the bread of tomorrow, as he gave us that of yesterday. Nay, if our worldly cares, though they do not disquiet our minds, yet engross them; if we carry our attention to

* 2 Thess. iii. 10.

† Prov. vi. 8.

this world so far as to forget the next; or imagine ourselves to be securer in stores, *laid up for many years**, than in God's good providence; this also is very unsuitable to the spirit, both of our Lord's Prayer, and of his whole religion; which commands us to *seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness†*, and *not to trust in uncertain riches, but in him, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy‡*.

I shall only add two observations more, which have been made very justly on this petition§: that, since we ask our bread from God, we ought not to accept it from the devil; that is, to gain our subsistence by any unlawful means: and that, since we do not say, *Give me my daily bread*; but *give us ours*; we entreat God to supply the wants of others, as well as our own. Now the means which he hath provided for supplying the wants of the helpless poor, is the charity of the rich. And to pray him, that they may be relieved, and yet withhold from them what he hath designed for their relief, is just that piece of inconsistency or hypocrisy, which St. James so strongly exposes. *If a brother, or sister, be naked, and destitute of daily food; and one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed, and be ye filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit||?*

From our temporal wants, we proceed next to a much more important concern, our spiritual ones; and here we ask in the first place, what it is very fit we should, pardon and mercy. *Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.* The forgiveness of sins having been already explained, under that article of the Creed, which relates to

* Luke xii. 19.

† Matth. vi. 33.

‡ 1 Tim. vi. 17.

§ By Bishop Blackhall.

|| James ii. 15, 16.

it; I shall only take notice at present of the argument, which we are directed to use in pleading for it, which is likewise the especial condition of our obtaining it; that *we also forgive**, as we hope to be forgiven. And concerning this, two things ought to be understood: what that forgiveness is, to which we are bound; and how far the exercise of it will avail us.

Now the obligation to forgiveness means, not that the magistrate is to omit punishing malefactors; *for he is the minister of God, a revenger, to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil†*: not that the rulers of the church are to forbear spiritual censures against notorious offenders; for the Scripture hath appointed them for the amendment of sinners, and the preservation of the innocent, when they are likely to have these good effects: not that private persons do amiss in bringing transgressors to justice; for neglecting it would be in general only a seeming kindness to them, and a real mischief to human society: not that we are forbid to make reasonable demands on such, as withhold our dues, or do us any damage; for recovering a debt is a very different thing from revenging an injury: nor lastly, that we are always bound, when persons have behaved ill to us, either to think as well of them as before; which may be impossible; or to trust and favour them as much; which may be unwise. But our obligation to forgive doth mean, and absolutely require, that civil governors be moderate and merciful: and ecclesiastical ones make use of discipline *to edification, not to destruction‡*; that, in our private capacity, we pass by all offences, which, with safety to ourselves, and the public, we can: that where we must punish, we do it with reluctance; and as gently, as

* Luke xi. 4.

† Rom. xiii. 4.

‡ 2 Cor. x. 8. xiii. 10.

the case will permit; and where we must defend or recover our rights; we do it with the least expence, and the least uneasiness to the adverse party, that may be: that we never be guilty of injustice to others, because they have been guilty of it to us; and never refuse them proper favours, merely because we have been refused such favours by them; much less because we have not obtained from them what it was not fit that we should: that we look upon little provocations, as trifles; and be careful, not to think great ones greater than they are: that we be willing to make those, who have displeased us, all such allowance to the full, as our common frailty and ignorance demand: that we always wish well to them; and be ready, as soon as ever we have real cause, to think well of them; to believe their repentance; and, how great or many soever their faults may have been, to accept it; and restore them to as large a share of our kindness and friendship, as any wise and good person, uninterested in the question, would think safe and right: always remembering, in every case of injury, how very apt we are to err on the severe side; and how very much better it is, to err on the merciful one.

This is the temper of forgiveness to our fellow-creatures: and it is plainly a good and fit temper. Let us therefore now consider further, what influence it will have towards our Maker's forgiving us. Our Saviour undoubtedly lays a peculiar stress on it for this purpose; both by inserting it, as a condition, into the body of his prayer; and insisting on it, as a necessary one, in his words immediately after the prayer. But still, we must observe, he doth not mention it as the cause, that procures our forgiveness: for *God saveth us, not by this, or any other*

*works of righteousness, which we do, but according to his mercy; which he hath shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ; that, being justified by his grace, we may be heirs of eternal life**. Our pardoning others, is no more than a qualification, requisite to our receiving that final pardon from God, which our Saviour, through the divine goodness, hath merited by his death, on that condition. Nor is it the only qualification necessary, though it be a principal one. For the rest of God's laws were given in vain, if observing this one would secure his favour: and *Christ* would be found *the minister of sin*†, if he had taught, that the single good disposition of forgiveness would be sufficient, let a person have ever so many bad ones. But it is plain, that throughout the whole Sermon on the Mount, on which this prayer is delivered, he makes the performance of every part of our duty the condition of our acceptance. In the very beginning of it, he hath promised heaven to several other virtues, as well as here to this: and the meaning is, not that persons may get thither by any one, that they will; for nobody sure is so bad as to have none at all: but that each of them shall have its proper share, in fitting us for that mercy and reward, which however, with less than all of them, we shall never obtain. Our imperfections in all will indeed be pardoned: but not our continuance in a wilful neglect of any.

Still, though a spirit of forgiveness to our brother is by no means the whole, that God requires in order to forgive us; yet it is a quality, often so difficult, always so important, and so peculiarly needful to be exercised by us, when we are intreating our Maker to exercise it towards us; that our Saviour had great reason to place it in the strong light which he hath

* Tit. iii. 5, 6, 7.

† Gal. ii. 17.

done; and even to place it single; since his design could not easily be understood to be any other, than to engage our particular attention to what deserves it so much. For if we will not, for the love of God, and in obedience to his command, pardon our fellow-creatures the few and small injuries, which they are able to do us; (when perhaps we may have done many things to provoke them, and comparatively can have done little to oblige or serve them) how should we ever expect, that he will forgive us the numerous and heinous offences, which we have committed against him; from whom we have received all that we have, on whom we depend for all that we can hope for, to whom therefore we owe the most unre-served duty, and the most affectionate gratitude?

Let us remember then, that since we pray to be forgiven, only as we forgive; so often as we use these words, we pray in effect for God's vengeance upon ourselves, instead of his mercy, if we forgive not. And therefore let us apply to him continually for grace to do in earnest, what we profess to do in this petition: let us carefully examine our hearts and our conduct, that we may not cheat ourselves, for we cannot cheat God, with false pretences of observing this duty, while indeed we transgress it; let us utterly *put away from us all bitterness, and wrath, and clamour, and evil-speaking, with all malice; and be kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another; even as we hope, that God, for Christ's sake, will forgive us**.

* Eph. iv. 31, 32.

L E C T U R E XXXIII.

And lead us not into Temptation; but deliver us from Evil: for thine is the Kingdom, and the Power, and the Glory, for ever and ever. Amen.

WE should be very unfit to ask for the pardon of our past sins; and could neither hope to obtain it, nor indeed continue long the better for it; if we did not earnestly desire, at the same time, to avoid sin for the future. And therefore, after the petition, *Forgive us our trespasses*, most properly follows, *and lead us not into temptation*.

The word *temptation* very often signifies no more, than trial; any opposition or difficulty, that may call forth our virtues into vigorous practice; and, by so doing, both strengthen and make them known: not indeed to God, who always knows our hearts; but to ourselves and others; to those around us at present; to all mankind, and the holy angels hereafter. Now in this general sense, our whole life on earth is, and was intended to be, a state of temptation: in which, as the Scripture expresses it, *God himself tempts men**; that is, proves and exercises them. And accordingly St. James directs us to *count it all joy, when we fall into divers temptations*; adding a very good

* Gen. xxii. 1. Deut. iv. 34. 2 Chron. xxxii. 31.

reason for it; *Blessed is the man, that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life; which the Lord hath promised to them that love him**. The more love to God we thus shew; the more we exert our inward good principles and habits, and by exerting, improve them; the greater reward we shall obtain. When therefore we say, *Lead us not into temptation*; we do not pray, that we may not be tried at all: for we know, that we must, even for our own good.

But the word here stands for dangerous trials, provocations and enticements to sin: under which we are likely to sink, instead of overcoming them. Now there is indeed scarce any thing in life, that may not be a temptation to us, in this bad sense. Our tempers, our ages, our stations and employments in the world, be they ever so different, may, each in their different ways, risk our innocence. They that are poor, are grievously tempted, either to repine against God; or take unlawful methods of relieving themselves. And *they, that will be rich, experience, as well as the Apostle, may teach us, fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts†*. Both adversity and prosperity, business and leisure, company and solitude, have their respective hazards. And sometimes these hazards are so dreadfully heightened by particular circumstances; and, at others, trying incidents, totally unforeseen, happen so unseasonably; that, though they may only rouse and animate our virtue: yet they may also, more probably, overbear, and destroy it. And therefore we must know very little of our natural frailty, the strength of our passions, and the *deceitfulness of sin‡*; if we do not think it the more prudent, as well

* James i. 2, 12.

† 1 Tim. vi. 9.

‡ Heb. iii. 13.

as modester part, to decline, than venture the conflict, if it be God's will: and do not accordingly beg of him, that he would *not lead us into such temptation*.

God, indeed, *tempts no man**, in the sense of alluring and inviting him to sin; as the devil, and wicked people, and our own bad hearts do. And therefore to pray, in this sense, that he would *ot lead us into temptation*, would be great irreverence, instead of piety: for it is inconsistent with the holiness of his nature, that he should. But as nothing comes to pass, but with his knowledge and sufferance; and every thing is subject to his direction and superintendency; the Scripture speaks, as if every thing was done by him, when the meaning, as appears by other passages of it, is only to acknowledge, that nothing is done without him: and, agreeably to the manner of speaking in the eastern countries, things are ascribed to him, which he only permits, and afterwards turns to the furtherance of his own good purposes. Now God may very justly permit us to be led into the severest temptations, if we do not pray to him against it: because a great part of the danger proceeds from that weakness, which we have wilfully, or carelessly, brought upon ourselves; and prayer is one of the means, that he hath appointed for our preservation and relief: which means if we use as we ought, *He will not suffer us to be tempted above that we are able; but will, with the temptation, also make a way to escape, that we may be able to bear it†*.

But if, through pride or negligence, we will not ask for his help, we must not expect it. And though we do, for form's sake, ask it, if we have little faith in it, or dependence on it, St. James hath foretold the event: *Let not that man think that he shall receive any*

* James i. 13.

† 1 Cor. x. 13.

*thing of the Lord**. Yet, on the other hand, if we carry our dependence so far, as presumptuously to run into those dangers, out of which we beg him to keep us; or at least, will do little or nothing to keep ourselves out of them, instead of doing every thing that we can; or if in the dangers, in which he may think fit to place us, we will not use our best endeavours to stand, as well as pray that we may not fall; such prayers can never be likely to avail for our protection. But fervent devotion, hearty resolution, and prudent care, united, and continued, will do any thing. By whatever difficulties we are surrounded, and how little possibility soever we may see of getting through them; still *commit thy way unto the Lord, put thy trust in him, and he shall bring it to pass*†.

In the second part of this petition, *But deliver us from evil*; the word *evil* may signify, either sin and its consequences; or the great tempter to sin, the *evil or wicked one*; for by that name the devil is often called in the New Testament‡. The number indeed of wicked spirits is probably very great: but notwithstanding this, being united, under one head, in one design of obstructing our salvation, they are all comprehended under one name. And since, in our present state of trial, we have *not only*, as experience shews, *flesh and blood to wrestle against*; our own bad dispositions, and the solicitations of a bad world, to resist; but also, as the word of God informs us, *principalities and powers, and spiritual wickedness in high places*§, an army of invisible enemies, employing to overcome us, and not less formidably because imperceptibly, all the stratagems, that Heaven allows them to use; this, as it increases our danger, may

* James i. 7. † Psalm xxxvii. 5.
1 John ii. 13, 14. iii. 12. v. 18.

‡ Matth. xiii. 19, 38.

§ Eph. vi. 11, 12.

well quicken our prayers for safety and deliverance. That there should be evil angels, as well as evil men, of the greatest abilities and accomplishments, is, if rightly considered, no great wonder: and that both should intice us to sin, is no reasonable discouragement; for let us but apply to God, and we shall not be left in the power of either. What the power of wicked spirits is, we are not told in Scripture: and it is no part of religion, in the least, to believe idle stories about them. Of this we are sure, that they have no power but what God permits: and he will never permit them to do, what shall prove in the end, any hurt to those, who serve and fear him. More especially we are sure, that they cannot in the least, either force us into sinning, or hinder us from repenting. Invite or dissuade us they may, by suggesting false notions of the pleasure, or profit, or harmlessness of sin, by representing God, as too good to be angry, or too severe to be reconciled: by describing to our imaginations, repentance to be so easy at any time, that it is needless now; or so difficult now, that it is too late and impossible; by putting it into our thoughts, that we are so good, we may be confident, and careless; or so wicked, we must absolutely despair. It concerns us therefore greatly, *not to be ignorant of their devices**. But provided we keep on our guard; earnestly apply to God, and are true to ourselves; neither their temptations, nor those of the whole world, shall prevail against us. For then only, as St. James gives us to understand, is *every man tempted dangerously, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed*†. The enemy within therefore is the most formidable one: and against this it is chiefly, that we are to *watch and pray, that we enter*

* 2 Cor. ii. 11:

† James i. 14.

not into temptation: remembering always, that how *willing soever the spirit* may be, yet *the flesh is weak**.

And now let us observe, in the last place, under this head, that as we are to pray against being led into temptation ourselves, we should be very careful, never to lead others into it; but do every thing that we can, to keep them out of it, and deliver them from it: and that, as begging God's help that we may stand, must be grounded on a strong sense of our proneness to fall; we should shew great compassion towards them, who, through the same proneness, have fallen. *Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault: ye which are spiritual, restore such a one in the spirit of meekness: considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted*†.

Thus we have gone through the six petitions, which compose the second part of the Lord's Prayer; and shewn it to be worthy of its Author, by distinctly comprehending, in so little room, whatever is necessary for the honour of God, and our own good, both temporal and spiritual. What remains further, is to speak briefly of the third part, which concludes the whole, by ascribing to our heavenly Father, the praise *due unto his name*‡: acknowledging here most expressly, what indeed hath been throughout implied, that his *is the kingdom*, the rightful authority and supreme dominion over all: his *the power*, by which every thing just and good is brought to pass: his therefore *the glory* of whatever we his creatures do, or enjoy, or hope for; of whatever this universe, and the whole scheme of things which it comprehends, hath had, or now hath, or ever shall have in it, awful or gracious, and worthy of the admiration of men and angels. And as all dignity and might and ho-

* Matth. xxvi. 41.

† Gal. vi. 1.

‡ Psalm xxix. 2.

nour are his; so they are his *for ever and ever*: originally, independently, and unchangeably. *From everlasting to everlasting he is God**, *the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever†*.

These words then are, at once, an act of homage to his greatness, and thanksgiving to his goodness: both which ought ever to have a place in our prayers; and the conclusion is a very proper place. For the infinite perfections of God our maker, which we thus celebrate, are the best reason possible for every petition that we have offered to him; and therefore our blessed Lord introduces them as the reason. *For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory.* Besides, ending with these acknowledgements will leave them fresh and strong upon our minds: especially as we finish all with that solemn asseveration, *Amen*: which is a word used in Scripture, only upon serious and important occasions, to confirm the truth and sincerity of what is promised, wished, or affirmed. It relates therefore equally to the whole of the prayer: and is in effect declaring, that we do heartily believe whatever we have said, and heartily desire whatever we have asked.

This expression therefore may remind us, that our prayers should always be composed, both in such a language, and in such words in that language, as all that are to use or join in them, are well acquainted with. For else, as St. Paul argues, *How shall he, that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say, Amen: seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest‡?*

And it should likewise remind us very strongly of another thing, if possible, yet more important: that we should never say to God, what we cannot say with the utmost truth of heart. Now with what truth, or

* Psalm xc. 2.

† Heb. xiii. 8.

‡ 1 Cor. xiv. 16.

what face, can any person, that lives in any sin, repeat the prayer which our Lord hath taught us, and say *Amen* to it: when every sentence in it, if well considered, is inconsistent with a bad life? Let us therefore consider both it and ourselves very carefully, that we may offer up our devotions always in an acceptable manner. For *the sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord: but the prayer of the upright is his delight**.

* Prov. xv. 8.

LECTURE XXXIV.

THE NATURE AND NUMBER OF THE SACRAMENTS.

THE far greatest part of the duties which we owe to God, flow, as it were, of themselves, from his nature and attributes, and the several relations to him, in which we stand, whether made known to us by reason or Scripture. Such are those, which have been hitherto explained to you: the ten commandments; and prayer for the grace, which our fallen condition requires, in order to keep them. But there are still some important precepts peculiar to Christianity, and deriving their whole obligation from our Saviour's institution of them: concerning which it is highly requisite that our catechism should instruct us, before it concludes. And these are the two sacraments.

The word *sacrament*, by virtue of its original in the Latin tongue, signifies any sacred or holy thing or action: and among the heathens was particularly applied to denote, sometimes a pledge, deposited in a sacred place*; sometimes an oath, the most sacred of obligations; and especially that oath of fidelity, which the soldiery took to their general. In Scripture it is not used at all. By the early writers of the western church it was used to express almost any

* Eden, Elem. Jur. Civ. p. 238. Gronov. in Plaut. Rud. 5. 3. 21.

thing relating to our holy religion; at least any thing that was figurative, and signified somewhat further than at first sight appeared. But afterwards a more confined use of the word prevailed by degrees: and in that stricter sense, which hath long been the common one, and which our Catechism follows, the nature of a sacrament comprehends the following particulars:

1. There must be *an outward and visible sign*: the solemn application of some bodily and sensible thing or action, to a meaning and purpose which in its own nature it hath not. In common life, we have many other signs to express our meanings, on occasions of great consequence, besides words. And no wonder then, if in religion, we have some of the same kind.

2. In a sacrament, the outward and visible sign must denote *an inward and spiritual grace given unto us*: that is, some favour freely bestowed on us from heaven; by which our inward and spiritual condition, the state of our souls, is made better. Most of the significative actions, that we use in religion, express only our duty to God. Thus kneeling in prayer is used to shew our reverence towards him to whom we pray. And signing a child with the cross, after it is baptized, declares our obligation not to be ashamed of the cross of Christ. But a sacrament, besides expressing on our part, duty to God, expresses, on his part, some grace or favour towards us.

3. In order to intitle any thing to the name of Sacrament, a further requisite is, that it be *ordained by Christ himself*. We may indeed use, on the foot of human authority alone, actions, that set forth either our sense of any duty, or our belief in God's grace. For it is certainly as lawful to express a good meaning by any other proper sign as by words. But then,

such marks as these, which we commonly call ceremonies, as they are taken up at pleasure, may be laid aside again at pleasure; and ought to be laid aside, whenever they grow too numerous, or abuses are made of them, which cannot easily be reformed: and this hath frequently been the case. But sacraments are of perpetual obligation: for they stand on the authority of Christ; who hath certainly appointed nothing to be for ever observed in his church, but what he saw would be for ever useful. Nor doth every appointment of Christ, though it be of perpetual obligation, deserve the name of a sacrament: but those, and no other, which are

4. Not only signs of grace, but *means* also, *whereby we receive the same*. None but our blessed Lord could appoint such means: and which of his ordinances should be such, and which not, none but himself could determine. From his word therefore we are to learn it: and then, as we hope to attain the end, we must use the means. But when it is said, that the sacraments are means of grace; we are not to understand, either that the performance of the mere outward action doth, by its own virtue, produce a spiritual effect in us; nor that God hath annexed any such effect to that alone: but that he will accompany the action with his blessing, provided it be done as it ought; with those qualifications which he requires. And therefore, unless we fulfil the condition, we must not expect the benefit.

Further; calling the sacraments, means of grace, doth not signify them to be means by which we merit grace; for nothing but the sufferings of our blessed Saviour can do that for us; but means, by which what he hath merited is conveyed to us.

Nor yet are they the only means of conveying grace: for reading, and hearing, and meditating upon the word of God, are part of the things which he hath appointed for this end: and prayer is another part, accompanied with an express promise, that if we *ask, we shall receive**. But these, not being such actions as figure out and represent the benefits which they derive to us, though they are means of grace, are not signs of it; and therefore, do not come under the notion of sacraments. But,

5. A sacrament is not only a sign or representation of some heavenly favour, and a means whereby we receive it, but also *a pledge to assure us thereof*. Not that any thing can give us a greater assurance, in point of reason, of any blessing from God, than his bare promise can do: but that such observances, appointed in token of his promises, affect our imaginations with a stronger sense of them; and make a deeper and more lasting, and therefore more useful, impression on our minds. For this cause, in all nations of the world, representations by action have ever been used, as well as words, upon solemn occasions: especially upon entering into and renewing treaties and covenants with each other. And therefore, in condescension to a practice, which, being so universal among men, appears to be founded in the nature of man; God hath graciously added to his covenant also, the solemnity of certain outward instructive performances; by which he declares to us, that as surely as our bodies are washed by water, and nourished by bread broken and wine poured forth and received; so surely are our souls purified from sin by the baptism of repentance; and strengthened in

* John xvi. 24.

all goodness, by partaking of that mercy, which the wounding of the body of Christ, and the shedding of his blood, hath obtained for us. And thus these religious actions, so far as they are performed by God's minister, in pursuance of his appointment, are an earnest or pledge on his part, which (as I observed to you) was one ancient signification of the word Sacrament: and so far as we join in them, they are an obligation, binding like an oath, on our part, as shall be hereafter shewn you: which was the other primitive meaning of the word.

Having thus explained to you the description of a sacrament, given in the Catechism; let us now consider, what things we have in our religion that answer to it. For the papists reckon no less than seven sacraments. And though this number was not named for above one thousand years after Christ; nor fixed by the authority of even their own church, till two hundred years ago, that is, since the Reformation; yet now they accuse us, for not agreeing with them in it, but acknowledging only two.

The first of their five is confirmation. And if this be a sacrament, we administer it as well as they, indeed much more agreeably to the original practice; and are therefore intitled, at least, to the same benefit from it. But though Christ did indeed *put his hands on children, and bless them**; yet we do not read, that he appointed this particular ceremony for a means of conveying grace. And though the Apostles did use it after him, as others had done before him; yet there is no foundation to ascribe any separate efficacy to the laying on of hands, as distinct from the prayers that accompany it: or to look upon

* Mark x. 16.

the whole of confirmation as any thing else, than a solemn manner of persons' taking upon themselves their baptismal vow, followed by the solemn addresses of the bishop and the congregation, that they may ever keep it: in which addresses, laying on of hands is used, partly as a mark of good-will to the person for whom the prayers are offered up; and partly also as a sign, that the fatherly hand of God is over all who undertake to serve him: yet without any claim of conveying his grace particularly by it: but only with intention of praying for his grace along with it: which prayers however we have so just ground to hope he will hear, that they who neglect this ordinance, though not a sacrament, are greatly wanting both to their interest and their duty.

Another sacrament of the church of Rome is penance; which they make to consist of particular confession to the priest of every deadly sin, particular absolution from him, and such acts of devotion, mortification, or charity, as he shall think fit to enjoin. But no one part of this being required in Scripture, much less any outward sign of it appointed, or any inward grace annexed to it; there is nothing in the whole that hath any appearance of a sacrament; but too much suspicion of a contrivance to gain an undue influence and power.

A third sacrament of theirs is, extreme unction. But their plea for it is no more than this. St. James, at a time when miraculous gifts were common, directed *the elders of the church*, who usually had those gifts, to *anoint the sick with oil**; as we read the disciples did, whilst our Saviour was on earth†; in order to obtain by the *prayer of faith* (that *faith*

* James v. 14, 15.

† Mark vi. 13.

which could *remove mountains**) the recovery, if God saw fit, of their bodily health: and the forgiveness of those sins for which their disease was inflicted, if they had committed any such. And upon this, the church of Rome, now all such miraculous gifts are ceased, continues notwithstanding to anoint the sick, for a quite different purpose: not at all for the recovery of their health; for they do not use it till they think them very nearly, if not quite, past recovery; nor indeed for the pardon of their sins; for these, they say, are pardoned upon confession, which commonly is made before it; but chiefly, as themselves own, to procure composedness and courage in the hour of death: a purpose not only unmentioned by St. James, but inconsistent with the purpose of recovery, which he doth mention, and very often impossible to be attained. For they frequently anoint persons after they are become intirely senseless. And yet, in spite of all these things, they will needs have this practice owned for a sacrament: which indeed is now, as they manage it, a mere piece of superstition.

Another thing, which they esteem a Christian sacrament, is matrimony: though it was ordained, not by Christ, but long before his appearance on earth, in the time of man's innocency; and hath no outward sign appointed in it as a means and pledge of inward grace. But the whole matter is, that they have happened most ridiculously to mistake their own Latin translation of the New Testament: where St. Paul, having compared the union between the first married pair, Adam and Eve, to that between Christ, the second Adam, and his spouse the church;

* Matth. xvii. 20. xxi. 21. Mark xi. 23.

and having said that *this is a great mystery* * ; a figure, or comparison, not fully and commonly understood: the old interpreter, whose version they use, for *mystery* hath put *sacrament*: which in his days, as I said before, signified any thing in religion that carried a hidden meaning: and they have understood him of what we now call a sacrament. Whereas if every thing, that once had that name in the larger sense of the word, were at present to have it in the stricter sense; there would be a hundred sacraments instead of the seven, which they pretend there are.

The fifth and last thing, which they wrongly insist on our honouring with this title, is, holy orders. But as there are three orders in the church, bishops, priests, and deacons; here would be three sacraments, if there were any: but indeed there is none. For the laying on of hands in ordination is neither appointed, nor used, to convey or signify any spiritual grace; but only to confer a right of executing such an office in the church of Christ. And though prayers, for God's grace and blessing on the person ordained, are indeed very justly and usefully added; and will certainly be heard unless the person be unworthy: yet these prayers, on this occasion, no more make what is done a sacrament, than any other prayers for God's grace, on any other occasion.

However, as I have already said of confirmation, so I now say of orders and marriage: if they were sacraments, they would be as much so to us, as to the Romanists, whether we called them sacraments, or not. And if we used the name ever so erroneously, indeed if we never used it at all; as the Scripture hath never used it: that could do us no harm; pro-

* Eph. v. 32.

vided, under any name, we believe but the things, which Christ hath taught; and do but the things, which he hath commanded: for on this, and this alone, depends our acceptance, and eternal salvation.

LECTURE XXXV.

OF BAPTISM.

HAVING already explained to you the nature of a sacrament; and shewn you, that five of the seven things, which the church of Rome calls by that name, are not entitled to it; there remain only two, that are truly such: and these two are plainly sufficient: one, for our entrance into the Christian covenant; the other, during our whole continuance in it. Baptism, and the Supper of the Lord. However, as the word sacrament is not a Scripture one, and hath at different times been differently understood; our catechism doth not require it to be said absolutely, that the sacraments are two only; but two only, as necessary to salvation: leaving persons at liberty to comprehend more things under the name, if they please, provided they insist not on the necessity of them, and of dignifying them with this title. And even these two, our church very charitably teaches us not to look upon as indispensably, but as generally necessary. Out of which general necessity, we are to except those particular cases, where believers in Christ either have not the means of performing their duty

LECTURE XXXV.

OF BAPTISM.

HAVING already explained to you the nature of a sacrament; and shewn you, that five of the seven things, which the church of Rome calls by that name, are not entitled to it; there remain only two, that are truly such: and these two are plainly sufficient: one, for our entrance into the Christian covenant; the other, during our whole continuance in it: *Baptism, and the Supper of the Lord.* However, as the word Sacrament is not a Scripture one, and hath at different times been differently understood: our catechism doth not require it to be said absolutely, that the sacraments are *two only*; but *two only, as necessary to salvation*: leaving persons at liberty to comprehend more things under the name, if they please, provided they insist not on the necessity of them, and of dignifying them with this title. And even these two, our church very charitably teaches us not to look upon as indispensably, but as *generally, necessary*. Out of which general necessity, we are to except those particular cases, where believers in Christ, either have not the means of performing their duty

in respect to the sacraments, or are innocently ignorant of it, or even excusably mistaken about it.

In explaining the sacrament of *Baptism*, I shall speak, first of *the outward visible sign*, then of *the inward and spiritual grace*.

As to the former: baptism being intended for the sign and means of our purification from sin; water, the proper element for purifying and cleansing, is appointed to be used in it. There is indeed a sect, sprung up amongst us within a little more than a hundred years, that deny this appointment; and make the Christian baptism signify only the pouring out of the gift of the Holy Ghost upon a person. But our Saviour expressly requires that we be *born of water*, as well as *of the Spirit*, to enter into the kingdom of God *. And not only John, his fore-runner, *baptized with water* †, but his *disciples* also, by his direction, *baptized* in the same manner, even *more than John* ‡. When therefore he bade them afterwards *teach all nations, baptizing them* §; what baptism could they understand, but that, in which he had employed them before? And accordingly, we find, they did understand that. Philip, we read, *baptized the Samaritans* ||: not with the Holy Ghost, for the Apostles went down some time after to do that themselves ¶: but with water undoubtedly, as we find, in the same chapter, he did the eunuch: where the words are, *Here is water: what doth hinder me to be baptized? And they went down to the water: and he baptized him* **. Again, after Cornelius, and his friends, had received the Holy Ghost, and so were already baptized in that sense, Peter asks, *Can any*

* John iii. 5.

† Matth. iii. 11.

‡ John iv. 1, 2.

§ Matth. xxviii. 19.

|| Acts viii. 12.

¶ Verse 14, &c.

** Verses 36, 38.

man forbid water that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost, as well as we? When therefore John says, that he baptized with water, but Christ should baptize with the Holy Ghost†; he means, not that Christians should not be baptized with water, but that they should have the Holy Ghost poured out upon them also, in a degree that John's disciples had not. When St. Peter says, The baptism, which saveth us, is not the washing away the filth of the flesh‡; he means, it is not the mere outward act, unaccompanied by a suitable inward disposition. When St. Paul says, that Christ sent him not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel§; he means, that preaching was the principal thing he was to do in person: to baptize, he might appoint others under him: and it seems, commonly did: as St. Peter did not baptize Cornelius and his friends himself, but commanded them to be baptized||: and we read in St. John, that Jesus baptized not, but his disciples¶.*

Water-baptism therefore is appointed. And why the church of Rome should not think water sufficient in baptism, but aim at mending what our Saviour hath directed, by mixing oil and balsam with it, and dipping a lighted torch into it, I leave them to explain.

The precise manner, in which water shall be applied in baptism, Scripture hath not determined. For the word, baptize, means only to wash; whether that be done by plunging a thing under water, or pouring the water upon it. The former of these, burying as it were, the person baptized, in the water, and raising him out of it again, without question was anciently the more usual method: on account of

* Acts x. 47.

† Matth. iii. 11.

‡ 1 Pet. iii. 21.

§ 1 Cor. i. 17.

|| Acts x. 48.

¶ John iv. 12.

which, St. Paul speaks of baptism, as representing both the death, and burial, and resurrection of Christ, and what is grounded on them, our being *dead and buried to sin*; renouncing it, and being acquitted of it; and our rising again, to *walk in newness of life**; being both obliged and enabled to practise, for the future, every duty of piety and virtue. But still the other manner of washing, by pouring or sprinkling of water, sufficiently expresses the same two things: our being by this ordinance purified from the guilt of sin, and bound and qualified to keep ourselves pure from the defilement of it. Besides, it very naturally represents that *sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ*†, to which our salvation is owing. And the use of it seems not only to be foretold by the prophet Isaiah, speaking of our Saviour, *He shall sprinkle many nations*‡, that is, many shall receive his baptism; and by the prophet Ezekiel, *Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean*§: but to be had in view also by the Apostle, where he speaks of *having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water*||. And though it was less frequently used in the first ages, it must almost of necessity have been sometimes used: for instance, when baptism was administered, as we read in the Acts it was, to several thousands at once¶; when it was administered on a sudden in private houses, as we find it, in the same book, to the gaoler and all his family, the very night in which they were converted** : or when sick persons received it; in which last case, the present method was always taken, because the other, of dipping

* Rom. vi. 4, 11. Col. ii. 1. † 1 Pet. i. 2. ‡ Isa. lii. 15.

§ Ezek. xxxvi. 25. || Heb. x. 22. ¶ Acts ii. 41.

** Acts xvi. 33.

them, might have been dangerous. And from the same apprehension of danger in these colder countries, pouring the water is allowed, even when the person baptized is in health. And the particular manner being left at liberty, that is now universally chosen, which is looked on as safer: because were there more to be said for the other, than there is; *God will have mercy, and not sacrifice**.

But washing with water is not the whole outward part of this sacrament. For our Saviour commanded his Apostles, not only to *baptize all nations*, but to *baptize them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost*†. Sometimes indeed the Scripture speaks of baptism, as if it were administered only *in the name of the Lord Jesus*‡. But it fully appears§, that the name of the Holy Ghost was used at the same time; and therefore that of the Father, we may be sure. Now being baptized *in the name* of these three, may signify, being baptized by virtue of their authority. But the exacter translation is, *into the name*: and the fuller import of the expression is, by this solemn action taking upon us their name (for servants are known by the name of their master); and professing ourselves devoted to the faith, and worship, and obedience of these three; our Creator, our Redeemer, our Sanctifier. In this profession, the whole of Christianity is briefly comprehended, and on this foundation therefore the ancient Creeds are all built.

The second and principal thing in baptism, *the inward and spiritual grace*, is said in the Catechism to be *a death unto sin, and a new birth unto righteousness: for that being by nature born in sin, and the children of*

* Hos. vi. 6. Matth. ix. 13. xii. 7.

† Matth. xxviii. 19.

‡ Acts ii. 38. x. 48. xix. 5.

§ Acts xix. 2, 3.

wrath, we are hereby made the children of grace. The former part of these words refers to the old custom of baptizing by dipping, just now mentioned: and the meaning of the whole is this: Our first parents having, by disobedience in eating the forbidden fruit, corrupted their own nature; ours, being derived from them, received of necessity an original taint of the same disorder: and therefore coming into the world under the ill effects of their sin: and being, from the time of our entering into it, prone to sin ourselves; we are said to be *born in sin*. And they having also, by the same disobedience, forfeited their immortality; we, as descending from them, became mortal of course: and inheriting by way of natural consequence, what they suffered as a mark of God's wrath; we, their children, are said to be *children of wrath*. Not that God, with whatever disapprobation he must view our native depravity, is, or, properly speaking, can be, angry with us personally, for what was not our personal fault. But he might undoubtedly both refuse us that immortality, which our first parents had forfeited, and to which we have no right; and leave us without help, to the poor degree of strength, that remained to us in our fallen condition: the effect of which must have been; that had we done our best, as we were intitled to no reward from his justice, so it had been such a nothing, that we could have hoped for little, if any, from his bounty: and had we not done our best, as no man hath, we had no assurance, that even repentance would secure us from punishment. But what in strict justice he might have done, in his infinite goodness he hath not done. For the first covenant being broken by Adam, he hath entered into a new one with mankind, through Jesus Christ: in which he hath promised to free us, both

from the mortality, which our first parents had brought upon us, by restoring us to life again; and from the inability, by the powerful assistance of his Holy Spirit. Nay further yet, he hath promised (and without it the rest would have been of small use) that should we, notwithstanding his assistance, fail in our duty, when we might have performed it; as we have all failed, and made ourselves, by that means, *children of wrath*, in the strictest and worst sense: yet, on most equitable terms, he would still receive us to mercy anew. And thus the Christian covenant, delivering us, if we are faithful to it, from every thing we had to fear, and bestowing on us every thing we could hope, brings us into a state so unspeakably different from our former; that it is justly expressed by being dead to that, and born into another. And this new birth being effected by the grace or goodness of God, external and internal, we, the children of it, are properly called *the children of grace*. Now baptism is not only a sign of this grace (as indeed it signifies very naturally the washing off both of our original corruption, and our actual guilt); but the appointed way of entering into the covenant that entitles us to such grace: the *means whereby we receive the same, and a pledge to assure us thereof*.

Indeed the mere outward act of being baptized is, as St. Peter, in the words already mentioned, very truly expresses it, the mere *putting away of the filth of the flesh*; unless it be made effectual to save us, as he teaches in the same place it must, by *the answer of a good conscience towards God**: that is, by the sincere stipulation and engagement of *repentance, whereby we forsake sin; and faith, whereby we believe the promises of God, made to us in that sacrament*. For it is im-

* 1 Pet. iii. 21.

possible that he should forgive us our past sins, unless we are sorry for them, and resolved to quit them: and it is as impossible that we should quit them effectually, unless a firm persuasion of his helping and rewarding us excite and support our endeavours. These two things therefore we see our Catechism justly mentions as necessary, in answer to the question, *What is required of persons to be baptized?* Both have been explained in their proper place, and therefore I enlarge on neither here.

But hence arises immediately another question: if these conditions are necessary, *why are infants baptized, when by reason of their tender age they cannot perform them?* And as this difficulty appears to some a great one, I shall give a fuller solution of it than the shortness of a Catechism would easily permit. Repentance and faith are requisite, not before they are possible, but when they are possible. Repentance is what infants need not as yet, being clear of personal guilt: and happy would it be, were they never to need it. Faith, it may be reasonably presumed, by the security given for their Christian education, they will have, as soon as they have occasion to exert it. And in the mean time, baptism may very fitly be administered: because God, on his part, can certainly express by it, both his removing at present, the disadvantages which they lie under by the sin of Adam: and his removing hereafter, on proper conditions, the disadvantages which they may come to lie under by their own sins. And though they cannot, on their parts, expressly promise to perform these conditions; yet they are not only bound to perform them, whether they promise it or not; but (which is the point that our Catechism insists on) their sureties promise for them, that they shall be made sensible, as soon as

may be, that they are so bound; and ratify the engagement in their own persons: which when they do, it then becomes complete. For it is by no means necessary, that a covenant should be executed by both the parties to it, at just the same time: and as the Christian covenant is one of the greatest equity and favour, we cannot *doubt*, to speak in the language of our Liturgy, *but that God favourably alloweth the charitable work of bringing infants to his holy baptism.* For *the promise* of the covenant being expressly said to belong *to us and to our children**, without any limitation of age; why should they not all, since they are to partake of the promise, partake also of the sign of it? especially, since the infants of the Jews were, by a solemn sign, entered into their covenant: and the infants of proselytes to the Jews, by this very sign, amongst others, of baptism. So that, supposing the Apostles to imitate either of these examples, as they naturally would, unless they were forbid, which they were not; when they baptized (as the Scripture, without making any exception, tells us they did) whole families at once†; we cannot question but they baptized (as we know the primitive Christians, their successors, did) *little children* amongst the rest; concerning whom our Saviour says, that *of such is the kingdom of God‡*: and St. Paul says, *they are holy§*; which they cannot be reputed, without entering into the Gospel covenant: and the only appointed way of entering into it is by baptism; which therefore is constantly represented in the New Testament as necessary to salvation.

Not that such converts, in ancient times, as were put to death for their faith, before they could be bap-

* Acts ii. 39.

† Acts xvi. 15, 33.

‡ Mark x. 14.

§ 1 Cor. vii. 14.

tized, lost their reward for want of it. Not that such children of believers now, as die unbaptized, by sudden illness, or unexpected accidents, or even by neglect (since it is none of their own neglect), shall forfeit the advantages of baptism. This would be very contrary to that mercy and grace, which abounds through the whole of the Gospel dispensation. Nay, where the persons themselves do designedly, through mistaken notions, either delay their baptism, as the Anabaptists; or omit it intirely, as the Quakers; even of these it belongs to Christian charity not to judge hardly, as excluded from the Gospel covenant, if they die unbaptized; but to leave them to the equitable judgement of God. Both of them indeed err: and the latter especially have, one should think, as little excuse for their error as well can be: for surely there is no duty of Christianity which stands on a plainer foundation, than that of baptizing with water in the name of the Holy Trinity. But still, since they solemnly declare, that they believe in Christ, and desire to obey his commands; and omit water-baptism only because they cannot see it is commanded; we ought (if we have cause to think they speak truth) by no means to consider them in the same light with total unbelievers.

But the wilful and the careless despisers of this ordinance: who, admitting it to be of God's appointment, neglect it notwithstanding; these are not to be looked on as within his covenant. And such as, though they do observe it for form's sake, treat it as an empty insignificant ceremony, are very unworthy of the benefits which it was intended to convey. And, bad as these things are, little better, if not worse, will be the case of those, who, acknowledging the solemn engagements into which they have entered by this

sacrament, live without care to make them good. For to the only valuable purpose, of God's favour and eternal happiness, *he is not a Christian, which is one outwardly; neither is that baptism which is outward in the flesh: but he is a Christian, which is one inwardly; and baptism is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God**.

* Rom. ii. 28, 29.

LECTURE XXXVI.

OF THE LORD'S SUPPER.

Part I.

AS by the sacrament of baptism we enter into the Christian covenant; so by that of the Lord's Supper we profess our thankful continuance in it: and therefore the first answer of our Catechism, concerning this ordinance, tells us, it was appointed *for the continual remembrance of the sacrifice of the death of Christ, and of the benefits which we receive thereby.* Now the nature and benefits of this sacrifice have been already explained, in their proper places. I shall therefore proceed to shew, that the Lord's Supper is rightly said here to be *ordained for a remembrance* of it; not a repetition, as the church of Rome teaches.

Indeed every act, both of worship and obedience, is in some sense a sacrifice to God, humbly offered up to him for his acceptance. And this sacrament in particular, being a memorial and representation of the sacrifice of Christ, solemnly and religiously made, may well enough be called, in a figurative way of speaking, by the same name with what it com-
me-

morates and represents. But that he should be really and literally offered up in it, is the directest contradiction that can be, not only to common sense, but also to Scripture, which expressly says, that he was not to be *offered often, for then must he often have suffered; but hath appeared once to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself**, and after that, *for ever sat down on the right hand of God: for by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified†*.

This ordinance then was appointed, not to repeat, but to commemorate, the sacrifice of Christ; which though we are required to do, and do accordingly, more or less explicitly, in all our acts of devotion, yet we are not required to do it by any visible representation, but that of the Lord's Supper: of which therefore our Catechism teaches, in the second answer, that *the outward part, or sign, is bread and wine, which the Lord hath commanded to be received*. And indeed he hath so clearly commanded both to be received, that no reasonable defence in the least can be made, either for the sect usually called Quakers, who omit this sacrament intirely: or for the church of Rome, who deprive the laity of one half of it, the cup; and forbid all but the priest to do, what Christ hath appointed all without exception to do. They plead indeed, that all, whom Christ appointed to receive the cup, that is, the Apostles, were priests. But their church forbids the priests themselves to receive it, excepting those who perform the service: which the Apostles did not perform, but their Master. And besides, if the appointment of receiving the cup belongs only to priests, that of receiving the bread too must relate only to priests: for our Saviour hath more expressly directed *all* to drink of the one, than

* Heb. ix. 25, 26.

† Heb. x. 12, 14.

to eat of the other. But they own, that his appointment obliges the laity to receive the bread; and therefore it obliges them to receive the cup also: which that they did accordingly, 1 Cor. xi. makes as plain as words can make any thing, nor was it refused them for twelve hundred years after. They plead farther, that administering the holy sacrament is called in Scripture *breaking of bread*, without mentioning the cup at all. And we allow it. But when common feasts are expressed in Scripture by the single phrase of *eating bread*, surely this doth not prove that the guests drank nothing: and if, in this religious feast, the like phrase could prove, that the laity did not partake of the cup, it will prove equally, that the priests did not partake of it either. They plead in the last place, that by receiving the bread, which is the body of Christ, we receive in effect the cup, which is the blood, at the same time: for the blood is contained in the body. But here, besides that our Saviour, who was surely the best judge, appointed both, they quite forget, that this sacrament is a memorial of his blood being shed out of his body: of which, without the cup, there can be no commemoration: or, if there could, the cup would be as needless for the clergy as for the laity.

The outward signs therefore, which Christ hath commanded to be received, equally received, by all Christians, are bread and wine. Of these the Jews had been accustomed to partake, in a serious and devout manner, at all their feasts, after a solemn blessing, or thanksgiving to God, made over them, for his goodness to men. But especially at the feast of the passover, which our Saviour was celebrating with his disciples, when he instituted this holy sacrament; at that feast, in the above-mentioned thanksgiving, they

commemorated more at large the mercies of their God, dwelling chiefly however on their deliverance from the bondage of Egypt. Now this having many particulars resembling that infinitely more important redemption of all mankind from sin and ruin, which our Saviour was then about to accomplish; he very naturally directed his disciples, that their ancient custom should for the future be applied to this greatest of divine blessings, and become the memorial of *Christ their passover, sacrificed for them**: as indeed the bread broken aptly enough represented his body; and the wine poured forth expressively figured out his blood, shed for our salvation. These therefore, as the third answer of our catechism very justly teaches, are the *inward part* of this sacrament, *or the thing signified*.

But the church of Rome, instead of being content with saying, that the bread and wine are signs of the body and blood of Christ, insist on it, that they are turned into the very substance of his body and blood: which imagined change they therefore call transubstantiation. Now were this true, there would be no outward sign left: for they say, it is converted into the thing signified: and by consequence there would be no sacrament left: for a sacrament is *an outward sign of an inward grace*.

Besides, if our senses can in any case inform us what any thing is, they inform us, that the bread and wine continue bread and wine. And if we cannot trust our senses, when we have full opportunity of using them all; how did the Apostles know that our Saviour taught them, and performed miracles? or how do we know any one thing around us? But this doctrine is equally contrary to all reason too. To

* 1 Cor. v. 7.

believe that our Saviour took his own body, literally speaking, in his own hands, and gave the whole of that one body to every one of his Apostles, and that each of them swallowed him down their throats, though all the while he continued sitting at the table before their eyes: to believe, that the very same one individual body, which is now in heaven, is also in many thousands of different places on earth; in some standing still upon the altar; in others, carrying along the streets: and so in motion, and not in motion, at the same time: to believe, that the same body can come from a great distance, and meet itself, as the sacramental bread often doth in their processions, and then pass by itself, and go away from itself to the same distance again; is to believe the most absolute impossibilities and contradictions. If such things can be true, nothing can be false: and if such things cannot be true, the church that teaches them cannot be infallible, whatever arts of puzzling sophistry they may use to prove either that or any of their doctrines. For no reasonings are ever to be minded against plain common sense.

They must not say, this doctrine is a mystery. For there is no mystery, no obscurity in it: but it is as plainly seen to be an error, as any thing else is seen to be a truth. And the more so, because it relates, not to an infinite nature, as God; but entirely to what is finite, a bit of bread and a human body. They must not plead, that God can do all things. For that means only that he can do all things that can be done; not that he can do what cannot be done; make a thing be this and not be this; be here and elsewhere, at the same time: which is doing and undoing at once, and so in reality doing nothing. They must not alledge Scripture for absur-

dities, that would sooner prove Scripture false, than Scripture can prove them true. But it no where teaches them.

We own that our Saviour says, *This is my body, which is broken**; and, *This is my blood, which is shed†*. But he could not mean literally. For as yet his body was not broken, nor his blood shed: nor is either of them in that condition now. And therefore the bread and wine neither could then, nor can now, be turned into them, as such. Besides, our Saviour said at the same time, *This cup is the New Testament in my blood‡*. Was the substance of the cup then changed into the New Testament? And if not, why are we to think the substance of the bread and wine changed into his body and blood? The Apostle says, *the rock, that supplied the Israelites with water in the wilderness, was Christ§*: that is, represented him. Every body says, Such a picture is such a person, meaning the representation of him. Why then may not our Saviour's words mean so too?

The Romanists object, that though what represents a thing naturally, or by virtue of a preceding institution, may be called by its name, yet such a figure as this, in the words of a new institution, would not be intelligible||. But the representation here is natural enough: and though the institution was new, figurative speech was old. And the Apostles would certainly rather interpret their Master's words by a very usual figure, than put the absurdest sense upon them that could be. They object further, that if he had not meant literally, he would have said, not *this*, but *this bread*, is my body¶. But we may better argue,

* 1 Cor. xi. 24.

† Matth. xxvi. 28.

‡ Luke xxii. 20.

§ 1 Cor. xi. 25.

¶ 1 Cor. x. 4.

|| Preuves de la Religion, vol. iv.

p. 166.

¶ Ibid. vol. iv. p. 168.

that if he had meant literally, he would have said, in the strongest terms, that he did. For there was great need, surely, of such a declaration. But we acknowledge, that the bread and wine are more than a representation of his body and blood; they are the means, by which the benefits, arising from them, are conveyed to us; and have thence a further title to be called by their name. For so the instrument, by which a prince forgives an offender, is called his pardon, because it conveys his pardon: the delivery of a writing is called giving possession of an estate*; and a security for a sum of money, is called the sum itself; and is so in virtue and in effect, though it is not in strictness of speech, and reality of substance. Again: our Saviour, we own, says in St. John, that *He is the bread of life; that, his flesh is meat indeed, and his blood is drink indeed: that whoso eateth the one and drinketh the other, hath eternal life; and that, without doing it, we have no life in us*†. But this, if understood literally, would prove, not that the bread in the sacrament was turned into his flesh, but that his flesh was turned into bread. And therefore it is not to be understood literally, as indeed he himself gives notice: *The flesh profiteth nothing: the words which I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life*‡: it is not the gross and literal, but the figurative and spiritual, eating and drinking; the partaking by a lively faith of an union with me, and being inwardly nourished by the fruits of my offering up my flesh and blood for you, that alone can be of benefit to the soul.

* See Cod. 8, 54, 1.

† John vi. 48, 53, 54, 55.

‡ Verse 63.

And as this is plainly the sense, in which he says that *his flesh is meat indeed, and his blood is drink indeed*: so it is the sense, in which the latter part of the third answer of our catechism is to be understood; that *the body and blood of Christ are verily and indeed taken and received by the faithful in the Lord's Supper*: words intended to shew, that our church as truly believes the strongest assertions of Scripture concerning this sacrament, as the church of Rome doth; only takes more care to understand them in their right meaning: which is, that though, in one sense, all communicants equally partake of what Christ calls his body and blood, that is, the outward signs of them; yet in a much more important sense, *the faithful* only, the pious and virtuous receiver, eats his flesh and drinks his blood; shares in the life and strength derived to men from his incarnation and death; and through faith in him, becomes a member, as St. Paul expresses it, *of his flesh and of his bones**: certainly not in a literal sense, which yet the Romanists might as well assert, as that we eat his flesh in a literal sense: but in a figurative and spiritual one. In appearance, the sacrament of Christ's death is given to all alike: but *verily and indeed*, in its beneficial effects, to none besides the faithful. Even to the unworthy communicant he is present, as he is wherever we meet together in his name: but in a better and most gracious sense, to the worthy soul; becoming by the inward virtue of his Spirit, its food and sustenance.

This real presence of Christ in the sacrament, his church hath always believed. But the monstrous notion of his bodily presence was started seven hun-

* Eph. v. 30.

dred years after his death : and arose chiefly from the indiscretion of preachers and writers of warm imaginations, who, instead of explaining judiciously the lofty figures of Scripture language, heightened them, and went beyond them : till both it and they had their meaning mistaken most astonishingly. And when once an opinion had taken root, that seemed to exalt the holy sacrament so much, it easily grew and spread : and the more for its wonderful absurdity, in those ignorant and superstitious ages ; till at length, five hundred years ago, and twelve hundred years after our Saviour's birth, it was established for a Gospel truth by the pretended authority of the Romish church. And even this had been tolerable in comparison, if they had not added idolatrous practice to erroneous belief : worshipping, on their knees, a bit of bread for the Son of God. Nor are they content to do this themselves, but with most unchristian cruelty, curse and murder those who refuse it.

It is true, we also kneel at the sacrament, as they do : but for a very different purpose : not to acknowledge *any corporal presence of Christ's natural flesh and blood* ; as our church, to prevent all possibility of misconstruction, expressly declares ; adding, that *his body is in heaven, and not here* : but to worship him, who is every where present, the invisible God. And this posture of kneeling we by no means look upon, as in itself necessary : but as a very becoming appointment ; and very fit to accompany the prayers and praises, which we offer up at the instant of receiving : and to express that inward spirit of piety and humility, on which our partaking worthily of this ordinance, and receiving benefit from it,

depend. But the benefits of the holy sacrament, and the qualifications for it, shall, God willing, be the subject of two other discourses. In the mean time, *consider what hath been said; and the Lord give you understanding in all things**.

* 2 Tim. ii. 7.

LECTURE XXXVII.

OF THE LORD'S SUPPER.

Part II.

THE doctrine of our catechism, concerning the Lord's Supper, hath been already so far explained, as to shew you, that it *was ordained*, not for the repetition, but *the continual remembrance of the sacrifice of Christ*: that *the outward signs* in it are *bread and wine*; both *which the Lord hath commanded to be received* by all Christians: and both which are accordingly received, and not changed and transubstantiated into the real and natural *body and blood of Christ*: which however *the faithful*, and they only, do, under this representation of it, *verily and indeed* receive into a most beneficial union with themselves: that is, do *verily and indeed*, by a spiritual connection with their incarnate Redeemer and head through faith, partake, in this ordinance, of that heavenly favour and grace, which, by offering up his body and blood, he hath procured for his true disciples and members.

But of *what benefits* in particular *the faithful* partake in this sacrament, through the grace and favour of God, our catechism teaches in the fourth answer,

to which I now proceed: and which tells us it is, *The strengthening and refreshing of our souls by the body and blood of Christ, as our bodies are by the bread and wine**. Now both the truth and the manner of this refreshment of our souls will appear by considering the nature of the sacrament, and the declarations of Scripture concerning it.

Indeed the due preparation for it, the self-examination required in order to it, and the religious exercises which that examination will of course point out to us, must previously be of great service; as you will see, when I come to that head. And the actual participation will add further advantages of unspeakable value.

Considered as an act of obedience to our Saviour's command, *Do this in remembrance of me*, it must be beneficial to us: for all obedience will. Considered as obedience to a command, proceeding principally, if not solely, from his mere will and pleasure, it contributes to form us into a very needful, a submissive and implicitly dutiful, temper of mind. But further: it is the most eminent and distinguished act of Christian worship: consisting of the devoutest thankfulness to God for the greatest blessing, which he ever bestowed on man; attended, as it naturally must, with earnest prayers that the gift may avail us, to our spiritual and eternal good. And it is much more likely to affect us very strongly and usefully, for expressing his bounty and our sense of it, not as our daily devotions do, in words alone, but in the less common, and therefore more solemn way, of visible signs and representations: *setting forth evi-*

* Αλλα πασασθαι ανωχθι θοης επι νησιν Αχαιους

Σιτου και οινοιο· το γαρ μενος εστι και αληκη.

HOM. IL. T, v. 160, 161.

dently before our eyes, to use St. Paul's language, *Christ crucified amongst us**. This, of necessity, unless we are strangely wanting to ourselves, must raise the warmest affections of love, that our hearts are capable of, to Him who hath given his Son, to Him who hath given himself, for us. And as love is the noblest principle of religious behaviour, what tends so powerfully to animate our love, must in proportion tend to perfect us in every branch of duty, according to the just reasoning of the same Apostle: *For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead; and he died for all, that they who live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him, which died for them, and rose again*†. When our Saviour said to his disciples, *If ye love me, keep my commandments*‡: he knew the motive was no less engaging, than it is reasonable. And therefore he adds, very soon after, *If a man love me, he will keep my words*§.

But this institution carries in it a yet further tie upon us; being (as our blessed Lord himself declared, *the New Testament is his blood*||) the memorial and acknowledgement of the second covenant between God and man, which was founded on his death; and requires a sincere faith and obedience on our part, as the condition of grace and mercy on his. *Every one that nameth the name of Christ, is bound to depart from iniquity*¶. But the obligation is redoubled on them who come to his table as friends, and *make a covenant with him, by partaking of his sacrifice*** . If these live wickedly, it is declaring with the boldest contempt, that they consider *Christ as the minister*

* Gal. iii. 1.

† 2 Cor. v. 15, 16.

‡ John xiv. 15.

§ John xiv. 23.

|| Luke xxii. 20.

¶ 2 Tim. ii. 19.

** Psalm l. 5.

of sin *; and count the blood of the covenant, where-with they profess to be sanctified, an unholy thing †. Partaking therefore of this holy ordinance is renewing, in the most awful manner, our engagements to the service which we owe, as well as our claims to the favours, that God hath promised. It is our sacrament, our oath, to be faithful soldiers ‡ under the great Captain of our salvation §: which surely we cannot take thus, without being efficaciously influenced to the religious observance of it, in every part of a Christian life.

But there is one part especially, and one of the utmost importance, to which this institution peculiarly binds us, that of universal good-will and charity. For commemorating, in so solemn an action, the love of Christ to us all, cannot but move us to that mutual imitation of his love, which, just before his appointing this holy sacrament, he so earnestly and affectionately enjoined his followers, as the distinguishing badge of their profession. *This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you||. Hereby shall all men know, that ye are my disciples, if ye have love to another ¶.* Then besides, commemorating his love jointly, as the servants of one master, and members of one body, partaking of the same covenant of grace, and the same hope of everlasting happiness, must, if we have any feeling of what we do, incline us potently to that reciprocal union of hearts, which indeed the very act of communicating suggests and recommends to us. *For we, being many, are one bread*

* Gal. ii. 17.

† Heb. x. 29.

‡ 2 Tim. ii. 3, 4.

§ Heb. ii. 10.

|| John xv. 12, 13, 14.

¶ John xiii. 35.

and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.*

Another grace, which this commemoration of our Saviour's death peculiarly excites, is humility of soul. We acknowledge by it, that we are sinners; and have no claim to pardon or acceptance, but through his sacrifice, and his mediation, whose merits we thus plead, and set forth before God. And this consideration must surely dispose us very strongly to a thankful observance of his commands, to watchfulness over our own hearts, to mildness towards others. *For we ourselves also have been foolish, disobedient, deceived: and not by works of righteousness, which we have done, but according to his mercy, God hath saved us, which he shed on us abundantly through Christ Jesus our Saviour†.*

And as this sacrament will naturally strengthen us in all these good dispositions, we cannot doubt but God will add his blessing to the use of such proper means, especially being appointed means. For since he hath threatened punishment to unworthy receivers, he will certainly bestow rewards on worthy ones. Our Saviour hath told us, that *his flesh is meat indeed, and his blood is drink indeed ‡*: sustenance and refreshment to the souls of men. When he blessed the bread and wine, he undoubtedly prayed, and not in vain, that they might be effectual for the good purposes, which he designed should be attained by this holy rite. And St. Paul hath told us, if it needs, more expressly, that *the cup which we bless, is the communion, that is, the communication to us, of the blood of Christ; and the bread, which we break, of the body of Christ §*: that is, of a saving union with him, and

* 1 Cor. x. 17.

† Tit. iii. 3, 5, 6.

‡ John vi. 55.

§ 1 Cor. x. 16.

therefore of the benefits procured us by his death: which are, forgiveness of our offences; for he hath said, *This is my blood of the New Testament, which is shed for the remission of sins**: increase of the gracious influences of the Holy Ghost; for the Apostle hath said, plainly speaking of this ordinance, that *we are all made to drink into one Spirit*†: and everlasting life: for *whoso eateth his flesh, and drinketh his blood, dwelleth in Christ, and Christ in him, and he will raise him up at the last day*‡. Whence a father of the apostolic age, Ignatius, calls the eucharist, *the medicine of immortality: a preservative, that we should not die, but live for ever in Jesus Christ*§.

But then what hath been already hinted to you must be always carefully observed; that these benefits are to be expected only from partaking worthily of it: *for he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, St. Paul hath told us, is guilty of the body and blood of the Lord*||, that is, guilty of irreverence towards it, *and eateth and drinketh judgement to himself*¶. Our translation indeed hath it, *damnation to himself*. But there is so great danger of this last word being understood here in too strong a sense, that it would be much safer, and exacter, to translate it (as it is often translated elsewhere, and once in a few verses after this passage, and from what follows ought undeniably to be translated here), judgement or condemnation: not to certain punishment in another life, but to such marks of God's displeasure as he sees fit; which will be confined to this world, or extended to the next, as the case requires. For *receiving unworthily* may, according to the kind and degree of it, be either a very

* Matth. xxvi. 28.

† 1 Cor. xii. 13.

‡ John vi. 54, 56.

§ Ign. ad Eph. c. 20. See Waterland on the Eucharist, p. 217.

|| 1 Cor. xi. 27.

¶ 1 Cor. xi. 29.

great sin, or comparatively a small one. But all dangerous kinds and degrees may with ease be avoided, if we only take care to come to the sacrament with proper dispositions, and, which will follow of course, to behave at it in a proper manner.

To these dispositions our catechism proceeds. But more is needful to be known concerning them than can well be laid before you now. Therefore I shall conclude at present with desiring you to observe, that no unworthiness, but our own, can possibly endanger us, or prevent our receiving benefit. Doubtless it would both be more pleasing and more edifying, to come to *the table of Lord** in company with such only as are qualified for a place at it: and they who are unqualified, ought, when they properly can, to be restrained from it. But we have neither direction nor permission to stay away, because others come who should not: nor can they ever be so effectually excluded, but that *tares* will be mixed among *the wheat*: and attempting to root them up may often be more hurtful than *letting both grow together until the harvest* †. Nay, should even *the stewards* and dispensers of *God's mysteries* ‡ be unholy persons, though it be a grievous temptation to others to *abhor the offering of the Lord§*, yet that is holy still. *They shall bear their iniquity*: but notwithstanding, *all the promises* of all God's ordinances are *yea and amen*, sure and certain, in *Jesus Christ* || to as many as *worship him in spirit and in truth* ¶.

* 1 Cor. x. 21.

† Matth. xiii. 28—31.

‡ 1 Cor. iv. 2.

§ 1 Sam. ii. 17.

|| 2 Cor. i. 20.

¶ 1 John iv. 23.

LECTURE XXXVIII.

OF THE LORD'S SUPPER.

Part III.

WHAT qualifications and dispositions are *re-*quired of them who come to the Lord's supper, the Scripture hath not particularly expressed: for they are easily collected from the nature of this ordinance. But our catechism, in its fifth and last answer concerning it, hath reduced them very justly to three: repentance, faith, and charity.

I. That we repent us truly of our former sins, steadfastly purposing to lead a new life. For as we are by nature prone to sin; and the youngest and best among us have in more instances than a few been guilty of it, the less the better: so in Christianity, repentance is the foundation of every thing. Now the sorrow that we ought to feel for the least sin, must be a very serious one: and for greater offences in proportion deeper. But the vehemence and passionateness of grief will on every occasion, and particularly on this, be extremely different in different persons. And therefore all that God expects, is a sincere, though it may be a calm, concern for every past fault, of which we are conscious, and for the multitudes, which we have either not observed or for-

gotten. And this concern must proceed from a sense of duty, and produce the good effects of an humble confession to him in all cases, and to our fellow-creatures, in all cases needful; of restitution for the injuries that we have done, so far as it is possible; and of a settled resolution to amend our hearts and lives, wherever it is wanting. More than this we cannot do; and less than this God cannot accept. For it would be giving us a licence to disobey him, if he allowed us to come to his table, and profess to *have fellowship with him*, while we *walked in darkness**. Mere infirmities indeed, and undesigned frailties, provided we strive against them with any good degree of honest care, and humble ourselves in the divine presence for them, so far as we are sensible of them, will not provoke God to reject us, as unworthy receivers, though in strictness we are all unworthy. For if such failures as these made persons unfit, nobody could be fit. And therefore they will be no excuse for omitting what Christ hath commanded: nor can be any reason why we should not do it with comfort.

But whoever lives in any wilful sin, cannot safely come to the holy sacrament: nor, which I beg you to observe, can he safely stay away. For, as the hypocrisy of professing amendment falsely at God's table is a great sin; so the prophaneness of turning our backs upon it, because we will not amend, is to the full as great a one; and it is the merest folly in the world to chuse either, as the safer way; for a wicked person can be safe no way. But let him resolve to quit his wickedness: and when he is thoroughly sure, so far as he can judge from a compe-

* 1 John i. 6.

tent experience, that he hath resolved upon it effectually, then he may as safely receive as he can say his prayers. And such a one should come, not with servile fear, as to a hard master; but with willing duty, as to a merciful father. Nay, should he afterwards break his resolutions, though doubtless it would be the justest cause of heavy grief, yet it would not prove that he received unworthily, but only that he hath behaved unworthily since he received. And the thing for him to do is, to lament his fault with deeper contrition, renew his good purpose more firmly, pray for help from above with more earnestness, watch over himself with more prudent care: then go again to God's altar, thankfully commemorate his pardoning love, and claim anew the benefit of his gracious covenant. Following this course honestly, he will assuredly gain ground. And therefore such, as do not gain ground, do not follow it honestly: but allow themselves to go round in a circle of sinning, then repenting, as they call it, and communicating, then sinning again: as if every communion did of course wipe off the old score, and so they might begin a new one without scruple: which is the absurdest, the most irreligious, the most fatal imagination, that can be.

II. The next thing required of them who come to the Lord's Supper, is *a lively faith in God's mercy through Christ, with a thankful remembrance of his death.* And the faith necessary is a settled persuasion, that, for the sake of the meritorious obedience and sufferings of our blessed Redeemer, God will pardon true penitents; together with a comfortable trust, that we, as such, have an interest in his merits. But here again you must observe, that different persons

may have very different degrees of this persuasion and trust. Some may be *weak in faith**; may have cause to say with him in the Gospel of St. Mark, *Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief*†; and yet their prayers, like his, may be graciously heard. Others may be strong‡, and *increase*§, till they *abound in faith*||. And such have great reason to be thankful to God for themselves: but surely they ought never to judge hardly of their brethren, who have not advanced so far. The rule of judging, both in the Catechism and the Scripture, is not by the positiveness, but by the liveliness of our faith; that is, the fruits of a Christian life, which it produces: for *faith without works is dead*¶. If we cannot shew the evidence of these, the highest confidence will do us no good; and if we can, we need have no doubts concerning our spiritual condition; and though we have ever so many, provided we have no sufficient reason for them, we may celebrate this holy ordinance very safely. For such weaknesses in our natural temper and spirits are no way inconsistent with having, in our fixed and deliberate judgement, that *full trust in God's mercy*, which the Communion Service requires: and we cannot take a more likely method, either to perfect our repentance, or to strengthen our faith, than receiving the sacrament frequently.

Our Catechism teaches further, that our faith in Christ must be accompanied *with a thankful remembrance of his death*. And surely, if we believe, that he died to save us, we must be thankful for it. But then the measure of our thankfulness must be taken from the goodness and constancy of its effects, not

* Rom. xiv. 1.

† Mark ix. 24.

‡ Rom. iv. 20.

§ Luke xvii. 5.

|| Col. ii. 7.

¶ James ii. 17.

from that sensible warmth and fervency, which we cannot, ordinarily speaking, feel so strongly in spiritual things as in temporal; and of which bad persons may at times have very much, and good persons little. For that is the true thankfulness, which produces love. *And this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments**.

But there is one commandment, as I have shewn you, peculiarly connected with this ordinance. And therefore our Catechism specifies it separately, and in express terms, by requiring,

III. That we *be in charity with all men*. For we can have no share in the love of our Creator, our Redeemer, and Sanctifier, unless, in imitation of it, we love one another: and, as the goodness of God is universal, so must ours. Receiving the holy communion was indeed intended to increase the degree of it: but the reality we must have, before we are worthy to receive. And we must shew it is real, by *forgiving them who trespass against us*; by assisting, as far as can be reasonably expected, those who need assistance in any kind; by our hearty prayers for those, whom we can help no other way; by faithfully performing the duties of our several stations and relations in life; and by condescension, mildness, and humanity towards every person, as occasion offers: all which duties, and particularly that of forgiveness, have been explained to you in their proper places.

These then being the dispositions requisite for receiving the holy sacrament, as indeed they are for obtaining eternal happiness; we are all greatly concerned to examine ourselves, whether we have them or not: and should have been concerned to do it,

* 1 John v. 3.

though this ordinance had never been appointed. But we are now more especially bound to it with a view to this ordinance; both from the nature of it, and from St. Paul's positive injunction: *Let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup**.

The principal subjects of our examination are comprehended under the three heads just now mentioned. But as to any particular method to be taken, or time to be spent in it, or in any other further preparation subsequent to it, we have no command: it is left to every one's prudence and voluntary piety. They who live in a constant practice of religion and virtue, are always fit for the sacrament; and may, if the call be sudden, by reflecting for a few moments, sufficiently know that they are fit. Persons, who live in any sin, may as easily and quickly know that they are not. And it is only in doubtful cases, that any length of consideration is necessary to satisfy us about this matter. But it must be extremely useful for all persons, not only to be attentive to their ways constantly, but to look back upon them frequently; much more frequently than almost any one receives the sacrament. And as things, which have no certain season fixed for them, are very apt to be neglected; we should fix upon this, as one certain season for as particular an inspection into the state of our hearts and lives as we can well make, and can hope to be the better for; joining with it suitable meditations, resolutions, and devotions. But then in the whole of this work, we must be careful, neither to hurry over any part thoughtlessly, nor lengthen it wearisomely. And in our examination we must be especially careful, neither to flatter nor yet to affright

* 1 Cor. xi. 28.

ourselves: but observe impartially what is right in us, thank God, and take the comfort of it; acknowledge what is wrong, beg pardon, and amend it. For without amendment, being ever so sorry will avail nothing.

The last thing, to be mentioned in relation to this holy sacrament, is our behaviour at it; which ought to be very serious and reverent; such as may shew, in the properest manner, that, to use the Apostle's words, we *discern* or distinguish *the Lord's body**; look on the action of receiving it, as one of no common nature, but as the religious memorial of our blessed Saviour's dying for us, and by his death establishing with us a covenant of pardon, grace, and everlasting felicity on God's part, and of faith and holiness on ours. With this important consideration, we should endeavour to affect our hearts deeply and tenderly: yet neither to force our minds, if we could, into immoderate transports, by which we shall only bewilder and lose, instead of benefiting ourselves; nor express even what we ought to feel, by any improper singularities of gesture; nor yet be dejected; if we have less feeling, and even less attention to the service, than we have reason to wish. For such things may be, in a great measure at least, natural and unavoidable. Or, supposing them faults; they may be, and often are, the faults of such persons, as notwithstanding are, on the whole, very worthy communicants. They may be, for a time, useful means of keeping us humble and watchful: after that, God may deliver us from them: and should we continue all our lives afflicted with them, it would never hinder our receiving all the necessary benefits of this ordinance.

* 1 Cor. xi. 29.

God grant that both it, and all his other gracious institutions, may contribute effectually to *build us up in our most holy faith* in a suitable practice, that so we may ever *keep ourselves in the love of God*; and on good grounds *look for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life**.

* Jude ver. 20, 21.

LECTURE XXXIX.

THE CONCLUSION.

HAVING now, through God's mercy, carried on these Lectures to the end of the Catechism, and in some measure explained to you every part of Christian faith, and duty comprehended in it, I have only one instruction more to add, but the most important of all for you to remember and consider well: that, *if ye know these things, happy are ye, if ye do them**; and miserable are ye, if ye do them not.

We all know indeed by nature, in a great degree, what manner of persons we ought to be in this world: and therefore, if we fail of being such, are in a great degree inexcusable. For how little teaching soever some may have had; yet our Saviour's home question will reach even them: *Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right†? The work of the law is written in the hearts of men, their conscience also bearing witness‡*. Being reasonable creatures, we are evidently bound to govern our passions, appetites, fancies, and whole behaviour, by the rules of reason. And who doth not see, that sobriety, temperance, and modesty, are things perfectly reasonable; and excess, and dissoluteness, and indecency, mischievous

* John xiii. 17.

† Luke xii. 57.

‡ Rom. ii. 15.

and shameful? Being social creatures, we are as evidently bound to whatever will make society happy. And since we are sensible, that others ought to treat us with justice and kindness, peaceably mind their own business, and diligently provide for their own maintenance; we cannot but be sensible that we ought to do the same things. Then lastly, being creatures capable of knowing our Creator, who *is not far from every one of us; for in him we live, and move, and have our being**: it follows very clearly, that we are not to forget him, but worship and obey him as the almighty, all-wise, and all-good Maker and Lord of the universe; acknowledge our dependence on him, be thankful to him for his mercies, and resign ourselves to his disposal.

Thus much, one should have thought, all men must have known, without supernatural teaching: and certainly they might, and therefore are justly blameable and punishable, if they do not. But still it hath appeared in fact, that wherever men have been left to their own reason, neither every one hath taught himself, nor the wiser part of the world taught the rest, even these plain things; so as to produce any steady regard to them, as duties, or even any settled conviction of them, as truths. And for want of it, sin and misery have prevailed every where. Men have made others and themselves wretched in numberless ways: and often doubly wretched by the reflections of their own hearts; knowing they had done ill, and not knowing how to be sure of pardon.

Foreseeing from eternity these dreadful consequences of human ignorance and wickedness, God provided suitable remedies of instruction and grace: which he notified to the world from time to time, as

* Acts xvii. 27, 28.

his own unsearchable wisdom saw would be fittest ; increasing the light gradually, till it shone out in the full day of Christianity. But revelation, as well as reason, hath been given in vain to a great part of mankind. The propagation of it through the earth hath been strangely neglected : in many places, where it hath been received, it hath been lost again : and in too many, where it is retained, it is grievously corrupted and obscured. Without question, we ought to judge as charitably as we can of all who are in any of these conditions : but at the same time we ought, from the bottom of our hearts, to thank God that none of them is our own. Undoubtedly he is and will be gracious to all his creatures, as far as they are fit objects : but it is *the riches of his grace**, that he hath bestowed on us ; and as, with justice, he might dispose of his own free gifts as he pleased : so, in mercy, he hath conferred a large proportion of them on this nation and age. Blessings, that are common and familiar, though indeed much the greater for that, are usually but little regarded. And thus, amongst other things, the opportunities that we enjoy of religious knowledge, it may be feared, are often very lightly esteemed. But would we reflect, how much less means of being acquainted with the duties of this life, and the rewards of another, not only the unenlightened heathen world, but the Jews, the people of God, had formerly ; and much the greatest part even of Christians have had for numbers of successive generations, and have still, than we : it would make us feel, that our Saviour's words belong to us also : *Verily, I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them : and to hear those things*

* Eph. i. 7. ii. 7.

which ye hear, and have not heard them. But blessed are your eyes, for they see; and your ears, for they hear.*

But then, and, for the sake of God and our souls, let us observe it; if, *seeing we see not, and hearing we hear not†*, to the only good purpose of life, that of becoming in heart and in practice, such as we ought; better had it been for us, not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after we have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto us‡. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required. The servant, that knew his Lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes: he that knew it not, with few§. But take notice: he that, in comparison with others, may be said not to know the will of God, knows enough of it however to subject him, if he fails of doing it, to future punishment; *to be beaten with stripes*. Not even a heathen sinner therefore shall escape intirely by his ignorance; much less will that plea excuse a Christian: but least of all can those Christians hope for mercy, who hear the word of God preached to them weekly; have it in their hands, and may read it daily: and yet transgress it. *Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement||, than for such persons.*

Let no one argue from hence, that knowledge then is no blessing. For the more we know of our Maker and our duty, the better we are qualified to be good in this world, and happy in the next. And we can never be worse for it, unless we will, by making either no use or a bad use of it. Nor let any one

* Matth. xiii. 16, 17.

† Matth. xiii. 13.

‡ 2 Pet. ii. 21.

§ Luke xii. 47, 48.

|| Mark vi. 11.

imagine, that, though we need not be the worse for our knowledge, yet since we may, ignorance is the safer choice ; as what will excuse our sins, if not entirely, yet in a great measure. But let us all remember, it is not pretended, but real, ignorance ; nor even that, unless we could not help it, that will be any plea in our favour. Wilful, or even careless ignorance, is a great sin itself ; and therefore can never procure us pardon for the other sins which it may occasion. What should any of us think of a servant who kept out of the way of receiving his master's orders, purposely because he had no mind to do them ? Nay, supposing him only through negligence not to understand the business that he was required to learn and follow : would this justify him ? Would it not be said, that what he might and ought to have known, it was his own fault if he did not know ? And what do we think of God, if we hope to impose on him with pleas that will not pass amongst ourselves ?

Fix it in your hearts then : the first indispensable duty of man is, to learn the will of his Maker ; the next, to do it : and nothing can excuse you from either. Attend therefore diligently on all such means of instruction as God's providence gives you : especially the public instruction of the church, which, having expressly appointed for you, he will assuredly bless to you ; provided you observe our Saviour's most important direction, *Take heed how ye hear**. For on that it depends, whether the preaching of the Gospel shall be *life or death to you*†. One it must be : and these very Lectures, amongst other things, which have been truly intended for your eternal good, will prove, if you apply them not to that end, what

* Luke viii. 18.

† 2 Cor. ii. 16.

God forbid they should, a means of increasing your future condemnation. Be entreated therefore to consider very seriously what you are taught: for be there ever so much of the weakness of man in it, there is the power of God unto salvation, unless you hinder it yourselves. Never despise then the meanest of your instructors; and never think of admiring the ablest: but remember that your business is, neither to applaud nor censure other persons' performances; but to improve your own hearts, and mend your own lives. Barely coming and hearing is nothing. Barely being pleased and moved and affected is nothing. It is only minding and doing the whole of your duty, not some part of it alone, that is any thing.

Knowing the words of your catechism is of no other use, than to preserve in your memories the things which those words express. Knowing the meaning of your catechism ever so well, in every part, is of no other use than to put you on the performance of what it teaches. And performing some things ever so constantly or zealously, will not avail, without a faithful endeavour to perform every thing. Have it always in your thoughts therefore, that practice, uniform practice, is the one thing needful. Your knowledge may be very low and imperfect, your faith not very clear and distinct: but however poorly you are capable of furnishing your heads; if your hearts and lives be good, all is well.

But here, I pray you, observe further, that as it is not in understanding and believing, so it is not in devotion merely, that religion consists. The common duties of common life make far the greatest part of what our Maker expects of us. To be honest and sober, and modest and humble, and good-tempered and mild, and industrious and useful, in our several sta-

tions, are things to which all persons are as much bound as they can be to any thing: and when they proceed from a principle of conscience towards God, and are offered up to him, as our bounden duty, through Jesus Christ, are as true and acceptable a service to him, as either our attendance at church, or our prayers in retirement at home. And they, who abound in these latter duties, and neglect any of the former, only disgrace religion, and deceive themselves.

Yet understand me not, I beg you, to speak slightly of devotion, either in private or public. On the contrary, I recommend both to you most earnestly: for our immediate duty to God is the highest of all duties, *the first and great commandment** of natural religion: and the payment of due and distinct regards to the Father Almighty, to his blessed Son and holy Spirit, of course obtains an equal rank in revelation. In particular I recommend it to you, not to omit coming to evening prayers, because now these Lectures will be discontinued. Joining in God's worship, and hearing his holy word read to you, is always a sufficient, and should always be the principal, motive to bring you. For *neither is he that planteth, any thing; neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase†*. And we may be sure he will give it to those, who attend on his ordinances with pious minds: and we may justly expect, that he will withhold it from those, who, instead of coming because it is their duty, come to hear this or that man discourse.

But then I must beseech you to observe at the same time; that as neither piety without morals, nor morals without piety, nor heathen piety without

* Matth. xxii. 38.

† 1 Cor. iii. 7.

Christian, will suffice; so neither will the outward acts of any thing, without an inward principle of it; and the true principle is a reverent esteem and love of God. Other inducements may allowably be joined with this: but if this be not also joined with them, what we do may be prudence, may be virtue, but is not religion; and therefore, however right, so far as it goes, doth not go far enough to entitle us to reward, or even to secure us from punishment; which nothing can more justly deserve, than to have little or no sense of filial affection to our heavenly Father, and of thankful love to our crucified Redeemer and gracious Sanctifier, who have the highest right to the utmost regard that our souls are capable of feeling.

You must resolve therefore, not only to be Christians externally in your lives, but internally in your hearts. And, let me remind you further, you will resolve on neither to good purpose, if you trust to yourselves alone for the performance. You will contrive, perhaps, great schemes of amendment and goodness; but you will execute very little of them: or you will do a good deal, it may be, in some particulars; and leave others, equally necessary, undone; or you will go on awhile; and then fall, when you thought you were surest of standing: or what seeming progress soever you make, you will ruin it all, by thinking too highly of yourselves for it: or some way or another you will certainly fail, unless the grace of God enable you, first to be deeply sensible of your own guilt and weakness: then to lay hold, by faith in Christ, on his promised mercy and help; in the strength of that help to obey his commands; and after all to know, that you are still *unprofitable servants**. Now this grace you may certainly have, in whatever

* Luke xvii. 10.

measure you want it, by earnest prayer for it, humble dependence upon it, and such honest and diligent use of the lower degrees of it, as he hath promised to reward with higher degrees: and you can have it no other way. If ever therefore, when we exhort you to duties, moral or religious, we omit to mention the great duty of applying for strength from above to be given you, not for your own sakes, but that of your blessed Redeemer, in order to practise them: it is by no means because we think such application unnecessary; but because we hope you know it so well to be absolutely necessary, that we need not always remind you of it. But if we are, at any time, wanting to you in this respect, or any other; be not you therefore wanting to yourselves; but *work out your own salvation* from this motive, which alone will procure you success, that *God worketh in you both to will and to do**. And I pray God to sanctify you wholly, and preserve your whole spirit, soul, and body, blameless, unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ†.

Having said thus much to you all in general, I desire you, children, to take notice of what I am going to say, in the last place, to you in particular. Your condition is of the lower kind: but your instruction hath been better than many of your superiors have had. If therefore your behaviour be bad, your condemnation will be heavy; and if it be good, you may be to the full as happy, in this world and the next, as if you were of ever so high rank. For true happiness comes only from doing our duty; and none will ever come from transgressing it: but, whatever pleasure or profit sin may promise, they will soon turn into pain and loss. Remember therefore, as long as you live, what you have been taught

* Phil. ii. 12, 13.

† 1 Thess. v. 23.

here. Remember particularly the answers to those two main questions: *What is thy duty towards God?* and *What is thy duty towards thy neighbour?* And be assured, that unless you practise both, when you go hence to services and apprenticeships, all the money and labour that hath been spent on you, will be spent in vain; you will be a disgrace to the edification and teaching that you have had; you will probably be very miserable here, and certainly so for ever hereafter. But, if you practise both, you will make an honest and grateful return for the kindness that you have received from your benefactors; which I hope you will never forget, but imitate, if God enables you to do it: you will be loved of your Maker and fellow-creatures: you will live in peace of mind, you will die with comfort, and be received into everlasting bliss.

Think then, I entreat and charge you, seriously and often of these things. And to remind yourselves of them more effectually, be diligent in reading such good books as are given you at your leaving school, or otherwise put into your hands; be constant in coming to church, on the Lord's day at least: such of you as go away before you are confirmed, take the first opportunity, after you are fourteen, to apply to your Minister, wherever you are, that you may be well instructed for that holy ordinance, and then admitted to it. Within a reasonable time after this, prepare yourselves, and desire him and your friends to assist in preparing you, to receive the Lord's Supper: concerning which you have heard very lately, how expressly it is required of all Christians (a name that comprehends young as well as old), for the means of improving them in every thing that is good. And

may God give his grace to you and to us all, that by the help of those means with which he hath so plentifully favoured us, we may each of us improve daily in the knowledge of his truth, and the love of our duty, *till at length we come unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ**.

* Eph. iv. 13.

SERMON

ON CONFIRMATION.

ACTS viii. 17.

THEN LAID THEY THEIR HANDS ON THEM, AND THEY
RECEIVED THE HOLY GHOST.

THE history, to which these words belong, is this. Philip the deacon, ordained at the same time with St. Stephen, had converted and baptized the people of Samaria: which the Apostles at Jerusalem hearing, sent down to them Peter and John, two of their own body; who, by prayer, accompanied with imposition of hands, obtained for them a greater degree, than they had yet received, of the sacred influences of the Divine Spirit: which undoubtedly was done on their signifying in some manner, so as to be understood, their adherence to the engagement, into which they had entered at their baptism.

From this and the like instances of the practice of the Apostles, is derived, what bishops, their succes-

sors, though every way beyond comparison inferior to them, have practised ever since, and which we now call Confirmation. Preaching was common to all ranks of ministers; baptizing was performed usually by the lower rank: but, perhaps to maintain a due subordination, it was reserved to the highest, by prayer and laying on of hands, to communicate further measures of the Holy Ghost. It was indeed peculiar to the Apostles, that on their intercession, his extraordinary and miraculous gifts were bestowed: which continued in the church no longer, than the need of them did; nor can we suppose, that all were partakers of them. But unquestionably by their petitions they procured, for every sincere convert, a much more valuable, though less remarkable blessing of universal and perpetual necessity, his ordinary and saving graces.

For these therefore, after their example, trusting that God will have regard, not to our unworthiness, but the purposes of mercy which he hath appointed us to serve, we intercede now, when persons take upon themselves the vow of their baptism. For this good end being now come amongst you, though I doubt not but your ministers have given you proper instructions on the occasion; yet I am desirous of adding somewhat further, which may not only acquaint more fully those, who are especially concerned, with the nature of what they are about to do: but remind you all of the obligations, which Christianity lays upon you. And I cannot perform it better, than by explaining to you the office of confirmation, to which you may turn in your prayer-books, where it stands immediately after the catechism.

There you will see, in the first place, a preface,

directed to be read; in which, notice is given, that *for the more edifying of such as receive confirmation*, it shall be administered to none but those, *who can answer to the questions of the catechism* preceding; that so children may come to years of some discretion, and learn what the promise made for them in baptism was, before they are called upon to *ratify and confirm it before the church with their own consent*, and to engage that they will evermore observe it.

Prayers may be offered up for infants with very good effect. Promises may be made in their name by such as are authorized to act for them: especially when the things promised are for their interest, and will be their duty; which is the case of those in baptism. But no persons ought to make promises for themselves, till they reasonably well understand the nature of them, and are capable of forming serious purposes. Therefore, in the present case, being able to say the words of the catechism is by no means enough, without a competent general knowledge of their meaning, and intention of behaving as it requires them; which doubtless they are supposed to have at the same time. And if they have not, making a profession of it, is declaring with their mouths what they feel not in their hearts at the instant, and will much less reflect upon afterwards: it is hoping to please God by the empty outward performance of a religious rite, from which, if they had been withheld, till they were duly qualified, their souls might have been affected, and their conduct influenced by it, as long as they lived.

Therefore I hope and beg, that neither ministers nor parents will be too eager for bringing children very early to confirmation: but first teach them carefully, to know their duty sufficiently, and resolve

upon the practice of it heartily; then introduce them to this ordinance: which they shall not fail to have opportunities of attending in their neighbourhood, from time to time, so long as God continues my life and strength.

But as there are some too young for confirmation, some also may be thought too old: especially, if they have received the holy sacrament without it. Now there are not indeed all the same reasons for the confirmation of such, as of others: nor hath the church, I believe, determined any thing about their case, as it might be thought unlikely to happen. But still, since it doth happen too frequently, that persons were not able, or have neglected, to apply for this purpose: so whenever they apply, as by doing it they express a desire to *fulfil all righteousness**; and may certainly receive benefit, both from the profession and the prayers, appointed in the office; my judgement is, that they should not be rejected, but encouraged.

Only I must intreat you to observe, that when you take thus on yourselves the engagement of leading a Christian life, you are to take it once for all; and no more to think of ever being confirmed a second time, than of being baptized a second time.

After directing who are to be confirmed, the office goes on to direct, how they are to be confirmed. And here the bishop is to begin with asking every one of those, who offer themselves, whether they *do, in the presence of God and of the congregation, renew in their own persons the solemn vow of their baptism; acknowledging themselves bound to believe and to perform all those things, which their god-fathers and god-mothers then undertook for them.* On which, they are each of them to answer, with an audible voice, *I do.*

* Matth. iii. 15.

Now the things promised in our name, were, to renounce whatever God hath forbidden, to believe what he hath taught, and to practise what he hath commanded. Nobody can promise for infants absolutely, that they shall do these things; but only, that they shall be instructed and admonished to do them: and, it is hoped, not in vain. This instruction and admonition, parents are obliged by nature to give; and if they do it effectually, god-fathers and god-mothers have no further concern, than to be heartily glad of it. But if the former fail, the latter must supply the failure, as far as they have an opportunity of doing it with any reasonable prospect of success. For they were intended, not to release the parents from the care of their children, which nothing can: but for a double security, in a case of such importance.

If nothing at all had been promised in our names, we had still been bound, as soon as we were capable of it, to believe in God, and obey him. But we are more early and more firmly bound, as not only this hath been promised for us, but care hath been taken to make us sensible of our obligation to perform it: which obligation therefore, persons are called upon, in the question under consideration, to ratify and confirm. And great cause have they to answer, that they do. For doing it is a duty, on which their eternal felicity peculiarly depends; as a little attention to what I am about to say will clearly shew you.

Our first parents, even while they were innocent, had no title to happiness, or to existence, but from God's notification of his good pleasure: which being conditional, when they fell, they lost it; and derived to us a corrupt and mortal nature, intitled to nothing; as both the diseases and the poverty of ancestors often

descend to their distant posterity. This bad condition we fail not, from our first use of reason, to make worse, in a greater or less degree, by actual transgressions: and so personally deserve the displeasure, instead of favour, of him who made us. Yet we may hope, that, as he is good, he will on our repentance forgive us. But then, as he is also just and wise, and the ruler of the world; we could never know with certainty, of ourselves, what his justice and wisdom, and the honour of his government, might require of him with respect to sinners: whether he would pardon greater offences at all; and whether he would reward those, whom he might be pleased not to punish. But most happily the revelation of his holy word hath cleared up all these doubts of unassisted reason: and offered to the worst of sinners, on the condition of faith in Christ, added to repentance, and productive of good works (for all which he is ready to enable us), a covenant of pardon for sins past, assistance against sin for the future, and eternal life in return for a sincere, though imperfect, and totally undeserving obedience.

The method of entering into this covenant is, being baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost: that is, into the acknowledgement of the mysterious union and joint authority of these three; and of the distinct offices, which they have undertaken for our salvation: together with a faithful engagement of paying suitable regard to each of them. In this appointment of baptism, the washing with water aptly signifies, both our promise to preserve ourselves, with the best care we can, pure from the defilement of sin, and God's promise to consider us, as free from the guilt of it. Baptism then, through his mercy, secures infants from the bad consequences

of Adam's transgression, giving them a new title to the immortality which he lost. It also secures, to persons grown up, the intire forgiveness of their own transgressions, on the terms just mentioned. But then, in order to receive these benefits, we must lay our claim to the covenant, which conveys them: we must ratify, as soon as we are able, what was promised in our name by others before we were able; and done for us then, only on presumption that we should make it our own deed afterwards. For if we neglect, and appear to renounce our part of the covenant, we have plainly not the least right to God's performing his: but we remain in our sins, and *Christ shall profit us nothing**.

You see then of what unspeakable importance it is, that we take on ourselves the vow of our baptism. And it is very fit and useful, that we should take it in such form and manner as the office prescribes. It is fit, that when persons have been properly instructed, by the care of their parents, friends, and ministers, they should with joyful gratitude acknowledge them to have faithfully performed that kindest duty. It is fit, that before they are admitted by the church of Christ to the holy communion, they should give public assurance to the church of their Christian belief and Christian purposes. This may also be extremely useful to themselves. For consider: young persons are just entering into a world of temptations, with no experience, and little knowledge to guard them; and much youthful rashness, to expose them. The authority of others over them is beginning to lessen, their own passions to increase, *evil communication* to have great opportunities of *corrupting good*

* Gal, v. 2.

*manners**: and strong impressions, of one kind or another, will be made on them very soon. What can then be more necessary, or more likely to preserve their innocence, than to form the most deliberate resolutions of acting right; and to declare them in a manner, thus adapted to move them at the time, and be remembered by them afterwards: in the presence of God, of a number of his ministers, and of a large congregation of his people, assembled with more than ordinary solemnity for that very purpose?

But then you, that are to be confirmed, must either do your own part, or the whole of this preparation will be utterly thrown away upon you. If you make the answer, which is directed, without sincerity, it is lying to God: if you make it without attention, it is trifling with him. Watch over your hearts therefore, and let them go along with your lips. The two short words, *I do*, are soon said: but they comprehend much in them. Whoever uses them on this occasion, saith in effect as follows: “ *I do* heartily renounce all
 “ the temptations of the devil; all the unlawful pleasures, profits, and honours of the world; all the
 “ immoral gratifications of the flesh. *I do* sincerely
 “ believe, and will constantly profess, all the articles
 “ of the Christian faith. *I do* firmly resolve to keep
 “ all God’s commandments all the days of my life;
 “ to love and honour him; to pray to him and praise
 “ him daily in private; to attend conscientiously on
 “ the public worship and instruction, which he hath
 “ appointed; to approach his holy table, as soon as
 “ I can qualify myself for doing it worthily; to submit to his blessed will meekly and patiently in all
 “ things: to set him ever before my eyes, and acknow-

* 1 Cor. xv. 33.

“ledge him in all my ways. *I do* further resolve in
“the whole course of my behaviour amongst my
“fellow-creatures, to *do justly, love mercy**, speak
“truth, be diligent and useful in my station, dutiful
“to my superiors, condescending to those beneath
“me, friendly to my equals: careful, through all the
“relations of life, to act as the nature of them re-
“quires, and conduct myself so to all men, as I
“should think it reasonable that they should do to me
“in the like case. Further yet: *I do* resolve, in the
“government of myself, to be modest, sober, tem-
“perate, mild, humble, contented; to restrain every
“passion and appetite within due bounds; and to set
“my heart chiefly, not on the sensual enjoyments of
“this transitory world, but the spiritual happiness of
“the future endless one. Lastly, *I do* resolve, when-
“ever I fail in any of these duties, as I am sen-
“sible I have, and must fear I shall, to confess it
“before God with unfeigned concern, to apply for
“his promised pardon in the name of his blessed Son,
“to beg the promised assistance of his Holy Spirit;
“and in that strength, not my own, to strive against
“my faults, and watch over my steps with redoubled
“care.”

Observe then: it is not gloominess and melanco-
ly, that religion calls you to: it is not useless austeri-
ty, and abstinence from things lawful and safe: it is
not extravagant flights and raptures: it is not un-
meaning or unedifying forms and ceremonies: much
less is it bitterness against those who differ from you.
But the forementioned unquestionable substantial
duties are the things to which you bind yourselves,
when you pronounce the awful words, *I do*. Utter
them then with the truest seriousness: and say to

* Mic. vi. 8.

yourselves, each of you, afterwards, as Moses did to the Jews, *Thou hast avouched the Lord this day to be thy God, to walk in his ways and keep his statutes, and to hearken to his voice: and the Lord hath avouched thee this day to be his; that thou shouldst keep all his commandments, and be holy unto the Lord thy God, as he hath spoken**. It is a certain truth, call it therefore often to mind, and fix it in your souls, that if breaking a solemn promise to men be a sin; breaking that, which you make thus deliberately to God, would be unspeakably a greater sin.

But let us now proceed to the next part of the office: in which, after persons have confirmed and ratified the vow of their baptism, prayers are offered up, that God would confirm and strengthen them in their good purpose: on both which accounts this appointment is called Confirmation.

Scripture teaches, and sad experience proves, that *of ourselves we can do nothing; are not sufficient†* for the discharge of our duty, without God's continual aid: by which he can certainly influence our minds, without hurting our natural freedom of will, and even without our perceiving it: for we can influence our fellow-creatures so. Nor is it any injustice in him to require of us what exceeds our ability, since he is ready to supply the want of it. Indeed, on the contrary, as this method of treating us is excellently fitted both to keep us humble, and yet to give us courage, using it is evidently worthy of God. But then, as none can have reason to expect his help, but those who earnestly desire it, so he hath promised to *give the Holy Spirit only to them that ask him‡*. And to unite Christians more in love to each other, and

* Deut. xxvi. 17, 18, 19.

† John xv. 5. 2 Cor. iii. 5.

‡ Luke xi. 13.

incline them more to assemble for public worship, our blessed Redeemer hath especially promised, that *where two or three of them are gathered together in his name, he will be in the midst of them**. And further still, to promote a due regard in his people to their teachers and rulers, the sacred writings ascribe a peculiar efficacy to their praying over those who are committed to their charge. Even under the Jewish dispensation, the family of Aaron were told, that *them the Lord had separated to minister unto him, and to bless in the name of the Lord†: and they shall put my name, saith God, upon the children of Israel, and I will bless them‡*. No wonder then, if under the Christian dispensation we read, but just before the text, that the Apostles, *when they were come down to Samaria, prayed for the new-baptized converts, that they might receive the Holy Ghost*; and in the text, that they did receive it accordingly.

Therefore, pursuant to these great authorities, here is, on the present occasion, a number of young disciples, about to run the same common race, met together to pray for themselves and one another: here is a number of elder Christians, who have experienced the dangers of life, met to pray for those who are just entering into them: here are also God's ministers, purposely come, to intercede with him in their behalf: and surely we may hope, their joint and fervent petitions may avail and be effectual.

They begin, as they ought, with acknowledging, and in Scripture words, that *our help is in the name of the Lord, who hath made heaven and earth§: it is not in man to direct his own steps||*; but his Creator only

* Matth. xviii. 20.

† Deut. x. 8. xxi. 5.

‡ Numb. vi. 27,

§ Psalm cxxiv. 8,

|| Jer. x. 23,

can preserve him. Then we go on to pronounce *the name of the Lord blessed, henceforth world without end*, for his readiness to bestow on us the grace which we want. And lastly, in confidence of his goodness, we intreat him to *hear our prayers, and let our cry come unto him**.

After these preparatory ejaculations, and the usual admonition to be attentive, *Let us pray*; comes a longer act of devotion, which first commemorates God's mercy already bestowed, then petitions for an increase of it. The commemoration sets forth, that *he hath regenerated these his servants by water and the Holy Ghost*: that is, entitled them by baptism to the enlivening influences of the Spirit, and so, as it were, begotten them again into a state, inexpressibly happier than their natural one; a covenant-state, in which God will consider them, whilst they keep their engagements, with peculiar love, as his dear children. It follows, that he *hath given unto them forgiveness of all their sins*; meaning, that he hath given them assurance of it, on the gracious terms of the Gospel. But that every one of them hath actually received it, by complying with those terms since he sinned last, though we may charitably hope, we cannot presume to affirm: nor were these words intended to affirm it; as the known doctrine of the church of England fully proves. And therefore let no one misunderstand this expression in the office, which hath parallel ones in the New Testament†, so as either to censure it, or delude himself with a fatal imagination, that any thing said over him can possibly convey to him a pardon of sins, for which he is not truly penitent. We only acknowledge with due thankfulness, that

* Psalm cii. 11.

† Eph. i. 7. Col. i. 14.

God hath done his part : but which of the congregation hath done theirs, their own consciences must tell them.

After this commemoration, we go on to request for the persons before us, that God would *strengthen them* against all temptation, and support them under all affliction, by *the Holy Ghost the Comforter*, and daily *increase in them his manifold gifts of grace* ; which gifts we proceed to enumerate in seven particulars, taken from the prophet Isaiah* ; by whom they are ascribed to our blessed Redeemer ; but as *the same mind* ought to be in us which was in Christ Jesus†, a petition for them was used in the office of confirmation, fourteen hundred years ago, if not sooner. The separate meaning of each of the seven, it is neither easy nor needful to determine with certainty. For indeed, if no more was designed, than to express very fully and strongly, by various words of nearly the same import, a pious and moral temper of mind : this is a manner of speaking both common and emphatical. But each of them may be taken in a distinct sense of its own. And thus we may beg for these our fellow Christians, *a spirit of wisdom*, to aim at the right end, the salvation of their souls ; and *of understanding*, to pursue it by right means : *of counsel*, to form good purposes ; and *of ghostly or spiritual strength*, to execute them : *of useful knowledge* in the doctrines of religion ; and *true godliness*, disposing them to a proper use of it. But chiefly, though lastly, we pray, that they may be *filled with the spirit of God's holy fear* : with that reverence of him, as the greatest, and purest, and best of beings, the rightful Proprietor and just Judge of all, which will effectually excite them to whatever they are concerned to believe

* Isa. xi. 2.

† Phil. ii. 5.

or do. *For the fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom**.

Having concluded this prayer for them all in general, the bishop implores the divine protection and grace for each one, or each pair of them, in particular: that as he is already God's professed *child* and *servant*, by the recognition which he hath just made of his baptismal covenant, so *he may continue his forever*, by faithfully keeping it: *and far from decaying, daily increase in his holy Spirit*, that is, in the fruits of the Spirit, piety and virtue, *more and more*; making greater and quicker advances in them, as life goes on, *until he come to that decisive hour*, when his portion shall be unchangeable *in God's everlasting kingdom*.

And, along with the utterance of these solemn words, he lays his hand on each of their heads, a ceremony used from the earliest ages by religious persons, when they prayed for God's blessing on any one; used by our Saviour, who, when *children were brought to him, that he should put his hands on them, and pray, and bless them, was much displeased*† with those who forbade it; used by the Apostles, after converts were baptized, as the text plainly shews; reckoned in the Epistle to the Hebrews among *the foundations* of the Christian profession‡; constantly practised, and highly esteemed, in the church from that time to this; and so far from being a popish ceremony, that the Papists administer confirmation by other ceremonies of their own devising, and have laid aside this primitive one; which therefore our church very prudently restored. And the custom of it is approved, as apostolical, both by Luther and Calvin, and several of their followers, though they

* Psalm cxi. 10.

† Matth. xix. 13—15. Mark x. 13—16.

‡ Heb. vi. 1.

rashly abolished it, as having been abused *. But I am credibly informed, that at Geneva it hath lately been restored.

The laying on of the hand naturally expresses good will and good wishes in the person who doth it: and in the present case is further intended, as you will find in one of the following prayers, to *certify those, to whom it is done, of God's favour and gracious goodness towards them*: of which goodness they will continually feel the effects, provided, which must always be understood, that they preserve their title to his care by a proper care of themselves. This, it must be owned, is a truth: and we may as innocently signify it by this sign as by any other, or as by any words to the same purpose. Further efficacy we do not ascribe to it: nor would have you look on bishops, as having or claiming a power, in any case, to confer blessings arbitrarily on whom they please; but only as petitioning God for that blessing from above which he alone can give; yet, we justly hope, will give the rather for the prayers of those whom he hath placed over his people, unless your own unworthiness prove an impediment. Not that you are to expect, on the performance of this good office, any sudden and sensible change in your hearts, giving you, all at once, a remarkable strength or comfort in piety, which you never felt before. But you may reasonably promise yourselves, from going through it with a proper disposition, greater measures, when real occasion requires them, of such divine assistance as will be needful for your support and orderly growth in every virtue of a Christian life.

* See Camfield's two Discourses on Episcopal Confirmation, Svo. 1682, p. 23—36.

And now, the imposition of hands being finished, the bishop and congregation mutually recommend each other to God, and return to such joint and public devotions as are suitable to the solemnity. The first of these is the Lord's Prayer: a form seasonable always, but peculiarly now; as every petition in it will shew to every one who considers it. In the next place, more especial supplications are poured forth, for the persons particularly concerned, to him who alone can enable them *both to will and to do* what is good; that, as the hand of his minister hath been laid upon them, so *his fatherly hand may ever be over them, and lead them in the only way, the knowledge and obedience of his word, to everlasting life.* After this, a more general prayer is offered up for them and the rest of the congregation together, that God would *vouchsafe*, unworthy as we all are, so to *direct and govern both our hearts and bodies*, our inclinations and actions (for neither will suffice without the other), *in the ways of his laws, and in the works of his commandments*, that, *through his most mighty protection, both here and ever, we may be preserved in body and soul*: having the former, in his good time, raised up from the dead, and the latter made happy, in conjunction with it, to all eternity.

These requests being thus made, it only remains, that all be dismissed with a solemn blessing: which will certainly abide with you, unless, by wilful sin or gross negligence, you drive it away. And in that case, you must not hope, that your baptism, or your confirmation, or the prayers of the bishop, or the church, or the whole world, will do you any service. On the contrary, every thing which you might have been the better for, if you had made a good use of it, you will be the worse for, if you make a bad one.

You do well to renew the covenant of your Baptism, in confirmation: but if you break it, you forfeit the benefit of it. You do well to repeat your vows in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper: it is what all Christians are commanded by their dying Saviour, *for the strengthening and refreshing of their souls*: it is what I beg all, who are confirmed, will remember, and their friends and ministers remind them of: the sooner they are prepared for it, the happier; and by stopping short, the benefit of what preceded will be lost. But if you are admitted to this privilege also, and live wickedly, you do but *eat and drink your own condemnation*. So that all depends on a thoroughly honest care of your hearts and behaviour in all respects.

Not that, with our best care, we can avoid smaller faults. And if we intreat pardon for them in our daily prayers, and faithfully strive against them, they will not be imputed to us. But gross and habitual sins we may avoid, through God's help: and if we fall into them, we fall from our title to salvation at the same time. Yet even then our case is not desperate: and let us not make it so, by thinking it is: for, through the grace of the Gospel, we may still repent and amend, and then be forgiven. But I beg you to observe, that, as continued health is vastly preferable to the happiest recovery from sickness; so is innocence to the truest repentance. If we suffer ourselves to transgress our duty; God knows whether we shall have time to repent: God knows whether we shall have a heart to do it. At best we shall have lost, and more than lost, the whole time that we have been going back: whereas we have all need to press forwards, as fast as we can. Therefore let the innocent of wilful sin preserve that treasure with the greatest

circumspection; and the faulty return from their errors without delay. Let the young enter upon the way of righteousness with hearty resolution; and those of riper age persevere in it to the end. In a word, let us all, of every age, seriously consider, and faithfully practise, the obligations of religion. For *the vows of God are still upon us**, how long soever it be since they were first made, either by us, or for us: and it is in vain to forget what he will assuredly remember; or hope to be safe in neglecting what he expects us to do. But let us use proper diligence; and he will infallibly give us proper assistance, and *confirm us all unto the end, that we may be blameless in the day of the Lord Jesus Christ †*.

Now unto him, who is able to keep us from falling, and to present us faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, to the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever, Amen ‡.

* Psalm lvi. 12.

§ 1 Cor. i. 8.

† Jude 24, 25.

AN
ANSWER
TO
DR. MAYHEW'S OBSERVATIONS
ON THE
CHARTER AND CONDUCT
OF THE
SOCIETY
FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL
IN FOREIGN PARTS

AN SWER
TO
DR. MAYHEW'S OBSERVATIONS

ON THE
CHARTER AND CONDUCT
OF THE
SOCIETY
FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL
IN FOREIGN PARTS

AND
A
DISSENT
TO
THE
REPORT
OF
THE
COMMISSIONERS
OF
THE
SOCIETY
FOR
THE
PROPAGATION
OF
THE
GOSPEL
IN
FOREIGN
PARTS
IN
THE
YEAR
1790

AN
A N S W E R
TO
DR. MAYHEW'S OBSERVATIONS.

DR. MAYHEW'S book* is written, partly against the church of England in general; partly against the conduct of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, in settling ministers of that church in the Massachusetts and Connecticut; partly against appointing bishops to reside in his majesty's American colonies. The first, though not formally proposed by him as one head of his work, appears to be in his view throughout the whole of it. And if satisfaction be previously given to candid persons on this point, they will be better prepared for considering the other two.

He objects against the constitution and worship of the church of England, as unscriptural †. Now even had he attempted to bring proof of this, it would only lead into a long dispute, very little connected

* The quotations out of Dr. Mayhew's Observations are taken from the English edition, which contains 147 pages. The American hath 176.

† Page 128.

with his professed subject, and “into which,” he declares, “it was by no means his design to enter*.” But instead of proofs, he contents himself with bold assertions, reproachful names, and ludicrous representations; a likely method indeed to please the prejudiced, and carry the thoughtless along with him, but not to persuade the considerate and judicious. Whatever the Doctor may think of our church, it hath ever been highly honoured by foreign protestants. The Lutherans prefer it to the Calvinist communion, the Calvinists to the Lutheran, the Greeks to both: which may sufficiently justify the expression, understood in a latitude not uncommon, that all other persuasions esteem it next to their own†. And further, most, if not all of them, blame the English dissenters for separating from it. The Doctor seems to entertain the worse opinion of it, because the members of the church of Rome likewise esteem it more than they do others‡. But we have to reply, that they hate it more also, as the most dangerous enemy to their cause, and strongest bulwark of the Reformation. If there be some appointments in it, which the Scripture doth not require: so have there been from the first in the church of New England too, as may be seen in the Appendix to the History of that country, written by Mr. Neale, a dissenting minister: and so there are in all the churches of the world. Ours hath not many things of this kind, nor lays great stress upon them: and to think indifferent things unlawful, is as unreasonable and superstitious, as to think them necessary.

He speaks with horror of its “enormous hierarchy, ascending by various gradations from the dirt to the skies§:”—“and resembling that of the Romish church,

* Page 126.

† Ibid.

‡ Page 127.

§ Page 128.

in which one great prelate presides over the whole*.” What he means by the former words, besides indeterminate abuse, perhaps he could not easily explain. That there are different ranks of men in civil government, was never held to be an objection against it: and where is the harm of it in ecclesiastical? In the presbyterian hierarchy, one is raised considerably above another, though the preference usually may be temporary: and their acts of power have been as enormous, as those of the English bishops formerly: and are much greater than those of the English bishops now. In his favourite comparison of our church to the Romish, the Doctor quite mistakes the matter. Not one, but two prelates, preside over the church of England; and four over her sister-church of Ireland: which grievously spoils the similitude, that he would make out. And all these *preside in subordination to the king*, as he well knows; though he disingenuously hints a doubt of it by his ironical words, *I hope†*; at the same time that, I believe, he would deny it to be in subordination to the king, that he presides over *the West-church in Boston*. As to *the dirt*, which he mentions: if some clergymen of our church are very low in the world, so are some of every church; nor do they deserve scorn for it, but compassion. And that any of ours are so high, as to do harm, or cause fear, by their elevation, the persons amongst whom they live, find not: and he, who is placed so remote from them, had better judge by the experience of others, than by his own heated imagination.

Bishops, in his language, are “the mitred lordly successors of the fishermen of Galilee‡.” Now if mitres offend him, our bishops wear none. If they are

* Page 67.

† Page 64.

‡ Page 128.

styled lords, it is because, by the ancient constitution of our country, they sit in the upper house of parliament: where, I believe, they are thought as useful members as the rest. And I know not, whether the Doctor's modesty would propose, that our constitution should be altered in this respect, or whether a much wiser man could foresee the consequences of such an alteration. Men may be lords, without being lordly: and they, who have professed to abhor the name, have carried the disposition of domineering to the height; and lorded it over the consciences and the liberties of others, as much as any who have worn higher titles. What intimation lies concealed under the terms, *fishermen of Galilee*; and whether, in the Doctor's opinion, all ministers of Christ are to follow some trade; he hath not explained, nor told us what his own is. But certainly reviling his brethren is a very bad one.

He also charges the church of England with persecution; and particularly with driving out the ancestors of the present inhabitants of New England into that country*. Now it is a matter of notoriety, that the lawfulness of persecution is no doctrine of our church: and there are few of its members, if any, now, who approve it, or do not detest it. But we must acknowledge, that, when the errors of the church of Rome were cast off, this was not immediately perceived to be one by almost any of the protestant communions. The church of England was but like others; and the dissenters from it had not the least degree more of a tolerating spirit, perhaps not so much. There were amongst them peaceable men, and so there were amongst us. But in general, their avowed aim was, not exemption for themselves,

* Page 129.

but the destruction of the ecclesiastical establishment*. On this they were treated too severely, and they returned the treatment to the full, as soon as they were able, in the total overthrow of church and state. Far from exaggerating, I choose not to mention the particulars of their behaviour. Every good man must lament the faults of both sides; but to inveigh against one with bitterness, and leave it to be imagined that the other was innocent, which the doctor doth, I hope he will see on recollection is extremely unjust.

In the Platform of Discipline, agreed upon in the synod of Cambridge in New England in 1648, and published by Mr. Neale, in his History of that country, it is declared, that "heresy is to be restrained and punished by the civil magistrate; and that if any churches grow schismatical, or walk contrary to the rule of the word, he is to put forth his coercive power, as the matter shall require†." Accordingly Mr. Neale himself very honestly confesses, that "the churches of New England were formerly very uncharitable to those who differed from them, and had no notions of liberty of conscience, but were for forcing men to their public assemblies by fines and imprisonments‡." On their putting to death several Quakers, as they did before and after the Restoration, till an order from king Charles the Second prohibited them§, he hath these words: "Now it appeared, that the New England puritans were no better friends to liberty of conscience than their adversaries; and that the question between them was not, whether one party of Christians should oppress another, but who

* See this fully proved in Maddox's Vindication of the Church of England.

† Vol. ii. p. 306. ‡ Vol. ii. p. 248, 249. § Vol. i. p. 334.

should have that power*.” Nay, the Quakers affirm, that “they who had loudly cried out of the tyranny and oppression of the bishops in Old England, from whom they fled; when settled in a place where they had liberty to govern, made their little finger of cruelty bigger than ever they found the loins of the bishops†.” Dr. Mayhew indeed saith, that “severities are used against the Quakers, much less under the notion of their being dissenters from the public mode of worship, than of their being disturbers of the peace and religious assemblies‡.” But still severities were used against them on the former account; and they justly observe in Mr. Neale, that offences of the latter kind “have never been thought worthy of death by any civilized nation§.” But the Doctor asks, “supposing the New Englanders to have persecuted the Quakers, from whom did they learn this practice? Episcopalians certainly should lay their hands upon their mouths||.” Now the plain truth is, that all protestants learnt this practice from the church of Rome, and all should lay their hands upon their mouths. But the Doctor hath no right to open his as wide as he pleases, and require us to shut ours.

God be thanked, the members of our church are grown wiser and milder; the dissenters in general, I am fully persuaded, are so too: and it is high time, that such of both parties, as are not, should. But performances, like the Doctor’s, cannot surely contribute to this good end among either. He assures us indeed at the beginning, that he hath a “regard to truth and justice,” with an “aversion to controversy¶;” and at the end, that “he honours candid

* Vol. i. p. 329.
land judged.

|| Page 80.

† Grove’s Preface to Bishop’s New Eng-

‡ Page 79.

¶ Page 7.

§ Vol. i. p. 331, 332.

and moderate men of all denominations, and would not unnecessarily give offence to any person of the episcopal persuasion*." One must suppose, that he believes himself; and as far as is possible, I would believe him also. Some persons are strangely subject to sudden gusts of passion, and say and do things in them, for which they are heartily sorry the next hour. But were this the Doctor's case in writing, he would blot out the injurious expressions which had dropt from his pen. Therefore his malady hath a deeper root in his frame, and influences him more constantly, though it may be without his perceiving it. For I am exceedingly unwilling to think, that he inserts his qualifying and healing clauses with an artful design to procure himself a dispensation for his outrages. However that be, his professions, that he doth not intend to do what he hath been doing just before, and doth again soon after with all his might, are protestations against fact which cannot be admitted.

But whatever concessions a gentleman of this turn makes to his adversaries, are to be received with great regard, for one may be sure they are not too large. Let us therefore begin with these, in considering his remarks on the charter and conduct of the Society.

He owns, that "it hath a right to plant churches, to support missions and schools, &c. in many of the British American colonies;" and adds, that "no one who hath ever read the charter, can possibly imagine, that its care and charity ought to be confined to the heathen slaves in, or the savages bordering on, the plantations†." Yet many have been led both to imagine and to assert this, merely from its name. It is hoped that for the future they will confess and remember their mistake. He owns likewise, that in three

* Page 145.

† Page 12, 13.

districts of New England, i. e. New Hampshire, Rhode Island, and Providence, “much less care hath been taken for the support of a public worship,” than in the rest*: and that “a few missions from the Society might be needed in these, particularly in Rhode Island†.” And he blames them as unnecessary, only in the Massachusetts and Connecticut. Nay, he declares, that in these “it is by no means his intention to charge that venerable body with any wilful known misconduct, or improper application of moneys, even though any incautious expression should at first view have the appearance of such an accusation‡.” Again, he saith, “I would by no means be understood, as charging so respectable a body with any wilful criminal abuse of power§.” Accordingly, after declaring “his design to shew, that they have in some respects counteracted the ends of their institution,” he adds, “however contrary to their intention||.” He hath also these express words: “That the Society have chiefly sent their missionaries into those British plantations, where they were much needed, according to the true design of their institution; and that they have hereby served the interest of religion in them, is by no means denied: it were very criminal to deny them the praise, that is justly due to them in this respect.” I honour the Doctor for these instances of candour; and if he had preserved the same temper throughout, should either have had no controversy with him, or have engaged in the friendly debate with pleasure: whereas now the frequent and copious effusions of a bad spirit in his work make such animadversions upon him unavoidable, as I should otherwise gladly have spared.

His charge on the Society is, that they have

* Page 36. † Page 46. ‡ Page 7. § Page 93. || Page 9.

“ maintained episcopal churches, where other protestant churches were before settled, and the administration of God’s word and ordinances provided for*, with a formal design which they have long had, to root out presbyterianism, &c. in the colonies.” Now this design, “ in pursuance of which,” he saith, “ they have in a great measure neglected the ends of their institution†,” is falsely ascribed to them. They have never formed a scheme “ to root out presbyterianism, &c. in the colonies,” either by force, which the Doctor could not mean, though the word most naturally suggests it, or even by argument and persuasion. Undoubtedly they would be very glad, if all the inhabitants were of the communion of the church of England: as undoubtedly the Doctor would, if they were all of his communion. But they have sent no persons to effect this. He attempts to prove the contrary from the following instruction, given by them to their missionaries: “ That they frequently visit their respective parishioners; those of our own communion, to keep them steady in the profession and practice of religion, as taught in the church of England; those that oppose us, or dissent from us, to convince and reclaim them with a spirit of meekness and gentleness‡.” His words on that occasion are: “ This clearly shews, what they are after. It will also be observed here, that WE are considered as parishioners of the missionaries, no less than professed episcopalians. And we are often spoken of as such by them in their letters to the Society, as appears by the abstracts. How assuming is this§!” The instruction plainly relates, not to missionaries settled in presbyterian or congregational parishes, for there were none so settled when

* Page 15.

† Page 86.

‡ Collection of Papers

printed by order of the Society, p. 24.

§ Page 89.

it was drawn up, but for incumbents of episcopal parishes, though with a mixture of dissenters. And they would of course understand, that endeavouring to “convince and reclaim” the latter was not to be their stated and principal business, but occasional only and incidental. If the Doctor should happen to speak of the episcopalians residing in his parish, as part of his parishioners, and say, that he should endeavour “to reclaim them with a spirit of meekness;” would this be a proof, that he was fixed there with a “formal design to root out episcopacy” in it? If there be instances, in which missionaries, who have no legal parishes, have used the same language; (for he quotes none, and I remember none) it only follows, that they have expressed themselves improperly, and should be set right when it is observed.

Another evidence produced by the Doctor is, that “in the account of the Society, published in 1706, after speaking of the independent congregations in New England, they say: ‘Several other ways of division and separation did so much obtain in other of our colonies and plantations, that this made it more necessary to think of providing for a regular and orthodox ministry,——to promote, as much as possible, an agreement in faith and worship.’ This,” he saith, “can mean nothing, more or less, than uniformity, or a general conformity to the doctrine, discipline, and worship of the church of England*.” I have not been able to procure this account, or to learn by whom, or whose order, it was compiled. But the passage quoted from it, expressly speaks, not of independent, or any congregations in New Eng-

* Page 86, 87.

land, but of "other ways of division and separation in other colonies," and therefore is nothing to the Doctor's purpose: besides that, "as much agreement as possible in faith and worship" might be far "less than a general conformity to the church of England;" which it might be impossible to obtain, and yet as near an approach to it as could be obtained, might even, in his opinion, be more desirable, than letting them continue in their present way. For how bad that was, appears not.

The real conduct of the Society, with respect to provinces and parishes not episcopal, hath been, to contribute towards supporting public worship and instruction amongst such members of the church of England, as cannot in conscience comply with the worship and instruction of the other congregations in their neighbourhood, and yet cannot wholly maintain ministers for themselves. The most of these will usually be in the more considerable towns; and for that reason it is, and not with a view of making converts, as the Doctor pretends*, that episcopal ministers are settled in so many considerable towns of New England. But they are settled no where, till a competent number of our people inhabiting near, request it, and subscribe what they are able. Nay, these requests have often, both formerly† and lately, been rejected, or postponed for many years together, when the number did not appear to be sufficient, or the Society apprehended, that too much of their money was going this way. And were it but known, as it seems to be in some measure to the dissenters themselves‡, how continual and importunate the calls and expostulations of such persons are, the

* Page 46. † See Humphrey's Historical Account, p. 61, &c.

‡ See Mr. Hobart's Serious Address, p. 133, 138.

impartial would wonder, how the Society could withstand so many of them, as it hath done. These are plain evidences, that missionaries are not sent to New England for the purpose of making proselytes to episcopacy. Accordingly, which is a further evidence, they have no directions, public or private, given them to make any, or to preach at all upon disputable points: but on the contrary, one rule laid down for them is, “that they keep always in view the great design of their undertaking; *viz.* to promote the glory of God, and the salvation of men, by propagating the Gospel of our Lord and Saviour* ;” and another is “that the chief subject of their sermons be the great fundamental principles of Christianity; and the duties of a sober, righteous, and godly life, as resulting from those principles†.”

Nor can the missionaries easily misapprehend the intentions of the Society, thus manifested. Several of them have indeed spoken highly, sometimes perhaps, as it is but natural, too highly, of the increase of their churches; and have mentioned it with great pleasure in their letters, and no wonder. But they have not ascribed that increase to the pains which they have taken to bring persons over to it, but rather to the satisfaction which our service had given to persons, who of their own accord, from curiosity or other motives, attended it. Or if they now and then do mention themselves as making converts, they do not ever, to the best of my remembrance, mention this, as the end for which they were appointed. Dr. Johnson, one of the oldest of them, professes it not to be so, in these words: “He [Mr. Hobart] is much mistaken in saying—we make it our chief and grand business to proselyte dissenters to the church of Eng-

* Collection of Papers, p. 20.

† Ibid. p. 23.

land.—Our chief business is, to minister to those who are church-people; and if this proves the occasion of increasing the number, it is but what may naturally be expected, when they, by that means, have opportunity to see how great the advantage is on our side*.” And Mr. Beache, one almost, if not quite, as old, saith “It is not the design of the charter, that the Society should send missionaries to convert presbyterians to the church: and—it is a base reflection to say they do.—They never send missionaries to convert protestants to the church of England, but to minister to church-people; and if dissenters by that means are added to the church, they do not think by this any evil is done. This is the truth, and all the truth†.” Accordingly a very respectable missionary uses the following words, in a paper not printed, which I have seen: “I believe very few instances, if any, can be produced of any missionary’s beginning with any dissenter, with a view of reclaiming him to the church. I have long known the affairs of the Society, and know of no such instance.”

Therefore Mr. Apthorp might well “aver,” as the Doctor tells us he is said to have done, “that he desires not to make one proselyte from the congregational church‡.” The Doctor however thinks, that “there seems to be some difficulty in reconciling this declaration with the hopes expressed in his letter to the Society, of future accessions to his congregation.” But may there not be accessions to it by the settlement of more members of the church of England in those parts, or by a change of sentiments in persons

* Pref. to Mr. Beache’s Vindication, or Address, 1749, p. 5, 6.

† Second Vindication, or Address, 1751, p. 67.

‡ Ibid. p. 63.

of other persuasions, without Mr. Apthorp's interfering? The Doctor, unable or unwilling to perceive so obvious a solution, charitably helps him to come off, by supposing, that "perhaps it was from the college, not from the church, that he flattered himself with such accessions:" adding, "in which he is supposed to have been not a little disappointed." But hath Mr. Apthorp attempted to make any proselytes, either from the church or the college? If not, why is a poor needless evasion ascribed to him; and a disappointment supposed of hopes, which he doth not appear to have entertained? Why should not his declaration, and suitable behaviour, be rather deemed another proof, that the missionaries understand their business to be, not proselyting dissenters, but officiating to our own people? The Doctor believes indeed what may seem a presumption of the contrary, "that scarce ten families in the town of Cambridge usually attend the service of the church lately set up there*." But it was represented to the Society, that fifty families in the town and neighbourhood were desirous to attend it. And should they prove to be much fewer, yet several members of the church of England send their children to Harvard college there: and such a place of worship, as they and their parents approve, may be reasonably provided for them, without any design of proselyting others. There is indeed a college in New England, where students have been forbidden to attend episcopal service; and a young man hath been fined for going to hear his own father, an episcopal minister, preach. But in Harvard college, it seems, a better spirit prevails: and it seems more likely to flourish, both for that moderation, and for the new church built near it.

The Doctor saith that in some other places, “the supplicants” for missionaries “have not exceeded eight, or ten, or twelve heads of families*.” But if this be true, they have petitioned in the name of others, as well as their own. And supposing the Society to have been misinformed about their numbers, this may happen notwithstanding good care; and by no means proves them to have a design, which other circumstances prove they have not.

But the Doctor apprehends, that whatever the number of these petitioners any where may be, conscience is but seldom their motive, and therefore they should not be encouraged. Indeed, he scarcely seems to conceive how it can be their motive; and wants to be told, “what there is that should give offence to good protestants†” in the presbyterian or congregational churches. We must not call them independent, for he saith “the episcopalians affect to reproach them under that name‡:” though Mr. Neale, himself an independent, uses it frequently, and it is more proper, and not reproachful at all. Nor must we call them assemblies or communions; for he hath rebuked Mr. Apthorp and the Archbishop of Canterbury for doing it§, though he doth it himself. In these churches therefore, he wants to know what there is that can give offence: and so lets himself again into his darling topic of abusing the church of England in comparison. However, he recollects that he hath heard some episcopalians say, and been told that others have said, “that they should much prefer the communion of the church of Rome||” to that of the dissenters. And indeed none are so likely as he, and such as he, to provoke those into saying it, who would think very differently in their cooler

* Page 48. † Page 66. ‡ Page 36. § Page 67. || Ibid.

hours. But supposing this to be their settled judgment; would he have them left to turn papists, if they will, because they are not so good protestants as they should be? The church of Rome and its Society *de propaganda*, would have ground to thank him for establishing this notion. But if some of his own communion should say that they had rather be Anabaptists or Quakers than churchmen, would that be a reason why they should have no minister of his communion amongst them? I should imagine just the contrary. Persons of different parties in religion may think too ill of each other, without wishing ill to each other at all; and so may mean very well, though they judge greatly amiss. Or even if they mean ill, they have so much the more need of such instructors as they esteem, to set them right.

But the Doctor, "to do" the episcopalians "justice, doth not suppose that these sentiments generally prevail amongst them." And he admits "that some of them may possibly, without going these lengths, have conscientious scruples about the means of religion in "his" communion*." But he puts the word "possibly" in italics: which intimates, that he thinks it barely possible. And this possibility he extends no further, in what follows, than to allow that there may be "some things or circumstances which they cannot intirely acquiesce in, or approve of." Now would he account us to be sufficiently charitable, if we conceded only such a possibility of conscientiousness to the dissenters from the church of England? If not, why is he so exceedingly sparing in his concessions to us? We hold it to be probable, we hold it to be evident, that many dissenters who are far from thinking us worse than papists, yet cannot in conscience use the means of

religion in our communion. And surely we are intitled to as favourable an opinion from them. Without maintaining that “they have no Gospel ministers, or sacraments, or ordinances, or churches*,” we may apprehend, whether rightly or wrongly is not to be disputed now, but sincerely however, that episcopacy is of apostolical institution, and that Scripture affords as good proof of this, as of the appointment of infant baptism and the Lord’s day. We may apprehend that after the ceasing of extraordinary spiritual gifts, forms of prayer were always used, more or less, throughout the church of Christ, and are needful for the observance of the Scripture rule, “Let all things be done decently and in order †.” Without judging those who reject both these, (for “to their own Master they shall stand or fall ‡”) we may judge it unlawful for us to join in the rejection of either. Nay, were we only to think their ministry, compared with that of our church, to be unedifying, and make that our plea for preserving a separation from them, we should but follow the pattern which many of the English dissenters have set.

The Doctor indeed assigns very different motives, for the non-compliance of our people: “Levity, petulance, avarice, groundless distrust at the stated minister, dissatisfaction about pews and rates, or at being under, or likely to come under, censure for immoral practices.” But “he doth not affirm positively that either [he means, any] of these hath always been the case without exception §.” Here again he is remarkably careful, that his concessions to the poor episcopalians shall not be too liberal. And to keep on even terms with him, we do not affirm po-

* Page 63.

† 1 Cor. xiv. 10.

‡ Rom. xiv. 4.

§ Page 47.

sitively that none of these hath ever been the case. But we must insist, that the favourable presumption is the preferable one, and that men's professions, concerning their own inducements, are to be credited, unless the contrary appears; which, according to the best intelligence that could be got, we believe it hath not ordinarily done, in the matter now under consideration. On one of these heads, "avarice," the Doctor explains himself, by saying, that "till a law was made, obliging the episcopalians to pay ministerial rates in common with others," but for "the support of their own clergy," episcopacy made a great progress; and that "if they had been exempted from all ministerial taxes as the Quakers are; almost all who loved their money better than any thing else, might in the course of a few years have adorned the communion of the church*." But what needed they who loved their money better than any thing else, turn episcopalians to save it, when turning Quakers would have served the same purpose more effectually? And have any episcopalians turned Quakers, when they found their former change would secure them no longer? If not, this suggestion is unauthorized and unwarrantable. He declines giving "any recent instance" of men's acting upon the motives which he alleges, because if you will believe him to be so tender, old ones, given by another person, may be less invidious. Of these he produces two, from a letter of Dr. Colman, of Boston, written above fifty years ago to Dean, afterwards Bishop, Kennet. And he observes rightly, that the Dean in his answer expresses his belief that they are true. But he plainly believed it only on the information of Dr. Colman, a perfect stranger to him; nor can any inquiry into the

* Page 49.

real truth be made now. And I beg leave to observe in my turn, that according to Dr. Mayhew's own account, for I have no other, the Dean thought the Society was authorized to "plant episcopal churches," where, though there was "a settled ministry, there were" also "good numbers, who could not in conscience conform to the ways of worship different from the established church of England*." Therefore asserting, that the true and only design of the Society, in sending missionaries to the Massachusetts and Connecticut, hath always been to provide for such persons, is not a new plea, set up to serve a turn. The Dean had good opportunities of knowing its real purpose; and so worthy a man as Dr. Mayhew allows him to be, would not have written as he hath done, if he had suspected any further insidious scheme. Indeed the Society, far from having formed a project to episcopize (as the Doctor calls it) that country, had but three missionaries in it seven years after; and the following ones went upon no other errand than the first.

After saying that the above-mentioned causes produced factions and parties, and they produced episcopal separations, the Doctor goes on to say, that "divers of the missionaries have been much injured (which there is no reason to suppose) if they have not been very busy in fomenting these divisions; yea, been at the bottom of them†." But I take the liberty of maintaining, that there is *great* reason to suppose they have been injured. For in all such disputes it never fails, but each side injures the other; and the missionaries would be very sure of having a double load of calumny thrown upon them. Still, that some of them may have been to blame in this

* Page 50—55.

† Page 57.

respect, is not only possible, but, considering human nature, too likely. And if any where it can be proved that they have been “busy-bodies in other men’s matters*,” or used bad arts to promote a good cause, they ought to be reprimanded, and if they amend not, removed. But the Doctor, conscious that misbehaviours of particular persons would not come up to his point, charges the Society itself with “manifesting a sufficient forwardness to encourage and increase small disaffected parties in towns, upon an application to them.” And this, he saith, “appears†.” But how it appears, he hath not said, nor can I imagine. The Society hath never been made acquainted with any of the little quarrels in the towns of New England; and were they to know them, they are too remote to give directions about them; unless the Doctor can make it “appear,” that they have given their missionaries a general direction to inflame them all as much as they can.

Perhaps he may think that no other causes can be alleged, than such as he hath produced, for the increase of episcopalians in those parts. But this would be a great mistake. Though the first planters of New England were separatists from our church, many conformists to it came afterwards to settle there; and some of them, as I am credibly informed, were to be found fifty years ago, in almost every town of considerable standing. These new-comers were despised and reproached for their religious principles by their neighbours; most of whom had been taught to think the church of England nearly as bad as the church of Rome. Thus attacked, it was natural that they should endeavour to defend themselves, and procure such books as would enable them to do it better.

* 1 Pet. iv. 15.

† Page 47.

Some of the more candid and inquisitive amongst the presbyterians and congregationalists adventured to hear their defences, and to read their authors; were convinced by them, and became churchmen. As their number grew, it was natural that they should endeavour to procure themselves ministers, and on their request the Society helped them. This occasioned a further augmentation, to which also contributed greatly the wild enthusiasm that prevailed in several of the New England churches, even before Mr. Whitefield came amongst them, but was mightily increased by him and the strolling teachers that followed him; as did likewise their extending spiritual censures to mere trifles, with their endless contentions and confusions on the settling of ministers, and on various occurrences besides; all which things disgusted and wearied out many of their people, and induced them to seek a peaceable refuge in our communion. If these are known facts, as I am assured they are, they will go a very great way towards accounting for the growth of the episcopal party; and the Doctor should not have suppressed them, and ascribed it wholly to such bad and such low motives as he hath done, in order to throw an odium upon the Society, as encouraging what it abhors, for the attainment of a design which it never framed.

But the Doctor seems to intimate, that "even upon supposition" that the episcopalians in New England, who pleaded that they had no ministers whom they could attend, were "conscientious people," yet they were not "much to be pitied," or "really objects of charity*." Surely he could not mean this. At least, I should have great compassion for a number of dissenters in the same state. Thus much however

he allows, that “if any persons in England, in their private capacity, should think it,” which again rather implies that he in their condition should not think it, “a deed of charity to support episcopal churches in New England, for the sake of those comparatively few conscientious people, to whom the means of religion, to be had in the protestant dissenting communion, are no means—they have a right to do it.” But he insists that the Society hath not, “their whole fund and revenue being otherwise appropriated;” which he undertakes to prove from their charter.

Now I acknowledge that the case of the New England episcopalians, is not particularly described and provided for in the charter. But so neither is the case of any other Indians, than such as are the king’s “subjects, and people” living “in his plantations and colonies,” for to these only the letter of the charter extends; and in respect of others, Mr. Apthorp might justly say, that “Indian conversions are undertaken by the Society, as it were, *ex abundanti*.” Yet Dr. Mayhew is so far from blaming the Society for applying part of their benefactions to the instruction of such Indians as only border on his majesty’s dominions, that he blames them greatly for not applying more of it to that use. Now if their case, which existed when the charter was granted, and yet is not named in it, may however be looked on as comprehended within its intention, and obtain relief by means of it in consequence of the general principle on which it is founded, much more may that of the episcopalians, which did not exist, and was not foreseen, and therefore no wonder it was not named. Though it was not expressly mentioned before it was in being, still if, when it came into being, it was in-

cluded under the reason and equity of the purposes which are expressly mentioned; paying regard to it must be understood to be allowed by the charter, and virtually directed in it. For the rules of law require that grants of princes, and particularly grants in favour of religion, be interpreted as liberally as may be*. And thus far, I conceive, Mr. Apthorp rightly asserts, that "the Society have a discretionary power of making alterations in their institution;" nor do I believe that he meant to carry it further, however unmercifully Dr. Mayhew hath treated him† on the supposition that he did.

If it be doubted, notwithstanding the above-mentioned argument *à fortiori*, whether the case of the New England episcopalians comes within the charter or not, I beg the reader's attention to the following additional considerations. The king sets forth in it as a principal reason for granting it, that "for lack of support for ministers, many of his loving subjects want the administration of God's word and sacraments." Now must not they who lack support for such ministers, as they can with a good conscience attend, want the administration of God's word and sacraments? Would not the generality of the presbyterians and congregationalists in New England think they wanted it, if there were no other than episcopal churches there? and why may not episcopalians think in a like manner? And can one imagine, that when the king's subjects abroad, conformists to the church established in England by law, were, without their own fault, and merely through

* See those rules in Wood's Institutes of Civil Law, Introd. c. 13. § 3. No. 13, 17.

† Page 110—116.

their situation and their poverty, unprovided of such public means of religion as their inward persuasion required, it could be agreeable to his royal will that they should be excluded from the benefit of this charter? But further, the king recites that part of his people, through the forementioned unhappy circumstances, "seem to be abandoned to atheism and infidelity," and others are in danger of being "perverted to popish superstition and idolatry;" and both these things he was desirous to prevent. Now doth not the Doctor think the episcopalians, when they have no ministers in whose ministrations they can acquiesce, must be grievously liable to the one or the other? Particularly, must not those of them be in great danger of popery, who, as he tells us, prefer that to the worship of the prevailing party in New England? And must it not be presumed that the charter would have guarded explicitly against these evils, had they been foreseen? But further still, the king declares, that "he thinks it is his duty as much as in him lies, to promote the glory of God by the instruction of his people in the Christian religion." Now will not this be more fully effected if the episcopalians in New England are instructed, than if they are not instructed? And lastly, the king proposes, that "for accomplishing the ends" intended by the charter, "a sufficient maintenance be provided for an orthodox clergy to live amongst his subjects in these parts." I do not lay the greatest stress on this last clause, because it specifies only what sort of clergy should be sent, not to whom they should minister. And yet, if the intention was that only clergymen of the church of England should be employed (and public authority, I believe, hath never directed others to

be employed), it must surely be intended likewise, that all the laity of the church of England, who could be benefited by them, should.

Here indeed the Doctor objects, that "orthodoxy, in its most common use, hath no reference to ecclesiastical polity*." But supposing that, why may not the charter use it in its original and not uncommon signification, of right notions in religious matters, whether they relate to faith, or morals, or worship, or church-government? The head of an episcopal church cannot be deemed indifferent about any of these; especially in forming a corporation, into which, I believe, no one dissenter was by the charter admitted. But he objects again, that "king William, though, as head of the church of England, there was a necessity of his externally conforming to its rules and discipline, cannot be supposed by orthodox ministers to have intended those of the church of England in distinction from others†." Thus he is pleased to represent, for the sake of his hypothesis, our glorious deliverer as a mere "external," and consequently hypocritical conformist: though it is well known, that on his death-bed he was attended by ministers of our church and no other, and received the sacrament from a bishop's hands. Nor, I presume, is the Doctor ignorant, that he settled one hundred pounds a year on an episcopal church at Boston‡; which clearly shews, that he thought episcopal churches proper objects of royal bounty, even in places where there was a settled ministry of another sort before. And his successors to this day have thought in the same manner. But had he been ever so rigid a nonconformist, every word of his charter must have been interpreted, not by his private opi-

* Page 60. † Page 20. ‡ Humphreys's Account, p. 7, 313.

nion, but by the spirit of the laws and the constitution.

The Doctor pleads also, that “divers” of the “New England laws,” relative to ministers, “in which they are designed as orthodox, have had the allowance of the king*.” And had the intent of these laws been to enact, that they were orthodox, the plea would have been of some weight. But where the king only assents to a bill, framed for another purpose, in which this word, used by them concerning themselves, is to be found, his connivance at their use of it, against which it might have been hurtful to object, can never shew, in what sense he uses it of his own accord in an English charter. He saith likewise from Mr. Hobart, that “if we think none but the clergy of the church of England are in a legal sense orthodox ministers, we may be informed how that matter was determined by the king in council, in the cause between Mr. Macsparran and Mr. Torrey†.” But the council did not declare the dissenting ministers to be orthodox in the legal sense, but in the sense of the donors of the land in dispute. And this answer Mr. Beache gave long ago to Mr. Hobart‡. But the Doctor hath chosen to repeat the objection, without taking notice of the answer.

He urges also, that if “we deny the New England ministers the title of orthodox, we must deny it to the ministers of all other churches, except perhaps that of Rome§,” and “engross the whole of that precious commodity,” as he scornfully calls it, “to our own party||.” Now he knows in his heart, that we think the church of Rome far more heterodox than we do

* Page 61.

† Page 62, 63.

‡ Second Vindication or Address, p. 69.

§ Page 61.

|| Page 59.

any of the protestant churches, yet he could not resist the temptation of insinuating the contrary. I hope his conscience will do him the kind office of putting him to the blush in private, for this and many like instances of disingenuity. As to other churches, so far as their opinions differ from ours, be it in points more or less material, we do indeed think them mistaken, or, if the Doctor pleases, heterodox; but without the least contempt of them, or breach of brotherly love towards them: and we allow them to think us so, without taking it amiss. But he hath thought fit to acquaint us, that heterodoxy and heresy are the same thing*. So that whoever dissents from Dr. Mayhew in any point relative to Christian faith, it seems, is accounted by him an heretic. His New England brethren, if indeed they acknowledge him for a brother, are desired to consider the consequences of this way of thinking. *We have not so learned Christ†.*

But the Doctor hath not yet done with orthodoxy. "That precious commodity," he fancies, will afford him still further advantages. And therefore he tells us, it is known, or at least generally supposed amongst them, that their "New England ministers adhere much more closely both to the letter and the spirit of the doctrinal articles" of our church, than "most of the episcopal clergy themselves‡." Thus imaginary notorieties and vague suppositions, answer equally the Doctor's end of blackening the episcopalians in the esteem of his neighbours, by imputing to them deviations from the established faith, for which, if they were real, he would, "unless" to use his own words "he is much injured," like them the better. We can only deny the charge and put him on the

* Page 20, 58, 61.

† Eph. iv. 20.

‡ Page 60.

proof, which we do. And he would seem to attempt a proof in respect of Mr. Apthorp, setting some passages in a sermon of his, and some of the Thirty-nine Articles, in a pretended opposition*: though it is visible at first sight, that Mr. Apthorp speaks only against the doctrine of unconditional reprobation, and the extravagances of the Antinomians, and that the Articles quoted assert neither of them. But this accusation served a double purpose; of intimating first, that Mr. Apthorp subscribed the Articles insincerely, and then affecting to bring him off by a subterfuge, of which he hath no need, that “possibly he hath altered his opinion since.”

I have dwelt too long, in complaisance to the Doctor, on the term “orthodox.” Now I proceed with his proofs of the Society’s misconduct. He alleges, that “Dr. Bray took great pains to inform himself of the state of religion in the colonies; and delivered it, as the result of his inquiries, that he found no need at all of missionaries in Connecticut and the Massachusetts†.” This again he quotes from Mr. Hobart; and again omits to take notice of the full answer which Mr. Beache had given to it fourteen years ago, in these words: “I grant there was a time, when, as Dr. Bray saith, there was little or no occasion of sending missionaries to the Massachusetts or Connecticut, because there were then few or no church-people who wanted a minister. Yet now the case is very much altered; and as there are some thousands, so they are like to increase‡.” Had the design of the Society, in sending missionaries to those two governments, been to make proselytes, they would have thought there was most need, instead of

* Page 76, 77.

† Page 41, 42.

‡ Second Vindication or Address, p. 67, 68.

no need, to send, when there were fewest church people in them. But they sent none for eight or nine years, as Dr. Mayhew himself observes*: and they have sent them afterwards, just as the necessities of the people required: not to propagate the peculiarities of the church of England, as he pretends†, but to preserve a due sense of Christianity, and perform religious offices amongst its members.

The Doctor alleges also, that “in some churches, which according to the abstracts have been represented as growing, flourishing, and increasing in reputation, for near half a century, the number of stated worshippers at this day, very little, if any thing, exceeds ten or twelve families‡.” Yet he tells us himself, that in 1718, which is not half a century ago, there were but “three” missions “in all New England§:” and every one of these far exceeds that number of families; as do the latter also, if we may believe accounts, as credible as the Doctor’s, who, though he denies those of the missionaries to be true, confesses, that “the direct proof of a negative in such cases, is no easy matter||.” The Society wish, and endeavour to be well informed, concerning the number of families in every mission. If they are misinformed only in some few instances, it is neither a great marvel nor a great objection. And if they apprehend many missions to be more considerable than they are, since episcopacy thrives so poorly, the Doctor hath no reason to be alarmed about it. For supposing them to have engaged in the enterprise which he imagines, they will certainly grow sick of it and abandon it. But indeed I doubt whether any one of them ever dreamt of what he is pleased to say

* Page 44.

† Page 43.

‡ Page 48.

§ Page 44.

|| Page 83.

“hath long been their formal design, the true plan and grand mystery of their operations in New England*.”

Another thing, asserted by him, is, that after episcopal congregations “in some places have become well able to support their own ministers, the Society have still continued to pay these:” to which he adds, that “the only reason, why he doth not come to particulars, is, lest it should seem too invidious;” and that “this conduct of the Society for some years, proved no inconsiderable means of increasing the church-party†.” Now the Society hath always been desirous to know, when any congregation became able to support itself without their help; and have never continued their contribution, when they have understood that to be the case. If their friends have been too slow in giving them intelligence, which may have happened, and the Doctor will favour them with any, which on inquiry shall appear to be well-grounded, they will both be thankful to him, and shew the world that they are far from wishing to increase the church-party by profuse liberalities.

The Doctor exaggerates the fault, with which he charges the Society, of misapplying their money, by alleging further, that they have done no good by it. He declares, that “he never knew an example of any proselyte from their churches to ours, being brought back to a Christian life:” but that there “are numerous ones of persons, whose morals, though exceptionable before, were much worse afterwards;” that “they often become loose, profligate, vain and censorious, seemingly placing no small part of their religion in railing at their congregational and presbyterian neighbours‡.” Now in answer to an accusa-

* Page 49.

† Ibid.

‡ Page 82.

tion of the same nature, brought by Mr. Hobart, Mr. Beache hath “seriously declared, that he hath known many persons who have greatly improved in virtue by the change*.” And other worthy missionaries have declared the same thing. The Doctor indeed will perhaps treat me for producing missionaries, as he hath Mr. Apthorp for producing members of the Society, as “witnesses in” what he calls “their own cause†.” But the testimony of its accuser is not more admissible. The zealots of all parties, and those of his own at least as much as others, are mighty apt to speak with over-great severity of such as forsake them. And if the Doctor himself doth not place some part of his religion in railing at the episcopalians, it is very hard to account for his practising it so much. But besides, the question is not, whether proselytes to the church of England grow better, but whether the members of the church of England would not grow worse if they had no stated ministry to prevent it.

Inattentive to this, he urges further, that swearing, gaming, &c. “are beyond all comparison more frequent, since the church of England prevailed there, than before‡.” Yet Mr. Beache saith, “he is persuaded, that solid Christian virtue, as well as knowledge, increases, as the church gains ground in the country, and thousands of people are really bettered by it in their moral character§.” But supposing the abovementioned vices are more frequent since that time, so I fear these and others are in England since the Revolution and the toleration. But would it not be very wicked to ascribe the increase of them to

* First Vindication or Address, p. 43.

† Page 9, 70.

‡ Page 75.

§ Second Vindication or Address, p. 65.

either of these? Are the missionaries examples of vice? The Doctor hath not dared to say it. Do they preach in favour of vice? Are they not as diligent and zealous to the full in teaching moral duties, as the ministers of his communion, if not more so? And why then are the immoralities, of which he speaks, to be imputed to them, or the Society, or the church of England, when perhaps his own friends are as much degenerated as any? He declares indeed, that “he will not affirm that this is greatly the work of the Society.” But he hath done his utmost to make others think it; and, I suppose, imagines that episcopalians deserve no better treatment. In one thing however he hath dealt very fairly. After expressing his persuasion, that “there is less real religion in those parts of New England, where” the Society’s money “hath been expended, than there would have been, had it been sunk in the ocean,” he adds, “’tis not to be supposed that any episcopalians can be of this opinion; neither is any stress laid upon it in the present argument*.”

Mr. Apthorp asserts that, instead of harm, the New England missionaries have done great good there; “that the religious state of the country is manifestly improved,”—though “much indeed remains to be done in manners and piety.” And here the Doctor, with his usual charity, represents him as making a “concession, that this boasted reformation very little, if at all, consists in the improvement of piety and morals†.” Then he proceeds, without any occasion given him, to a mock defence of the “formal air,” which he admits the old divines of that country had, compared with the “jovial countenances” which he ascribes to the missionaries‡. What the Doctor’s

* Page 96, 97.

† Page 73.

‡ Page 74.

countenance is, I know not; but I wish he gave as good proofs of a serious heart, as the missionaries in general do. That religion wore a gloomy and uninviting appearance amongst the puritans there formerly, and now wears a more pleasing one amongst their descendants, and that in part they have learnt this alteration for the better from the members of the church of England, the Doctor, I presume, will not deny, though he will not permit an episcopalian to say it; and Mr. Apthorp did not mean to say more on this head.

What he saith in the next place, of the improvements lately made there in the speculative doctrines of religion, the Doctor endeavours to construe into the licentious insult on their "fathers" and teachers, "living and dead*;" of which Mr. Apthorp had evidently no intention, though he doth use a strong expression or two, which probably were not meant even of the dead teachers at large, but of the wild sectaries with which that country abounded†. At least they cannot be meant of the living fathers, because he both owns and pleads, that the faults, which he blames, are amended. And after abusing him for some time, the Doctor allows, "it was too common a thing for people in New England to express themselves in a manner justly exceptionable upon these points;" and that they may be "indebted to the "Society" or their "missionaries" in some "degree," for their doing otherwise now‡. So that in the main he agrees with Mr. Apthorp, at the same time that he inveighs against him; and probably wishes that far greater changes were made in the speculative doctrines of his brethren, than the Society and its missionaries would approve.

* Page 75. † See Humphreys's Account, p. 36, 37, 38. ‡ Page 78.

Mr. Apthorp adds, that "hypocrisy hath worn off in proportion as men have seen the beauty of holiness:" that is, in proportion as the face of religion hath become truly amiable, and its doctrines have been rationally explained; the two things which he had mentioned immediately before. But the Doctor chuses to misunderstand him of the beauty "of rites, and modes, and forms," in order to get an opportunity of reproaching the church of England again, as placing holiness "in a zeal for these*," which it notoriously doth not. I wish others were as far from placing it in a zeal against them.

The last instance of religious improvement, in which Mr. Apthorp thinks the missionaries have been instrumental, is the "exterminating of persecution." On this the Doctor observes, that "no acts of uniformity ever took place in New England†." Very true, for they could not obtain them: else there was a time when they certainly would. But they made a shift to persecute pretty effectually without them. He adds, that no persecution "had been known amongst them for many years before the Society was in being‡." But can he prove that they held it unlawful before that time? He represents it as incredible, that "the posterity of those who had persecuted their fathers into America," should "teach" the present generation their "charity and moderation." But why more incredible, than that the posterity of those who had persecuted the Quakers in America, should now be enemies to persecution? The act of toleration was passed by members of the church of England. Mr. Locke, a member of the same church, was, of all English writers, the greatest advocate for toleration. The esteem of it

* Page 79.

† Ibid.

‡ Page 80.

increased continually. The generality of our missionaries, I hope, carried that esteem with them into New England. Their need of toleration there, must recommend it still more to their good opinion; the necessity of allowing it to them must gradually reconcile others to an approbation of that allowance; and better motives, I doubt not, co-operated with these; which had the strongest influence, I do not undertake to determine. But surely the Doctor goes too far, when he saith, "Wherever we learnt Christian charity towards those who differ from us, we did not learn it of the church of England." Where else they learnt it, he doth not say; and they certainly might learn it from her, unless they disdained to learn any thing from her. Where he learnt it indeed will be very needless to inquire, till he gives better proofs of his having learnt it at all. For one who uses his pen in such a manner, seems but too likely, notwithstanding a few expressions of gentler import here and there, to use other weapons, if he had the command of them. Yet I do not suspect him of "hoping to shoot" episcopalians "as freely as pigeons;" though he saith it is credibly reported, that "some of the warm episcopalians hope for the time when they may" treat "dissenters" so*. Mr. Beache on the other hand, had actually "heard some of the presbyterians say, that it was pity that all those, who first set up the worship of God according to the church of England in that country, had not been hanged, as the Quakers were formerly at Boston†." Such hot-headed creatures, I am persuaded, say much more than they deliberately think; and are too few, on either side, to deserve the notice of the other. The New England episcopalians in general, so far as

* Page 81.

† Vindication or Address, p. 28.

I can learn, sincerely desire to live amicably with their neighbours. And amongst the English, with whom my acquaintance hath been pretty extensive, and without whom the others cannot be formidable, I know not a man of the clergy or laity, and do not believe there is one in a hundred, perhaps I might say a thousand, who wishes to overturn the present toleration of the dissenters. I should be glad of an assurance, that they wish no worse to the church establishment. The Doctor saith, "they do not in all respects find the kindest usage from "us," being subject to divers temporal inconveniences*." I suppose he hath principally in view the test act. Now without digressing to inquire whether this be justifiable or not, they who approve of restraining them so far, may heartily disapprove any further restraints; nay, many of them have given the strongest evidence that they do. And perhaps as many episcopalians in New England are excluded from offices without law, as dissenters here by law, on account of their religion. But enough of this.

The Doctor argues moreover, that even supposing the missionaries in New England to have done good there, "though it may be some apology, it will not justify the Society, if it hath occasioned the neglect of a much greater good to the heathens," or unprovided "colonies†, who had an exclusive right to the money which hath been sunk in the episcopal gulph‡." But the exclusive right hath been disproved, and there hath been no designed neglect. The heathens meant must be either the Indians or the Negroes. Now the Doctor owns, that "as to the Indians, there have been, and still are, some great discouragements in attempting to christianize them,

* Page 80.

† Page 72.

‡ Page 92.

But" he saith that "according to divers appearances, the Society have had this work less at heart than that of propagating episcopacy in New England*." I hope he would not have the complaint made by the Indian sachem in June 1700†, reckoned amongst these appearances, for the Society was not incorporated till a year after. But he saith, that "the accusation of neglecting the natives in America, hath been in some sort allowed to be just by" the Society "themselves;" and brings for proof of it, Bishop Williams's sermon before them in 1705‡. Now, unhappily for the Doctor, Bishop Williams doth not speak of the Society, in the words which he quotes, but of the English nation. Nor could he speak of the Society, as neglecting the Indians, and yet less as neglecting them to propagate episcopacy in New England; for the Society had not subsisted five years, and had but one, if any, missionary in that whole province. But the bishop's words sounded so plausibly for a charge upon the episcopalians, that he could not forbear misapplying them. He affirms, that "it would not be difficult to justify this complaint by an appeal to any of the later sermons before the Society." I conceive it would, and he hath not attempted it. In one place he expresses a doubt, whether the Society have so much as "begun to use methods of converting either the Negroes or the Indians." But in another he owns, that "they have made some essays from time to time towards the conversion of the savages; but very feeble and sparing" ones; "compared with the zeal of the French to popize the Indians, or with their own zeal to episcopize New England§." Now indeed they have shewn no zeal to episcopize New England; and it is much

* Page 98. † Page 107. ‡ Page 98. § Page 134, 135.

easier (I go on with the Doctor's language) to popize than to christianize the Indians. Teaching them a few words and ceremonies, of which they know not the meaning; giving them a few trinkets, and inspiring them with a mortal hatred against the English, makes them good Christians enough to serve the purposes of the French; and no wonder that such conversions are effected with ease. Our Society cannot undertake to make proselytes in this manner. Besides, it hath not such numbers to employ, such funds to maintain them, nor such authority to require their perseverance in the work. Many of their missionaries are under vows of absolute obedience, none of ours are; and therefore they will engage to go only where they chuse, and will stay no longer than they chuse. Reasonable persons will be moderate in blaming them, if they consider the manifold disagreeableness and danger of such an employment; but at least they will be far from blaming the Society for not sending missionaries, when they cannot procure them. And that they have failed to use their best endeavours for procuring them, the Doctor doth not assert.

Instead of this, he first insinuates without proof, what would be nothing to his purpose if true, that "the missionaries have frequently given the world" too "pompous accounts of their efforts, and spoken hyperbolically of their difficulties, and been "too" soon discouraged*;" then goes on to make remarks on Mr. now Dr. Barclay's mission about twenty-five years ago, as if nothing worth notice had been attempted before. He is careful indeed to tell us, that an order of council was made very early [in 1702] for sending two protestant ministers to the Indians of

the Five Nations ; that this order was communicated to the Society, and referred to a committee*. But that any thing was done, or tried upon it, or about the same time with it, he hath not given the least hint. Yet he might have known, and probably did know, from Dr. Humphreys, to whom Mr. Apthorp refers his readers, not only that the Society sent a missionary that very year, the first after it was formed, to endeavour the conversion of the Indians bordering on South Carolina, and that “ the governor and other gentlemen there, thinking it not to be a proper season,” disposed of him another way† : but that in pursuance of the above order, the Society, after inviting unsuccessfully a Dutch and an English minister, who lived in the neighbourhood of those nations, to undertake their conversion, prevailed on the Rev. Mr. Thoroughgood Moor to go upon this design in 1704, who applied to the Mohocks, and acquainted them, “ that another minister was daily expected for the Oneydes, and one for every other nation, as soon as proper and willing persons could be found ;” that they seemed at first highly pleased with the care thus taken of them ; but would give no determinate answers to his offers of instructing them, nor at last any answers at all, “ though he used all the means he could think of to get their good will :” so after near a twelvemonth’s trial he left them, and was soon after lost at sea‡. The Doctor might also have known, if he did not, that Mr. Barclay, a different person from the above-mentioned, being sent missionary to the same Indians in or before 1709, “ tried all the methods he could, to engage them to be instructed in our language and religion, but with very small success ;”

* Page 108.

† Ibid.

‡ Page 286—291.

that "several indeed would seem for a time to be converted, but soon after they would return again to their first savage life*."

His passing over in silence the following account is yet more observable. In 1710, the request of the four sachems, who came over to England that their subjects might be instructed in Christianity by resident ministers, being thought to favour a new attempt, "the Society agreed to send two missionaries to the Mohock and Oneydes Indians, with a salary of 150*l*. sterling each, together with an interpreter and schoolmaster to teach the young Indians." Accordingly Mr. Andrews was sent as missionary, and an interpreter and schoolmaster were assigned him. He was presented to the Indians with great solemnity, and received by them with great marks of joy; but the parents obstinately refused to let their children learn English. Therefore both parents and children were instructed in the Indian tongue, as well as the nature of it would permit. But in a short time they grew weary of being taught. Their fathers would not suffer their boys to be corrected or displeased, in order to their learning any thing. As they grew up, they took them along with them, when they went out in bodies to hunt, for several months together, and they could not be brought to a settled life. They took and dismissed wives at their pleasure; were continually making expeditions, and practising cruelties one upon another; left their aged men and women to perish; got drunk whenever they could, and in their drunkenness were mad and mischievous to the highest degree. They who had learnt something, shewed in their lives no regard to it: and even the four sachems

* Page 215, 216.

became savages again. French Jesuits from Canada instilled into them jealousies by false assertions, which popish missionaries never scruple; and some of the Juscararo Indians, driven from North Carolina, which they had perfidiously attacked, filled them with such groundless resentments by unjust representations of what had passed there, that they forbid Mr. Andrews to visit them at their habitations, would no longer come to the chapel or the school, nor suffer him to speak of religion to them when he met them occasionally; but insulted and threatened him and his companions, who were in danger of their lives whenever they ventured out of the fort, where they dwelt. At length therefore he represented to the Society, that he despaired of any further success. Yet they would not hearken to his single narration and opinion, but requested Mr. Hunter, governor of New York, to make enquiry, whether continuing his mission was likely to be of use. And on the governor's confirming the accounts which Mr. Andrews had given, they recalled him, after a trial of six years*.

I beg the reader to compare these relations, taken from authentic papers, with the Doctor's unauthorized suggestions, that the missionaries told what stories they would, and the Society believed them without examination, or wilfully neglected this part of their business. Without entering into the subsequent particulars of this Indian undertaking, I shall only say, in general, that other missionaries were sent afterwards, and with some effect, down to the year 1735, when the first-mentioned Mr. Barclay went, of whose mission alone the Doctor is pleased to take notice, because he thinks it will afford matter of objection.

Accordingly he alleges, that Mr. Barclay had

* Page 295—311.

not “half a proper support,” but “the mission was starved.” For Mr. Sergeant, a missionary from the Society incorporated in 1661, reports from a letter of Mr. Barclay, that “he had but a scanty allowance,” (i. e. from the Society) “and could obtain no salary for an interpreter or schoolmaster*.” And Mr. Barclay himself saith in a letter, June 11, 1736, that “he laboured under great disadvantage for want of an interpreter, which could he but enjoy for two or three years, he should be master of the Indian language†.” Now when Mr. Barclay wrote these letters, of which I know nothing but from the Doctor, he was not a missionary but a catechist only. And though he had, as he saith, but a scanty allowance, i. e. 30*l.* a year from the Society, yet he expected “further encouragement” from them; and the assembly of New York had also voted him 30*l.* a year, which may account for the smallness of the Society’s allowance. Only he had not received either of the salaries‡. But before the end of the same year, he wrote to the Society, that he had made himself master of the Mohock language, which probably induced them to think an interpreter unnecessary. The next year they raised his salary to 50*l.* Why he desired in 1740 an interpreter, as well as a schoolmaster, appears not, but in the same year a schoolmaster was allowed him. That the Society should be cautious and frugal in the first trial of a young man, after so many disappointments, is far from being strange. And the expence of an interpreter for two or three years, which is all that Mr. Barclay wished, could not possibly be grudged, in order to save so trifling a sum towards a more favourite purpose, as the Doctor would have it believed. Nor did the mission miscarry for want of

* Page 101.

† Page 102.

‡ Page 102, 103.

due support, as he leads his readers to imagine it did. What he quotes from Mr. Apthorp, that "from the latest accounts we find this mission much dwindled, or greatly interrupted," relates to the state of things brought on eighteen years afterwards by the late war. Mr. Barclay's mission was carried on with seeming success till about the year 1745, by which time the French had infused such dreadful imaginations into our Indians, and incited their own to such violences, that it was no longer safe for Mr. Barclay to stay amongst them. There is therefore not the least ground for the Doctor's pretence, that the Indians did not think the English in earnest, or that the French made their advantage of any negligence of the Society. Instead of despising what the Society was doing, they were alarmed at it, and employed both all their usual arts and open force to defeat it. However, Mr. Oel, a German clergyman appointed by the Society, staid with the Indians during the war, in which they were faithful to this country. And he, and Paulus, a Mohock, whom the Society made schoolmaster, were still doing the best they could there when the last accounts came. Mr. Barclay being settled at New York in 1746, Mr. Ogilvie was sent in his stead to the Indians in 1748, who found that many of them were removed into the French territory, and the rest so much addicted to drunkenness, which hath since destroyed a great part of them, that he had little hopes, excepting from the children, and not much from them, unless they were maintained in houses appropriated to their instruction. Now this undertaking would not only be excessively expensive, particularly because the parents must be well entertained as often as they pleased to visit their children, but in all likelihood fruitless, considering

their dispositions with respect to their children already mentioned. Mr. Ogilvie took one by way of trial, clothed, maintained, and instructed him. But his friends fetched him away, lest he should learn to despise his own nation. Notwithstanding all this, Mr. Ogilvie continued his endeavours there, till he was carried off in 1758, for his majesty's service, by the commander in chief of his forces in those parts. There are still, or lately were, hopes of his return; in the mean time, the Rev. Mr. Brown supplies his place.

Besides these attempts, and several other occasional ones by several missionaries, one of which, by Mr. Beache, he saith, was frustrated by the dissenters prejudicing the Indians against him*; there was a resolution taken by the Society in 1743, to essay the conversion of the Moskito Indians, which Mr. Hobart hath misrepresented. He saith, "the Society spent so much time in endeavouring to persuade either the Indians themselves, or the government of Jamaica, to support the missionary, that though the letter from the Indians requesting assistance, bears date May 19, 1739, yet Mr. Prince, at the time of his death, July 25, 1748, had not reached the place of his mission†." Any reader would conclude from hence, that the letter from the Indians was either written to the Society, or instantly communicated to them, and that the delay arose wholly from their unwillingness to part with their money on the occasion. But the truth is, that the Indians applied in 1739 to Mr. Trelawney, governor of Jamaica, without naming the Society, whose first knowledge of their application was in the latter end of the year 1742: that on this

* Second Vindication or Address, p. 70.

† Hobart's second Address, p. 141.

they wrote immediately to the governor, not to persuade any persons to contribute, but solely to inquire whether the Indians were able, or the Jamaicans willing, which was surely a justifiable piece of prudence: that as soon as they had his answer, giving no ground to hope for pecuniary assistance, which was in a few months, they agreed to send a missionary and schoolmaster; that Mr. Prince, then in America, being recommended to them for this work shortly after, they agreed without delay to accept him, if he brought proper testimonials; but that objections were made to him from thence, which could not be fully discussed under a considerable time: that when his character was cleared, he was directed to come over, and ordained: that he returned as soon as he could, but died on his way from Jamaica to the place of his destination: that on hearing this, the Society ordered another missionary to be provided, but no one could be got. Evidently there was no backwardness in this case; but assistance was most readily sent to Indians not comprehended within the letter of the charter, not being in any of his majesty's colonies; on which account the treasury refused Mr. Prince the usual bounty granted to missionaries, and it was made up to him by the Society, who might easily and plausibly have excused themselves from engaging in this matter, if they had not really had it at heart.

From these various attempts it appears, that the Society have always been desirous, always endeavouring, to make impressions on the Indians. And from their bad success with those on whom they bestowed the most pains, it appears, that notwithstanding their seeming good inclinations towards Christianity, and their petitions to be instructed in it, on which the

Doctor lays so much weight*, they were either insincere, or quickly changed their minds and grew intractable; so that appointing more missionaries, if the Society could have found them, would probably have been little else than “sinking” more “money,” if I may presume to imitate his style, “in the” Indian “gulph†,” instead of making “those tribes in general professed Christians,” which he desires to have it thought would have been the consequence. His presbyterian and congregational friends have had a much longer space of time for this work than the Society; they have also lived in great numbers amongst the Indians, which is another advantage. Yet I fear the fact is rather, that few Indians are left in New England, than that many are Christians. And though the Doctor tells us, that two missionaries, lately sent from Boston to the Five, otherwise Six Nations, give “very encouraging accounts of their disposition‡,” one cannot help doubting, whether these accounts will end in any thing better, than the above-mentioned like accounts given to the Society. I heartily wish they may. But surely as yet, it is too early to insult us with the superiority of their success to ours.

The Doctor saith, Mr. Barclay’s “mission was starved§:” I hope the contrary hath appeared. Much less was it starved to propagate episcopacy in New England, for at that time the Society had scarce any missionaries there; yet in a great measure it failed like the rest. And therefore it is very unjust to impute the failure of any to that cause, when it may be so naturally imputed to those which produced the same effect before; and are likely, though not so likely, to do it again. However, in the beginning of

* Page 100, 106.

† Page 109.

‡ Page 105.

§ Page 104.

the year 1756, the Society consulted some of their American friends, whether a few Indian boys might not be procured, and taught in the colleges of New York and Philadelphia, and sent from thence to instruct their countrymen. The answers to them represented great difficulties of obtaining children, greater still of keeping them long enough; and no small danger of national resentment, if any accident should happen to any of them. The Society notwithstanding, the college of New York being not as yet in a condition to receive any such children, resolved to give one hundred pounds a-year towards educating some in that of Philadelphia, in which they had hope also of further assistance. But a fresh war soon broke out. Now in a time of war, and it should be remembered, that there have been very frequent ones since the incorporation of the Society, some taking their rise in Europe, some only in America, little or nothing can be done, even with the friendly Indians, in favour of religion. On the late peace with France, another Indian war hath unexpectedly followed. When God in his mercy shall permit those regions to enjoy tranquillity again, it will be a proper season to resume this project. In the mean while, our Society hath agreed with that of 1661, to send jointly a lay instructor to the Six Nations, as soon as it is safe, and to bear much the greatest part of the expence. The Doctor, it is hoped, will, on considering these things, retract his assertion, that "little more can be said, than that the Indians have not been wholly neglected by the Society*." At least, as it hath never been charged with remissness in this article, either by the government at home, or by any of the successive governors abroad, this may surely be accounted as

* Page 100.

considerable a presumption in its behalf, as his opinion is against it. And I dare say the promises, which it voluntarily and freely made to the king on his accession, will be faithfully kept, as far as the means of fulfilling them can be found.

With respect to the negroes, the Doctor is not particular in his accusation of the Society, and therefore a general answer will suffice. He observes justly, that "our West India islands abound with them*," and so do some of our plantations on the Continent. But in both they live under the absolute government, chiefly of hard masters; too many of whom forbid them to be instructed in religion, and others deprive them of time for it, by making it necessary that on Sundays they should work for themselves. Where they are allowed to attend the minister of the parish, they are properly under his care; and where negroes abound most, the parishes are in general so well endowed, that the Society have not, and need not have missionaries in them; but provision, even for the lowest of the people, may be easily made without them. Where they have missionaries, the negroes are understood to be part of their flock, whom they have been strictly charged not to neglect. In those places where there are no ministers, it is impossible to appoint a separate a missionary or catechist for the negroes of each family, and almost impossible to assemble those of distant families together. The proprietors of large numbers of them are usually well able to get them instructed by some of their upper servants, or a neighbouring schoolmaster; and if they are unwilling, would be very apt to defeat the endeavours of persons appointed by the Society. If such in any place, as are well disposed, will form any

reasonable plan for the instruction of the negroes belonging to them, or near them, which they may contrive much better on the spot than the Society can at a distance, they will be sure to receive as much help from it, as they can expect. The Society hath for many years maintained catechists for the negroes in the two great cities of New York and Philadelphia, with very good effect. And of late they have been blamed for it, as overdoing, because the inhabitants may well bear that burthen themselves. However this may be, they can truly answer to the Doctor's charge, that they have refused no assistance towards the conversion of the negroes, which they have been asked, or saw how to give; and particularly, that they have withdrawn none since the increase of their missions in New England. On the contrary, they have extended their care far beyond the literal bounds of their charter, and in 1751 appointed a very worthy missionary, with a salary of seventy pounds a year, to instruct the negroes in Africa: where he continued five years, and then returned to England on account of his health: having first sent over to the Society three boys of good families, to be educated here under their direction. One of these is dead; the other two have been maintained, though as frugally as was proper, yet at no small expence, and taught whatever would fit them to propagate Christianity in their native country, to which they are now on the point of going back. The greatest part of this the Doctor must have known from the Abstracts, but hath mentioned nothing of it. For it would have been hard to reconcile with his accusation of the Society, that they have disregarded every thing else, to propagate episcopacy.

The last head of his charge of neglect relates to

the colonies, unprovided of a competent number of ministers. Here he saith, that “though he will not affirm it for truth, yet he hath been very credibly informed, that the people in some of the southern colonies, and particularly in those parts of North Carolina, which were intirely destitute of ministers, had made earnest and repeated applications to the Society for missionaries, sometimes without any answer for years together, and at last without success:” and that “some sensible and serious persons from that country, several years ago, he thinks, gave him the same account; but that whether they did or not, they made such a representation of their sad state for want of ministers, that at the moment” of his writing, “it was not in his power to refrain from tears in reflecting on it.” And then he makes his usual charitable addition, that “perhaps the Society had it not in their power to comply with these solicitations, by reason of their large expence in the noble design of supporting and increasing little episcopal parties, or factions, in New England*.” So the Doctor’s credible information of what he will not affirm for truth, and his thinking he remembers what he is not sure he ever heard, is produced against the Society, to justify a conjecture about their motive for acting as they never did act. Indeed, that the poor people, over whose case he hath wept so long after, would have accepted ministers from the Society, is far from certain; nor is it likely from several parts of his book, that he would have reckoned the want of episcopal ministers any great calamity. At least, I cannot learn from the books of the Society, which have been consulted on this occasion, that any applications, made to them from North Carolina, have been re-

* Page 97, 98.

jected or postponed. But it appears, that they sent a missionary thither in 1703, who was discouraged by the inconveniencies of the climate and country, by the intestine feuds of the people, by the profaneness of many of them, and the indifference of others to all religion; that on his return they sent two more in 1707, who after a few years were also wearied out; and again two in 1711, who used their best endeavours for several years, but succeeded no better, and at last quitted the undertaking. Yet all of them were men of very good characters, as the inhabitants acknowledged. On a fresh application, a sixth missionary was appointed in 1722, who died the next year, and a seventh in 1725, who seems to have despaired like his predecessors*. Then the inhabitants, I believe, were for a time left to themselves, and very insensible of the unhappiness of their condition. But gradually the Society supplied them anew; and for some years past they have had more clergymen amongst them, though at most perhaps but seven at once, than ever they had before; and therefore they have not been neglected for the sake of episcopizing New England, as the Doctor suggests. The Society hath acquainted them long ago, that if they were willing to do what they were well able towards maintaining more missionaries, it would be glad to assist them. But instead of this, they have used those ill, in many ways, whom they have had already. Particularly, though they have made laws, both formerly and lately, for salaries to ministers, they have been temporary, and insufficient, and ill executed. And when the present governor once thought he had put things on such a footing that the people might maintain their own ministers intirely,

* See Humphreys, p. 128—143.

the Society could not find ministers to send over to him; which Dr. Mayhew himself will allow they would have done readily in this case, if they had been able, because it would have cost them nothing. Indeed we have not persons enough in orders to serve the parishes of England properly, and therefore it must be difficult to engage a sufficient number for the plantations. But the difficulty is much greater to provide them for the southern ones, than for New England, where many are content to come over and be ordained, provided they may return to officiate amongst their relations and friends. And this is one considerable reason of the larger proportion of missions in that province, which the Doctor ascribes intirely to a quite different cause.

Relying on his proofs, that the Society have misapplied a part of the money intrusted with them, he endeavours to compute how much it is, and shews the same inclination to exaggerate in this, as in every thing. Having confuted those proofs, I shall not follow him through the dark into the random calculations built upon them. He would have it thought, that in twenty-five years the sum hath amounted to thirty-five thousand pounds, "with which," he saith, "forty or fifty missions might have been comfortably maintained amongst the heathens and in heathenish places, every year, for more than thirty years past*." Now if fifty missionaries are to be paid for thirty-two years out of thirty-five thousand pounds, they will not have each twenty-two pounds a year. And if only forty missionaries were to be paid out of it for only thirty years, they would have but twenty-nine pounds a year. The Doctor, I believe, would not undertake such a mission with such a salary. He

saith, the thirty pounds a year given to Mr. Barclay, was "not half a proper support" for him, though he was only a young catechist, and had thirty pounds more from the assembly of New York*. But no matter how inconsistent the reckonings are, provided each in its turn will bear hard on the Society.

An additional charge, brought by him, is, that the Society hath obtained contributions by sermons, representing the work in which they are engaged, to be merely the propagation of Christianity, though a considerable part of it hath been the propagation of the church of England; that in this they have imitated the practice of the Romish Society *de propaganda fide*, though the preachers before them have condemned it as unfair; and thus the dissenters in England have been misled to encourage designs against churches of their own communion in New England, and "some thousands of pounds" have been "drawn from them," which have in part been applied to that purpose†. Now in truth, the Society have made it their business to do just what their preachers represent them to have been doing, excepting that they have not been able to do so much towards the conversion of the Indians and Negroes. Whilst there were but few persons in the Massachusetts and Connecticut, destitute of such modes of public worship as they could attend, few or no missionaries were sent thither, and the earlier sermons took no notice of this case. When they increased, provision was gradually made for them; the preachers mentioned it in general terms; the present Archbishop of Canterbury mentioned it very explicitly above twenty years ago: and at the end of the sermons, both before and since, lists of the missionaries, their places of residence and

* Page 104.

† Page 26—33.

their salaries, with accounts of the state of their several congregations, have been published annually. Surely this is far remote from fraudulent dealing. And no one, that was at all attentive to the proceedings of the Society, could be ignorant of this part of them; though Dr. Mayhew thinks Bishop Butler was, when he preached before it, which is incredible in the nature of the thing, and false in fact. The Popish Society *de propaganda* never was blamed in sermons before ours, for supplying those of their own communion with the means of their own worship; but for making it their principal employment to bring over other Christians to that worship, which ours hath not done. And if the dissenters have contributed any thing considerable to the support of our missionaries, they must be presumed to have done it with their eyes open, and either to have chosen rather to assist episcopalians in that mode of public worship, than let them be without any; or to have liked the general design of the Society so well, as not to be influenced by their dislike of its management in this particular. But I believe the truth is, that the dissenters, at least for many years past, have contributed little or nothing. I know not that any one of them is, or lately hath been, a member and subscriber, or hath made any present, or left any legacy to the Society. Nor have they been called upon, when the crown hath appointed collections for it. But some, if not many of them, have taken great pains to dissuade members of the church of England from giving on such occasions. And though I should mistake in any of these points, yet, on the whole, the Society would certainly come off very well in respect of the dissenters, if they would neither do it good nor harm.

But further, probably much more money hath been

given to the Society by the members of the church of England, on account of the provision which it hath made for the episcopalians in Massachusetts and Connecticut, than they would have given if it had made none. Many of those amongst us, who are zealous for the support of Christianity abroad, are zealous also, though in a lower degree, for the support of our own church there; especially in places, where, without their help, it cannot support itself. And all such will naturally be more liberal to both designs, when thus joined, if indeed they can be called two, than they would to one of them, if divided. Persons are not obliged to confine the whole of their charity to that one purpose, which they think the best, but may allowably distribute it amongst all which they think are good. Nor is uniting these two purposes what the Doctor would represent it*, preferring or equalling the peculiarities of the church of England to the interests of the Gospel, any more than the yearly contribution of the dissenters to the keeping up of their smaller congregations here, is preferring or equalling their peculiarities to the interests of the Gospel. They think, both may be kept up by one and the same act; so do we. They contribute to maintain public worship amongst their poorer brethren, without designing to presbyterianize England; we contribute to maintain it amongst ours, without designing to episcopize New England. It would be absurd in us to charge them with the former; it is equally absurd in them to charge us with the latter. If indeed the case of the episcopalians in the Massachusetts and Connecticut doth not, by the charter of the Society, come under its care, bounties to them are at present conveyed through wrong hands. But I apprehend it

* Page 90.

doth, and think that hath been proved. At least, the givers in general have all along had the opportunity of knowing that part of their gifts was applied to this case by the Society, yet they have never signified their disapprobation, and therefore it hath understood itself to have been answering their intentions. Nothing hath been clandestinely kept back, or diverted another way from what was professed. In these circumstances, the guilt of Ananias and Sapphira is very unjustly thrown out *in terrorem* by the Doctor*, according to the old custom of his party, which I hoped had been quite laid aside, of discharging misapplied texts of Scripture in the faces of such as happened to offend them. But to return: It is very possible, that the desire of supplying the New England episcopalians with ministers, may have produced donations of as much money to the Society, as it hath expended on those ministers; now if so, other parts have not suffered on their account. And should these benefactors be brought to think the Society an improper channel for such their bounty, or should it be forbidden to employ in this manner any share of what it receives, the consequence might be, that they would withdraw a proportion of their present liberality, as the Society hath signified in a letter to the New Hampshire ministers, it hath good reason to think they would†, and establish a separate fund, by which means the condition of the episcopalians might be little, if at all, worse than before, and the Doctor farther than ever from being pleased. For the new managers would certainly be more zealous for promoting the interests of the church of England, than the Society have been, even in his own imagination.

* Page 118.

† See Beache's Vindication or Address, p. 31, 32.

The Doctor supposes the defenders of the Society's conduct to argue, that it may allowably support missions for converting the New Englanders to episcopacy, because this is needful to facilitate the conversion of the Indians to Christianity*. Now they have said, and very truly, as the charter of William and Mary doth, that bringing our own people to a "good life and orderly conversation," is requisite to win the neighbouring nations "to the Christian faith." They may have said also, and very truly, that the great numbers and great variety of wild sectaries, in our colonies, are a lamentable hindrance to the progress of our religion. But I question, whether they have ever applied either of these observations to the New England presbyterians or congregationalists; and yet more, whether any one of them hath so much as hinted, that they must be made episcopalians, as a step towards making the heathens around them Christians. At least, the bishop of St. David's, whom alone the Doctor hath quoted, intimates no such thing. And till he produces some authority for the assertion, he must be understood to put this plea into our mouths, only as an opportunity, partly of introducing his wit, about sending to convert the Scotch, the Genevans, and the man in the moon, of which I leave him without envy in full possession; partly of suggesting in Scripture language, that our missionaries, "entering into the" "New England" sheepfold "under this" indirect "pretence," are thieves and robbers." But then he is careful to subjoin immediately, that "he doth not mean to call them by these opprobrious names, or to give them any personal affront†." Good man, who can suspect him of it?

In all that I have hitherto said, I am far from in-

* Page 119, &c.

† Page 123.

tending to affirm, that the Society hath not laid out in the Massachusetts and Connecticut too large a proportion of the money put into their hands, considering the necessities of other provinces. They have a discretionary power within the bounds of their trust; and whilst they confine themselves to these bounds, the money which they receive is altogether at their free disposal, and so far *their* own; however the Doctor is pleased to cavil at that expression*, when used very harmlessly by Mr. Apthorp. But still they ought to use their power judiciously, and in that they may have failed. For what society of men hath not? Even the Doctor's too blameless societies† might possibly exhibit some tincture of human frailty, if they did not warily keep their transactions unpublished, whilst those of ours lie open to all the world. Pressing solicitors are always likelier to prevail, especially if they will contribute freely to the undertaking, for which they are suitors, than those who are less earnest though better able. And such the New England episcopalians have been, compared with the inhabitants of other colonies. When the earlier applications were made by them, it could not be foreseen whether more would follow. So one mission was settled after another, till they became insensibly numerous; and when many requests had been granted, it was the harder to refuse others, for which the same plea could be made. Some members of the Society approved this increase, others thought it was going too far. And in bodies of men, whose opinions differ, there must be mutual condescensions, and time allowed for one side to come over into the sentiments of the other, else they cannot proceed together. But in the last five or six years, I believe,

* Page 116—118.

† Page 101—134.

no new mission hath been appointed in the Massachusetts or Connecticut, which had not been promised before, excepting that of Cambridge. And now for some time past, the Society have excused themselves from complying with any applications from that quarter. Surely this alone is no inconsiderable argument, that proselyting those two districts to episcopacy hath not been the point in view.

“What is past,” as the Doctor observes, “cannot be recalled.” But if mistakes have happened, they may be avoided for the future, and the Society “is not above altering its measures*.” Doubtless it would have liked, and might have expected, civiler and fairer treatment, than he hath vouchsafed to give it. But however, *fas est et ab hoste doceri*. It cannot desert and abandon the congregations which it hath taken under its protection, unless they should become either too rich to need its assistance, or too inconsiderable to deserve it. But more care may be used to know, when either of these things falls out. All forwardness in missionaries to molest persons of other persuasions, and all encouragement of parties and factions in order to serve ecclesiastical schemes, may be strictly prohibited, and on reasonable complaint severely checked. The eyes of the Society may be turned more attentively to the dark corners of the colonies, to the methods which promise well for the more effectual instruction of the negroes, and to the openings for doing good amongst the Indians, which his majesty's new acquisitions will probably disclose. A friendly correspondence may also be carried on between some of the members of that body, and some of the presbyterian or congregational ministers, whose dispositions are mild and ingenuous; and thus ani-

* Page 133.

mosities and jealousies may by degrees be extinguished, of which I am persuaded, the Society is very desirous.

Therefore I proceed now to the last part of what I proposed, taking into consideration the scheme of appointing bishops to reside in our American colonies. The church of England is, in its constitution, episcopal. It is, in some of the plantations, confessedly the established church; in the rest are many congregations adhering to it; and through the late extension of the British dominions, and the influence of other causes, it is likely that there will be more. All members of every church are, according to the principles of liberty, intitled to every part of what they conceive to be the benefits of it, intire and complete, so far as consists with the welfare of civil government; yet the members of our church in America do not thus enjoy its benefits, having no protestant bishop within three thousand miles of them; a case, which never had its parallel before in the Christian world. Therefore it is desired, that two or more bishops may be appointed for them, to reside where his majesty shall think most convenient; that they may have no concern in the least with any persons who do not profess themselves to be of the church of England, but may ordain ministers for such as do; may confirm their children, when brought to them at a fit age for that purpose, and take such oversight of the episcopal clergy, as the bishop of London's commissaries in those parts have been empowered to take, and have taken, without offence. But it is not desired in the least that they should hold courts to try matrimonial or testamentary causes, or be vested with any authority, now exercised either by provincial governors or subordinate magistrates, or

infringe or diminish any privileges and liberties enjoyed by any of the laity, even of our own communion. This is the real and only scheme that hath been planned for bishops in America; and whoever hath heard of any other, hath been misinformed through mistake or design. The American dissenters from our communion, would think it insupportably grievous to have no ministers but such as received ordination in England or Ireland, or to be withheld from the use of any religious rite, which they esteemed as highly as we do confirmation; or to have their churches destitute of a superintendency, which they conceived to be of apostolical institution. I should, in such a case, be a zealous advocate for them, as not yet enjoying the full toleration, to which they had a right. And surely they ought to ask their consciences very seriously, why they oppose our application for such indulgence as they would claim for themselves; and whether indeed such opposition is not downright persecution, and that in a matter merely spiritual, without the mixture of any temporal concern.

The Doctor is a great deal too vehement to propose his objections distinctly, therefore I will endeavour to do it for him. He saith, "the state of religion is much better amongst those of his communion in America, than it is even in England, under the immediate eye and documents of the venerable bishops*;" and that, "should any be sent thither, it is to be hoped they will have better success than the bishops have hitherto had here†." Now certainly, the state of religion here is far from being what we have cause to wish it were. Whether it be worse than in New England, I am unable to pronounce;

* Page 39.

† Page 40.

but supposing it to be so, the Doctor himself saith, that “a *rationale* might be given of the fact, without any reflection on our church*.” And the question, relative to the present point, is not, where the state of religion is best, but whether it will not be better amongst the American episcopalians, if they have bishops to superintend their clergy, and do the other offices belonging to that function, than if they have none. He calls church government by bishops, “the yoke of episcopal bondage†.” And certainly bondage is a dreadful evil, and religious the worst of all. But what yoke of bondage do either churchmen or dissenters suffer in England, where bishops have been so long? All church authority was formerly too heavy; but surely the episcopal now is as moderate as any, and it is proposed to be reduced yet lower in America, and dissenters will be no way subject to it. He saith, “the affair of bishops hath lately been, and probably now is, in agitation in England; and the Society spare neither endeavours, applications, nor expence, in order to effect their grand design of episcopizing all New England, as well as the other colonies‡.” Now most of the colonies were originally episcopal. And I cannot learn, nor I believe will the Doctor affirm, that the inhabitants of any of them, be they of what sect they will, groan under that burthen, or have reason to do so. The imagination of a design to episcopize the rest, I have shewn to be altogether groundless. But further, they may be episcopized without sending bishops amongst them; and bishops may be sent amongst them, without any intention of episcopizing them.

Dean Kennett, confessed to be a worthy man§, writing to Dr. Colman in 1712, concerning the

* Page 39.

† Page 146.

‡ Page 89.

§ Page 53.

Society's "desire to have bishops settled in the foreign parts committed to his care," saith, as Dr. Mayhew himself quotes him, "I hope your churches would not be jealous of it*." Certainly therefore, he did not know any cause why they should be jealous of it. Archbishop Tennison, who, though a very good churchman, is allowed to have meant no harm to any dissenters any where, left by his will one thousand pounds, to encourage the appointment of two bishops, one in the continent, and another in the islands of America. Bishop Butler, whom the Doctor praises so highly and so justly, was a hearty friend to this scheme, and left five hundred pounds to the Society. Bishop Benson, whose Christian and catholic temper is well known to almost as many as ever heard his name, bequeathed to it such a legacy as he was able, "to be added to the fund for settling bishops in our plantations in America, hoping" [these are his own words] "that a design, so necessary and unexceptionable, cannot but at last be put in execution."

The Doctor professes himself an enemy to it, because "of the narrow, censorious, and bitter spirit, that prevails in too many of the episcopalians in America†." But may not he think too ill of their spirit? I verily believe he doth. Or if he doth not, is there not an equal share of the same spirit in too many of the presbyterians and congregationalists there? And are invectives and acts of unkindness the way to mend it on either side? Or may not the appointment of proper bishops, conduce greatly to mend it on the side of the episcopalians? But he fears, that "if this growing party should get a major vote in the Houses of Assembly, tests might be ob-

* Page 88.

† Page 129.

tained to exclude all but conformists from posts of honour and emolument, and all men be taxed for the support of bishops and their underlings; and therefore he cannot think of the church of England's gaining ground there to any great degree, and especially of seeing bishops fixed upon them, without great reluctance*." Now this very passage implies it not to have gained ground, as yet, to any great degree: in another, already quoted, he scarcely seems to think it grows at all; and in a third, though he falsely supposes the promotion of it to be a "favourite point" pursued "at a vast expence," he still "hopes in God it will never be carried†." The likelihood therefore of its obtaining a majority, is by no means considerable. Now if it were, would excluding bishops be any mighty guard against it? So that either the admission of them will be very safe, or the Doctor must think of more vigorous measures than have hitherto been used, to prevent the increase of this malignant faction. But supposing the episcopalians were the majority there, why should a test law follow? Is there any such law in the episcopalian colonies? Or even though there were, can it be imagined that if a prevailing party in New England were wild enough to propose, his majesty would ever be advised to pass one for that country? The terror of being taxed for bishops and their underlings, as he civilly calls the body of the clergy, is yet more chimerical than the former; as an act for that purpose would affect a much greater number of persons, and in a still tenderer point. Tithes are paid in England to the clergy by virtue of grants, which laid that burthen upon estates many ages before the present possessors enjoyed them. But could an act of Par-

* Page 129.

† Page 90.

liament be obtained now to impose a tax never known before, of this or the like nature, on this whole nation, dissenters not excepted, for the maintenance of an ecclesiastical hierarchy? Nobody will pretend it could. And with what modesty then can the Doctor suggest, that such a thing might be feared in New England? Besides, would it have been a good reason at the Revolution, for debarring the dissenters from the full exercise of their church government and worship, that, if they obtained it, they might perhaps increase till they got a "major vote" in both houses, and then might enact no mortal knows what?

But indeed the poor man's fears, if you will believe him, run to vastly further lengths yet. He imagines already himself and his brethren driven to the last extremities by these savage episcopalians, and vents his lamentations in such moving strains, that I must transcribe them; for they are the finest flight of oratory in his whole book, though it is adorned with many. "Will they never let us rest in peace, except 'where all the weary are at rest?' Is it not enough that they persecuted us out of the old world? Will they pursue us into the new, to convert us here?—What other new world remains as a sanctuary for us from their oppressions, in case of need? Where is the Columbus to explore one for, and pilot us to it, before we are consumed by the flames, or deluged in a flood of episcopacy? For my own part, I can hardly ever think of our being pursued thus from world to world, without calling to mind, though without applying [to be sure] that passage in the Revelation of St. John: 'And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might flee into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished—from the face of the serpent. And the ser-

pent cast out of his mouth water, as a flood, after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood*.” Happily, soon after, the Doctor recovers from his panic into some degree of composure, and saith, “it is not his design however to dishonour the more moderate and Christian spirit of the English bishops since the Revolution, and particularly of this day, by comparing it to the persecuting antichristian spirit of many prelates, antecedent to that glorious æra of British liberty.” But why then such dismal apprehensions? why such outcries? where are the persecutors? where is the dragon? All the world must see, the Doctor himself must see, that his declamation is quite foreign from the purpose; and on his first recollection he should have been ashamed of it, and have struck it out. But paternal tenderness would not let him destroy so pathetic a rant on so darling a subject.

Not only the present bishops, but the present age is grown milder in religious matters. Protestants in general, of all denominations, in all countries, but especially in the British dominions, bear with each other far better than they did a century ago; and the smallest attempts towards an oppressive enlargement of spiritual power, would immediately be crushed with indignation by our legislature. The dissenters here know it well; those abroad can hardly fail to know it; and so far as human foresight can reach, both the moderation of the clergy, and the watchfulness of the laity over them, are much more likely to increase than diminish. But above all, a bishop in New England would find abundant reason to be cautious of exerting himself too far, and very thankful, if with all his caution he could live in any tolerable de-

gree of peace. Therefore the Doctor would not need to be at all anxious for the liberty of his dear country, though one were to be placed there. But to make him perfectly easy, he may be assured, that this neither is, nor ever was, intended or desired ; which must certainly be admitted as another proof still, that episcopizing that province hath not been “ the favourite scheme,” nor indeed any scheme, of the Society. During the course of more than fifty years, that sending bishops to America hath been in agitation, I believe no single person, there or here, hath once named or thought of New England as a proper place for the residence of one ; but episcopal colonies have always been proposed. And this the Doctor might so easily know, that one cannot help thinking he must know it. But then, alas ! if he had owned it, what would have become, not only of his pompous harangue already mentioned, but of his ingenious suppositions, that Mr. Apthorp was “ right-reverently inclined*,” and that a certain “ superb edifice,” near Harvard college, “ was even from the foundation designed for the palace of one of the humble successors of the Apostles† ?” So much wit and archness, how greatly soever the Doctor abounds in it, would have been too great a sacrifice to make to dull truth and fact.

We confess indeed, that we cannot perceive why the presbyterians and congregationalists in New England might not as safely breathe the same air with a bishop, as their brethren in Old England do. However, we are unwilling to disquiet any of them, by importing and settling amongst them a creature, which it seems they some of them account to be so noxious. Only we hope, that his occasionally tra-

* Page 149.

† Page 89.

velling through the country cannot infect it very dangerously. Moravian bishops are authorized by law to live, and act as such, where they will in our plantations. Popish bishops reside here, and go about to exercise every part of their function, without offence and without observation. Dissenting ministers reside here, and hold their meetings for ordinations, and whatever purposes they think fit; and these assemblies give us no umbrage. What we desire with respect to New England, is much less: that a bishop may, not reside there, but resort thither from time to time, to officiate amongst those of our own communion. His constant abode will be in whatever province is willing to receive him, with his majesty's approbation: who will certainly, for reasons of every kind, send such persons in this character, as are least likely to cause uneasiness. Surely the Doctor and his friends cannot thwart a scheme of this nature, and call themselves patrons of religious liberty.

It is possible, though it is strange, that when he wrote his "Observations," he might misunderstand the Society's intention, both in sending missionaries to New England and desiring American bishops. I hope it is now sufficiently cleared up; and if he is still dissatisfied, I intreat him to consider, for all men ought, "what manner of spirit he is of*." He hath very good abilities, and a zeal that would be highly commendable, if it were duly tempered with charity. But he seems to have naturally a most vehement spirit, and to have imbibed, perhaps in his early days, equally vehement prepossessions against the very name of bishops, and every thing connected with them. I am sensible that these things plead in his excuse: for they have often hurried men, who on the

* Luke ix. 55.

whole meant well, not only into great unfairness of arguing, but far worse faults. And though I have made use of some freedom in setting forth his mistakes and partialities, yet if such treatment, as he hath given Mr. Apthorp, was designed for "the benevolent end of shewing him to himself*," surely my treatment of him will not be imputed to any unkind motive. If he amends upon admonition, he will deserve much respect; if not, much pity.

But however he may take what I have written, I hope others, particularly the dissenters, both English and American, as many as happen to see it, will consider it calmly: and neither indulge fears without foundation, nor affect fears which they have not, in order to hinder their episcopal brethren from enjoying what they have a right to. Our inclination is, to live in friendship with all the Protestant churches. We assist and protect those on the continent of Europe as well as we are able. We shew our regard to that of Scotland as often as we have an opportunity, and believe the members of it are sensible that we do. To those who differ from us in this part of the kingdom, we neither attempt nor wish any injury. And we shall gladly give proofs to every denomination of Christians in our colonies, that we are friends to a toleration even of the most intolerant, as far as it is safe; and willing that all mankind should possess all the advantages, religious and civil, which they can demand either in law or reason. But with those, who approach nearer to us in purity of faith, and brotherly love, we are desirous to cultivate a freer communication, passing over all former disgusts, as we beg that they would. If we give them any seeming cause of complaint, we hope they will signify it in

* Page 145.

the most amicable manner. If they publish it, we hope they will preserve fairness and temper. If they fail in either, we must bear it with patience, but be excused from replying. If any writers on our side have been less cool, or less civil, than they ought and designed to have been, we are sorry for it, and exhort them to change their style, if they write again. For it is the duty of all men, how much soever they differ in opinion, to agree in mutual good will and kind behaviour.

A
ADVERTISEMENT
L E T T E R

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

HORATIO WALPOLE, ESQ.

WRITTEN JAN. 9, 1750-1.

CONCERNING

BISHOPS IN AMERICA.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE following Letter was found among the Papers of the late Archbishop Secker. It was written in consequence of a Letter, dated May 9, 1750, from the late Lord Walpole, to the late Dr. Sherlock, Bishop of London; which was communicated by the latter to Bishop Secker, Jan. 2, 1750-1.

It is now printed in obedience to an order left with it under his Grace's own hand (dated May 25, 1759), in these words:

“ Let the Letter, written by me to Mr. Walpole, concerning Bishops in America, be printed after my death.

“THO. CANT.”

A LETTER
TO THE
L E T T E R

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

HORATIO WALPOLE, ESQ.

St. James's, Westminster, Jan. 9, 1750-1.

SIR,

I RETURN you my humble thanks for the honour you have done me in communicating to me your letter to the Bishop of London. I have read it with all that attention and regard, which is so justly due to your superior abilities, and long experience, and meritorious zeal for our present happy establishment, and the public welfare. But still I cannot see the scheme, to which it relates, in the same light that you do. And though, if ever he hath conversed with you on the subject since, he hath doubtless said every thing material by way of reply, which I can suggest, and much more: yet as he doth not seem to have laid any thing further before you in writing, I beg leave to trouble you with what hath

occurred to me: which, as the session is not yet begun, you may possibly have some leisure to look upon.

The thing proposed is, that two or three persons should be ordained bishops, and sent into our American colonies, to administer confirmation, and give deacon's and priest's orders to proper candidates, and exercise such jurisdiction over the clergy of the church of England in those parts, as the late Bishop of London's commissaries did, or such as it might be thought proper that any future commissaries should, if this design were not to take place. The questions that arise on this proposal, are: Is it a reasonable one in itself? and if it be, are there any such dangers of its being intended to introduce exorbitant church powers, or of its raising uneasinesses abroad or at home, as may notwithstanding, at least for the present, be objections against it?

The reasonableness of the proposal, abstractedly considered, you seem, Sir, to admit. And indeed it belongs to the very nature of episcopal churches, to have bishops at proper distances, presiding over them. Nor was there ever before, I believe, in the Christian world, an instance of such a number of such churches, or a tenth part of that number, with no bishop amongst them, or within some thousands of miles from them. But the consideration of the episcopal acts which are requisite, will prove the need of episcopal residence more fully. Confirmation is an office of our church, derived from the primitive ages; and when administered with due care, a very useful one. All our people in America see the appointment of it in their prayer-books, immediately after their catechism. And if they are denied it, unless they will

come over to England for it, they are in effect prohibited the exercise of one part of their religion. Again, if they are to have no ordinations there, they must either send persons hither to be ordained, or take such as come to them from hence. Sending their sons to so distant a country, and so different a climate, must be very inconvenient and disagreeable: and taking the small-pox here is said to be peculiarly fatal to them. The expence also must be grievous to persons of small fortunes; such as most are, who breed up their children for orders: yet not sufficient to bring any accession of wealth to this nation, that would be worth naming, were more of that rank to come. But in fact, very few of them do. Therefore they must be supplied chiefly from hence. And not many in proportion will go from hence, but persons of desperate fortunes, low qualifications, and bad or doubtful characters: who cannot answer, as they ought, the end for which they are designed. And it deserves observation, that a great part of them are Scotch. I need not say what chance there is that episcopal clergymen of that country may be disaffected to the government. Now if instead of such, natives of the plantations were bred in their colleges, with a view to orders; notwithstanding which, their young men of fashion would still come to England for polite accomplishments; this would afford convenient opportunities to parents of providing for some of their children handsomely, and encouragement to the inhabitants to build and endow churches, to furnish parsonage-houses, and stock glebes, which now run to ruin for want of it. And clergymen whose families were known, would be more respected, and have a better influence, than vagabond strangers. As

to the matter of discipline and jurisdiction over the clergy, it would stand just as it hath done hitherto, only with this difference, that the exhortations and directions of a person invested with the episcopal character, would be more readily and carefully observed by the parish ministers, than those are which proceed from their equals: and misbehaviours might thus be more effectually prevented, than they can afterwards be punished and rectified. Nor is this a point of consequence only to themselves and their hearers, but to the public; as the behaviour of the clergy in general is. And if by reforming them, and introducing better order into the churches of our communion, more of the inhabitants should come over to it, as they naturally will, this would be a further public benefit. For members of the church of England will think themselves more connected with England, than others. And supposing them not to be Jacobites, their acknowledgement of the king's supremacy will incline them to be dutifuller subjects than the dissenters, who do not acknowledge it.

But allowing the establishment of bishops in America to be reasonable in itself, the second question is, Whether the danger of increasing church power by means of such an establishment, be not a sufficient objection against it? Now against things evidently right and useful, no dangers ought to be pleaded, but such as are both very probable and great; and from confirming and ordaining, no danger of this kind, I presume, is apprehended. Yet these are the only new powers that will be exercised. No other jurisdiction is desired for the proposed bishops than the preceding commissaries have enjoyed; and even

that, on this occasion, may be ascertained and limited more accurately, if it be requisite. But here it is asked, How any persons can undertake to promise, that no additional powers shall hereafter be proposed, and pressed on the colonies, when bishops have once been settled? And strictly speaking, indeed, nothing of this nature can ever be promised in any case. But if the dissenters had been asked, on their applying for a toleration, how they could undertake to promise, that when that point was once settled, nothing further, nothing hurtful to the established church, should ever be proposed and pressed on the government by them, surely this would not have been sufficient to defeat their application. And yet what could they have answered? Not more, if so much, as can be answered in the present case: that no such thing is at all intended; and that though it were, there would be no danger, either of the intention taking effect, or causing any disturbance.

But on the former of these assertions our sincerity may be questioned. For it is argued, that bishops doubtless think the powers, which they have in this nation, to be strictly just and reasonable; and consequently must be desirous of their taking place in the colonies. Now for my own part, and I believe my brethren in general are of the same mind, I have no imagination, that bishops are entitled to, or that it would be right to give them, every where, the same powers, and privileges, that we happen, by the particular constitution of this country, to possess here. Several parts of that constitution might perhaps full as well have been formed otherwise. Whether our share of it might or not, I have never set myself to consider; I hope, and am persuaded, it is on the

whole as harmless and useful a branch, as many others; and I endeavour, so far as I am concerned, to make it so. But were I to live where bishops were only on the same footing, on which it is now proposed they should be in our plantations, I should no more attempt to raise them higher, than I should to overturn the established form of government in any other respect. It may indeed be prudent to suspect clergymen, ministers of state, all men, to some degree. But it cannot be prudent to refuse doing things that are highly proper, on account of little more than a possibility, that an improper use of them may be hereafter attempted. Some bishops may be thought peculiarly fond of church power, and it concerns them when they are called upon, to defend themselves if they can. But at least I hope we are not all so fond of it, as to be aiming at that point now, though we solemnly profess we are not. Yet I believe there scarce is, or ever was, a bishop of the church of England, from the Revolution to this day, that hath not desired the establishment of bishops in our colonies. Archbishop Tennison, who was surely no high-churchman, left by his will one thousand pounds towards it. And many more of the greatest eminence, both dead and living, might be named, who were and are zealous for it; and yet have always been applauded by one party, and censured by the other, for their moderation. Or if bishops, as such, must of course be deemed partial, the Society for propagating the Gospel consists partly also of inferior clergymen, partly too of laymen. Now the last cannot so well be suspected of designing to advance ecclesiastical authority. Yet this whole body of men, almost ever since it was in being, hath been making repeated applica-

tion for bishops in America ; nor have the lay part of it ever refused to concur in them.

But though some, or many of the advocates for this proposal, were inclined to serve wrong purposes by it, is there any likelihood of its effecting those purposes? Some have apprehended quite the contrary, that it will tend to the depression of the hierarchy ; as it will afford the laity here an example of English bishops abroad, with no other than spiritual powers : which may tempt them to think of reducing us at home to the same condition. But I should be very willing, for the benefit of those of our communion in the colonies, to run a greater risk, than I conceive this to be. For the fact is so notorious, that all our temporal powers and privileges are merely concessions from the state ; and the act of parliament for the suffragan bishops, under which several were made in the last century, and others may now, exemplifies so fully the possibility of bishops without peerages, and consistory courts ; that we need have no fear of any new discovery to our prejudice, from appointing a few such bishops in America. But then the opposite fear, of their growing up to what we are, would it be ever so great an evil if it were to happen, seems as unlikely to happen, as most things. I do not wonder indeed, that persons who were in public stations at the latter end of queen Anne's, and the beginning of the late king's reign, should have strong impressions remaining in their minds of the terrors of ecclesiastical influence, which was then so grossly abused to such wicked purposes. But whoever attends to the present state of things in this respect, must see that there hath been a prodigious change within the last thirty years. Though

too many both of the clergy and the laity are disaffected to the government on one account or another; yet of the former, even the lower part are not near so generally possessed of the wild high-church notions, as they were. Nor was a time ever known, when the upper part were so universally free from them. And yet it is the upper part only, that can do the least towards supporting any exorbitant pretensions of bishops in the colonies. Then as to the laity, I hope and believe the administration and their friends will always shew countenance to the clergy, as far as it is necessary: but there is visibly no danger of their giving them any encouragement, that may be hurtful. Amongst the opposers of the administration, few, if any, are at all more prejudiced in their favour. And that regard, which the bulk of the people had for religion and the teachers of it, is greatly diminished, and diminishing daily, to a degree, which I wonder wise men are not alarmed at. For it is as important, even in a political view, that they should be able to do good, as that they should not be able to do harm. Nor do I find, that bigotry to the church prevails amongst the members of it in our colonies; or that there is any chance of their making afterwards imprudent additions to the authority with which their bishops will come to them at first. On the contrary, one plea against the present scheme is, that bishops, even with the lowest powers, will give them jealousy and offence. Now these two opposite dangers cannot both be considerable; and I apprehend neither of them is: but surely the former is the less of the two. The bishop of London's commissaries, I believe, have gained no accessions to what was granted them originally. And bishops will be

still more narrowly watched by the governors, by other sects, by the laity, and even the clergy, of their own communion. Nor will they have a greater dread of any thing, if either so good or so discreet men are chosen, as I promise myself will, than of losing all, by grasping at what doth not belong to them. Nor will their patrons here attempt to defend them in what they cannot but know will ruin them. As they will be appointed by the crown, which, unless I mistake, the commissaries are not; they will be such persons, as the crown can best confide in. And if it be thought necessary, a right of recalling them may be reserved to the king. Whereas I believe he hath not a right of ordering the bishop of London to recall his commissaries. Upon the whole, if the present disposition of his majesty's ministers and subjects in relation to ecclesiastical authority continues the same, as in all likelihood it will, there can be no danger from bishops in America. And if that disposition should alter back to what it formerly hath been, which God forbid, they will be established with greater powers than are now desired for them.

It ought to be considered farther, that an act of the last session of Parliament, which passed without any opposition from any body, hath expressly established Moravian bishops in America; who have much higher and stricter notions of church-government and discipline, than we have. Why then should there be such fear of establishing bishops of the church of England? If for want of these, the Moravian bishops should ordain such ministers for our people as they thought proper; or should they, by administering confirmation, or by the reverence of

their episcopal character, be continually gaining converts from us; it would be a very undesirable thing on several accounts; particularly on this, that most of them refuse taking oaths, and bearing arms. Besides, there have been nonjuring Jacobite bishops in our colonies, not very long since, if there are none now. And popish ones also, I apprehend, have recourse to them from time to time. At least the bishop of Quebec hath no small influence in a very important new settlement of ours. May not then the neglect of having bishops of our own, expose us to far greater dangers than the appointment of them can?

But still the third question remains, and is a very material one, Whether such an appointment, however harmless and useful it might be otherwise, would not stir up dangerous uneasinesses, abroad or at home? And here it is asked, if the members of our church in America would like to have bishops among them, why have they never petitioned for them? Now surely their omitting it may well be ascribed, in part to the thoughtlessness of mankind about their religious concerns; which hath been so peculiarly great in those countries, that some of them did not petition for help, when they had no one office of Christianity administered to them; and partly also to this, that probably too many of their clergy think, they may both live more negligently, and have a better chance for preferment now, than if a bishop were to inspect them, and ordain natives to be their rivals. But the chief reason, I doubt not, is, that the inhabitants of the colonies, living at such a distance, and not knowing when an application to the government might be seasonable, and being assured that the bishops here,

especially the bishop of London, and the Society for propagating the Gospel, would always be attentive to this point, have left it to them. And they, to whom it is thus left, have received abundant proofs, that very great numbers of the laity of the church of England in those countries, of higher as well as lower rank, earnestly desire to have bishops settled there, and think it would be a most valuable public benefit. Nor have they found cause to imagine that any opposition would be made to it from that quarter. Indeed of course it should be presumed, and none but the very strongest evidence admitted to the contrary, that all persons desire to have within their reach, the means of exercising their religion completely : which those of our communion in America, and they alone of all his majesty's subjects, have not. It is true, some of them have provided against enlarging the jurisdiction of the commissaries : but none of them have expressed any public reluctance to the appointment of bishops. I have learned from some papers of bishop Gibson, that there was a design in Charles the Second's time, to place one in Virginia ; that letters-patent for that purpose are still extant ; and that no other reason appears, why the design failed, but that the whole endowment was to have been out of the customs : whereas now it is not intended either to burthen the crown, or tax the subject. Nor can either be done hereafter but by consent of both. Nor is it apprehended, that either will be needful. Some considerable gifts have been already contributed : and probably more will, when the scheme appears like to take effect. There are likewise other methods that might be proposed. And if they who are against it, think it will miscarry for want of a maintenance for

the bishops, they need not take the trouble of opposing it. But to go on. For above forty years past, the inhabitants there must have had frequent notices, by various ways, that such a design was in agitation: yet I have not heard, that any of them who are members of our church, have ever signified the least dislike of it. Of late, indeed, the Presbyterians or Independents of New England have. But they cannot be entitled to object against placing bishops in any other province, but their own, in which there never was any thought of placing them. Whether they would object against bishops coming to officiate occasionally amongst those of the episcopal persuasion in that province, I know not. If they should, and persist in it, that may be omitted. But it seems hardly possible that they should, unless the gross misrepresentations, that have been so officiously sent them from hence, have made them deaf to all reason. It is true, they fled into America from the oppressions of ecclesiastical power, exercised by bishops. But they cannot fail to know how much that power hath been long since lessened; and the inclinations and the principles of those, who are intrusted with it, altered for the better. If they were here at present, they would not think of flying from it. Why then should they be afraid of bishops resorting to their country now and then, without any pretence of authority over them, but merely to perform some religious acts in a few congregations of episcopal people, that are intermixed with them? This is no more than dissenting ministers do here by law, and even popish priests and bishops by connivance.

But at least, before any argument against the

scheme can be drawn from the opinion of any of the colonies, it ought to be fairly stated to them. This was the sole intention of the Society for propagating the Gospel, in their late order for sending letters into America. They apprehended they might take the liberty of transmitting a true account of the design, when others had taken that of transmitting a false one: and that endeavouring to procure evidence in relation to so material a point in their cause, against the time it would come to be tried, was not blameable. However, if they judged ill in attempting it, his majesty's equity, and that of his council, may doubtless be depended on, that they will not reject this proposal, as disagreeable to the colonies, till a fair inquiry shews, whether it be so or not.

But a farther objection against it, is, that however it may be received there, it will immediately raise animosities here; produce declamations in pulpits, controversies in pamphlets, debates in parliament; revive the distinction of high and low among churchmen, and terrify or provoke the dissenters. Now amongst the clergy, I conceive it can make no dispute: for every man of character amongst them, doth and must wish it success. If indeed it were to be brought upon the carpet, and the administration were to oppose it, some clergymen might be tempted to say indecent things of them. But the present question is not, whether this affair ought to be attempted, if, after being fully weighed, it be disapproved by the ministry: that undoubtedly would be very wrong; but whether there be reason for them to disapprove it. And certainly there is no reason to fear inflaming and exasperating the clergy, by declaring for it: on the contrary, scarce any thing

would please them more universally. Nor I presume, is the danger from pamphlets to be thought very great: for most virulent ones are published daily both against church and state, which yet give the government no terror at all. Contests in parliament indeed would be a matter of more serious concern. But there seems no necessity that this affair should ever come into parliament. For as the law now stands, suffragan bishops may be ordained with the king's approbation: and the bishop of London may send those, instead of presbyters, for his commissaries: and they may confirm and ordain, as well as exercise the jurisdiction which hath been usual there. But even if the scheme should be brought into parliament, it can be opposed only on these two principles: that episcopal power is a great grievance in this nation; and that it must rise to an equal height, wherever bishops are: of which two propositions, plain experience proves the former to be false; and I hope I have proved the latter to be so. Still some members may be blinded by ill-will to the ecclesiastical part of our constitution. But surely these are not very many. Besides, the administration will easily quiet such of them as are their friends. Then the tories must be for bishops, if it be only to preserve their own credit. And the remainder will probably find themselves too inconsiderable to stir.

Therefore the only danger left, is that of alarming and provoking the body of the dissenters. Now a few busy warm men, are not the body of the dissenters. And though they may affect to speak in the name of the whole, yet the whole will neither think it right nor prudent to do all that these gentlemen are

pleased to intimate: some of whom also, after arguing properly with them, have owned, that they had little or nothing to object against appointing bishops in plantations of the episcopal communion. Dr. Avery, if I am rightly informed, hath acknowledged this to the archbishop, as Mr. Chandler hath to me. And indeed there is no modesty in saying, we who are not of the established church, demand, as a matter of strict justice, the full exercise of our religion here: but at the same time insist, that the king's episcopal subjects in America, with whom we have nothing at all to do, shall not, even in those provinces where they are the established church, have the full exercise of theirs. Suppose the Presbyterians or Independents in America thought as well of confirmation as we do, and had not amongst them a proper officer to administer it: would not they think it insufferable to be denied such a one, and put under a necessity of sending their children hither for it, if they would have it? Supposing they were obliged only to send their candidates for the ministry, hither to be ordained: would they have been patient under it as long as we have been? Would they not have cried out loudly and incessantly for relief? For my part, I should have thought them so well entitled to it, as to have been a most hearty and zealous advocate for them. It is not merely from my attachment to the church of England, that I am a favourer of the scheme in question: but from my love of religious liberty; which in this point, the members of the church of England in our colonies do not enjoy. And I cannot imagine, how the dissenters can pretend to be lovers of it, and wish it to be withheld from their fellow-subjects. God forbid, that we should ever be moved, by this or any other provoca-

tion, to wish it withheld in any instance whatever from the dissenters. And I believe there never was a time, when the clergy of this land were in so mild a disposition towards them. Whatever they may plead therefore, it is not fear that induces them to oppose us on this occasion; for they well know that we have neither power nor wish to oppress them, or their brethren, in any way. But it is a wantonness of spirit, which we have not deserved from them. It is an ostentatious fondness of using their influence with great persons, to grieve us, without serving themselves. And instead of being stirred up by their friends abroad to what they do, their friends abroad have been stirred up by them. Now this is a sort of behaviour which an administration had much better check by due admonitions, than encourage its growth: for how far it may grow, they cannot foresee. The dissenters are sincere well-wishers to the civil part of our present happy establishment; and they are to be esteemed and loved for it; but not to be gratified at the expence of those, who sincerely wish well to both parts. I am heartily sorry, that all the members of our church are not loyal and dutiful subjects to the king: but much the greater part of them are; the bishops and upper clergy in particular: and surely their desires merit as kind a regard in this case, as those of the dissenters and their leaders. We indeed do not threaten if we are disregarded. But they have no more right to threaten than we: nor need they be feared if they do. Their threatenings have been very safely slighted in a point which they have much at heart, I mean the test: and so they may in this.

Permit me to add, that were those of our commu-

nion, who are unhappily and unjustly prejudiced either against the king, or his ministry, worse, in either of these respects, than they are, still the endeavour should be to make them better in both: for till that is done, our domestic affairs will never be on a firm and easy footing. Not that any thing wrong or hazardous should be done to reconcile them: but every thing that is right and harmless. Indeed such instances of kindness, when shewn them, I am grieved to say it, have not produced, and probably will not produce so great, and much less so speedy returns as they ought: but some good effect they must produce; and perseverance in a due regimen will at length complete the cure. On the other hand, I apprehend, the rejection of this proposal will do the government by far more hurt amongst the churchmen, than it can possibly do them good amongst the dissenters. When the bishops are asked about it, as they frequently are, by their clergy and others, what must they answer? We cannot with truth express disapprobation of it, or indifference to it. And if we did, we should be thought unworthy of our stations. Must we then be forced to say, that we are all satisfied of the absolute fitness, the great advantages, the perfect safety of the thing, and have repeatedly pressed for it; but cannot prevail? Would not this both sadly diminish our ability of serving the government, by shewing how little credit we have with it; make very undesirable impressions on many minds concerning the king, and those that are in authority under him, as incapable of being won by the arguments or intreaties of those, who have so strong a zeal for them, to do an innocent favour to the church? Still, if we cannot succeed by respectful appli-

cations, I know it is our duty to make the best of the matter; and not disturb the public welfare, because in this particular we are unable to promote it. I would speak as gently of the affair as ever I could, where there was danger of doing harm: though I speak so earnestly, where I would fain hope to do good. But no mildness or prudence will wholly or nearly prevent the above-mentioned consequences.

I am sensible it may be argued after all, that the failure of so many attempts on behalf of this scheme, is presumption more than enough of there being some insuperable objection against it. But there cannot well be any other objection than such as are known, and have been produced on the present occasion. And if those have been sufficiently answered, we are not to yield up our own understandings implicitly to the judgements of other persons in times past: especially as those judgements differ. For some great men have continued as steadily to approve of bishops in America, as others, to disapprove of them. And possibly the reasons of the latter may in part, at least, have been only temporary, or they may have had too little serious attention to religious matters; or more fear, than they needed, of bringing difficulties on themselves by engaging in them. But whether any of these things be so or not, in general it is certain, that many designs have been long frustrated or postponed, on one account or other, which at length have been executed, and found beneficial.

I beg your pardon, Sir, for being thus prolix; but I have gone through each head as briefly as I could: and should you think me ever so much mis-

taken, you will do me but strict justice in believing me to mean well; and to be, with the greatest respect, and the most grateful sense of your obliging treatment of me,

S I R,

Your most obedient

Humble servant,



THO. OXFORD.

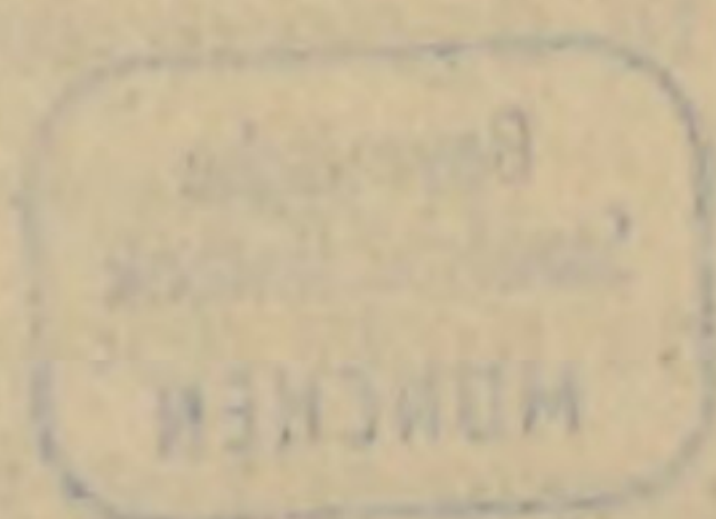
END OF VOL. VI.

taken, you will do me but strict justice in believing me to mean well; and to be, with the greatest respect, and the most grateful sense of your obliging treatment of me,

Your most obedient

Humble servant,

THO. OZTORD



END OF VOL. VI

Secker, Thomas,

The works to which is prefixed, A review of his grace's life and character
by Beilby Porteus ; a new edition in six volumes

Bd.: 6

London 1811

Hom. 1425 m-6

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10461951-7